

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + Make non-commercial use of the files We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + Maintain attribution The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + Keep it legal Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/

600079160T

265 RS9)

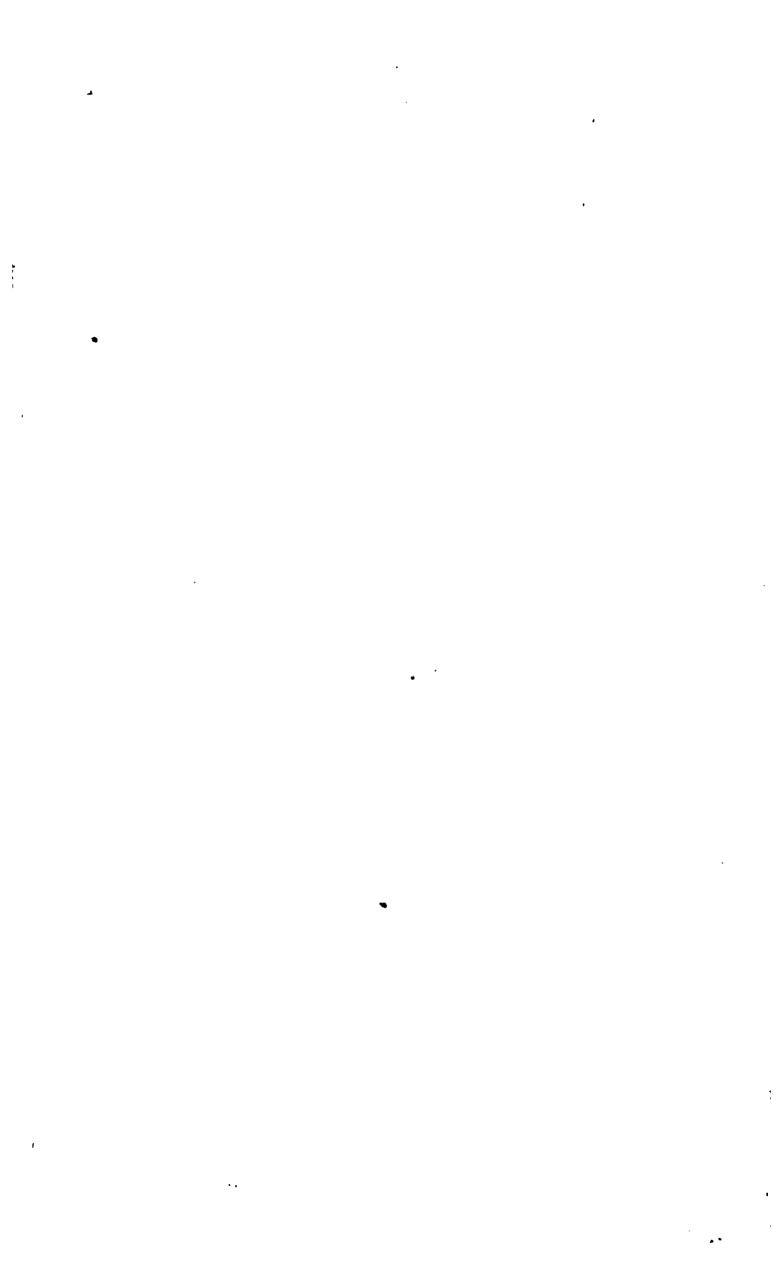
(S-4157 617. 141

(F.5. 153)

S.E. 12 B. 5 . 2 .

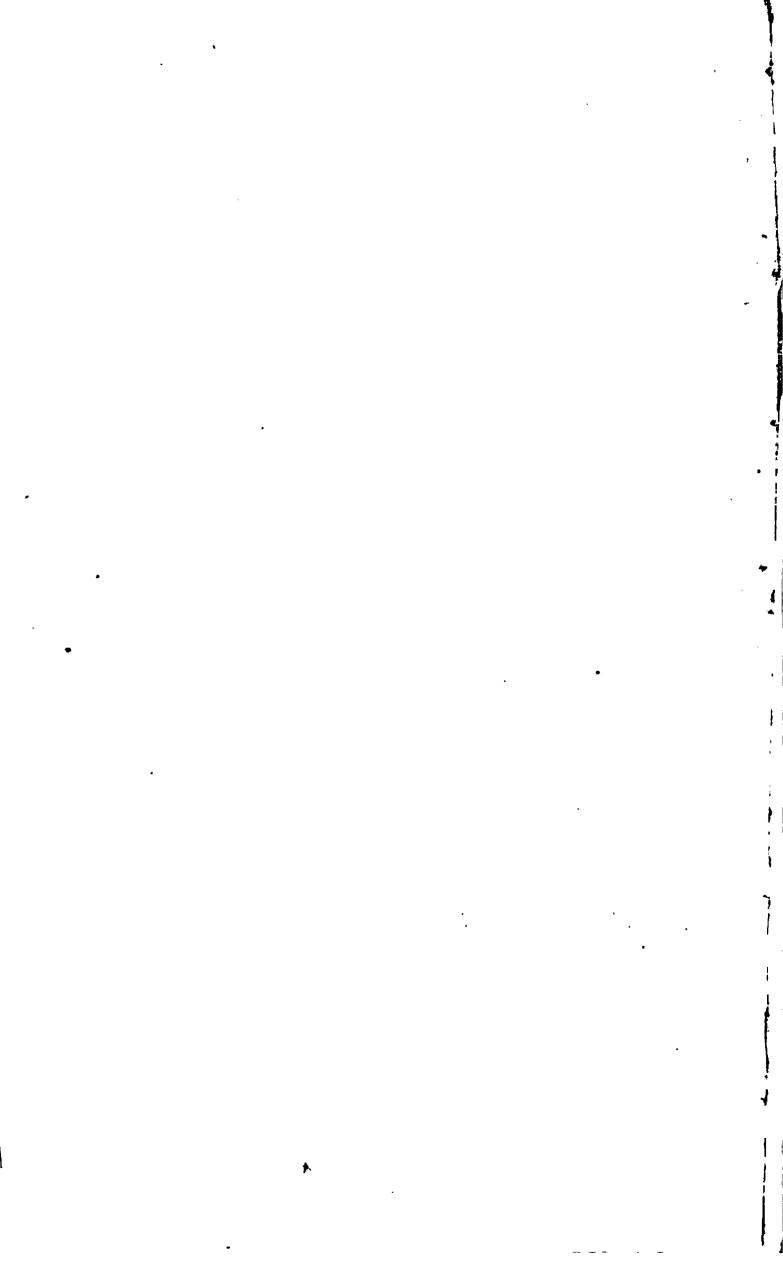
265 4. 89





S. Hist. Lit. 141

. • . • • • • . .



English Reprints.

A HARMONY

OF THE

ESSAYS. ETC.

OF

FRANCIS BACON,

Viscount St. Alban, Baron Verulam, &c.

And after my manner, I alter ever, when I add. So that nothing is finished, till all be finished.—Letter of Sir Francis Bacon to Mr. Tobie Matthew, dated Graies Jnn, Feb. 27. 1610.



ARRANGED BY

EDWARD ARBER,

fociate, King's College, London, F.R.G.S., &c.

LONDON:

5 QUEEN SQUARE, BLOOMSBURY, W.C.

Ent. Stat. Hall.]

1 July, 1871.

[All rights reserved.

(265. k. 8g.

CONTENTS.

PROLOGUE	•	•		X.
Dr. RAWLEY'S LIFE OF LORD BACK	ON	•	xi-xı	ziii.
Ben Jonson's Testimony	•	•	7X	ziii.
Aubrey's Gossip	•	•	xix-	xi.
Introduction	•	•	xxii-x	xx.
CONTEMPORARY BIBLIOGRAPHY	•	•	xxxi-xxx	ciii.
LATER BIBLIOGRAPHY	•	•	xxxiv-xx	kix.
LIST OF TEXTS comprised in this H	ARMONY	•		xl.
1. A HARMONY OF THE F TEN ESSAY Six texts to an a	s.	GROU	POF	
	- 0			_
FIRST EDITION, 1597. Title Page. The Epistle Dedication of Essaies.	itorie.	• •	•	3 4 5
1. Of Study 6 . 6. 2. Of Discourse	Of Expen Of Regim Of Honou Of Factio Of Negoti	vent of H or and R on	lealth eputation.	50 56 66 76 86
II. MEDITATIONES SACRÆ-SAC	CRED M	EDITA	TIONS.	
Upon opposite	pages.			
FIRST EDITION. { Title Page LATIN, 1597. { List of Meditation.	es Sacræ.		•	96 98
SECOND EDITION. Title Page. (None English, 1598. List of Sacred Med			•	99
Of the works of God and man. Of the innocency of the Dove and wisdom of Of the exaltation of Charity. Of the moderation of Cares. Of earthly Hope. Of Hypocrites. Of Impostors. Of the several kinds of Impostors. Of Atheism. Of Heresies.		nt. Lat. Lat. Lat. Lat. Lat. Lat. Lat.	100—Eng. 104—Eng. 106—Eng. 108—Eng. 114—Eng. 118—Eng. 118—Eng. 120—Eng.	105 107 109 111 115 119 119
Of the Church and the Scriptures			130—Eng.	

	PAGE
III. OF THE COLOURS OF GOOD AND EV	'IL.
[A Preliminary Note	132-134]
OF THE COLOURS OF GOOD AND EVIL, A fragment	135-154
Contents	· 137
[Preface].	. 138
1. Since all parties or sects challenge the pre-eminence of the fit place to themselves, that to which all the rest with one cons give the second place, seems to be better than the others: every one seems to take the first place out of self-zeal but give the second where it is really due.	sent for
2. That kind is altogether best, whose excellence or pre-emine is best	nce . 140
3. That which hath a relation to truth is greater than that where refers to opinion: but the measure and trial of that which belongs to opinion is this: It is that which a man would do, if he thought it would not be known	rick
4. That which keeps a matter safe and entire is good; but what destitute and unprovided of retreat is bad: for whereas ability of acting is good, not to be able to withdraw one's self a kind of impotency.	all
5. That which consists of more parts, and those divisible, is greated and more one than what is made up of fewer: for all the when they are looked upon piece-meal seem greater; when a plurality of parts more strongly if they be in no cert order; for it then resembles infinity, and hinders the complementing of them.	ngs also ain
6. That whose privation (or the want of which) is good, is in it evil; that whose privation (or the want whereof) is an evil in itself good.	self
7. What is near to good, is good; what is at a distance from go is evil	_
8. That which a man hath procured by his own default is a great mischief (or evil): that which is laid upon him by others it lesser evil.	ter
9. That which is gotten by our own pains and industry is a great good: that which comes by another man's favour, or by the dulgence of fortune, is a lesser good.	in-
The degree of absolute privation seems greater than the degree diminution: and again, the degree of inception (or beginni seems greater than the degree of increase.	. 151 e of ing) . 152
IV. A HARMONY OF THE SECOND GRO	UP OF
TWENTY-FOUR ESSAYS . Four texts to an opening.	. 155
Title Page of Harleian MS. 5106. Draft Dedication to Prince Henry of Wales, Sloane MS. 4259.	. 157 . 581
11. Of Friendship 160 14. Of Goodness and Goodn	ess of
12. Of Wisdom for a Man's Self. 182 Nature	. 198
13 Of Nability 188 1 TO Of Reauty	മറി

	PAGE
16. Of Seeming Wise 214	26. Of Counsel 310
	27. Uf Atheism
18. Of Riches 230	28. Of Superstition 342
19. Of Despatch 242	29. Of Praise
20. Of Deformity 250	30. Of Nature in Men 358
21. Of Youth and Age 256	31. Of Custom and Education. 366
22. Of Marriage and Single Life. 264	32. Of Fortune 374
23. Of Parents and Children. 272	33. Of Death 382
24. Of Great Place 278	34. Of Seditions and Troubles. 390
· Aan i	34. C) Sections and 270 acres. 39.
25. Of Empire 294	•
V. A HARMONY OF TH	E TUIDA CRAIIR AR
•	
SIX ESSA	AYS 41
Three texts t	to an opėning.
SECOND AUTHORIZED Title Page. AND REVISED TEXT, Dedication to The Table.	479
AND REVISED TEXT. Dedication to	Sir John Constable 420
The Table	42
35. Of Religion	38. Of Judicature 450
of Of Comming 424	39. Of Vain Glory
30. Of Cunning 434	as Of Cusaduses of Pinadama (6)
37. Of Love 444	50. Of Greatness of Kingdoms. 468
WY 4 77 4 D 16 0 W W 0 D T 17	TE EAUDAU CRAUD AE
VI. A HARMONY OF TH	
EIGHTEEN E	ESSAYS 499
	_
Two texts to	o an opening.
<u></u>	
THIRD AND FINAL (Title Page.	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
I HIKU AND FINAL TO 19 1	
p. L I Dedication to	o George Villiers, 1st Duke of
ENGLISH TEXT, Section to	George Villiers, 1st Duke of
English Text, Buckingham	a 49 ¹
ENGLISH TEXT, Section to	n., , , , 49°
English Text, Buckingham 1625. The Table.	a
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. Buckingham The Table. 41. Of Truth 499	1
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. Buckingham The Table. 41. Of Truth. 42. Of Revenge. 502	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. Buckingham The Table. 41. Of Truth. 42. Of Revenge. 43. Of Adversity. 502	1
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. Buckingham The Table. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. Buckingham The Table. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, Buckingham The Table. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion. 52 51. Of Plantations. 53 52. Of Prophecies. 53 53. Of Masques and Triumphs. 53 54. Of Usury. 54 55. Of Building. 54 56. Of Gardens. 55 57. Of Anger. 56
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion. 52. 53. Of Plantations. 53. 53. Of Masques and Triumphs. 53. 54. Of Usury. 54. 55. Of Building. 54. 56. Of Gardens. 55. 57. Of Anger. 56. 58. Of Vicissitude of Things 56.
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion
ENGLISH TEXT, 1625. 41. Of Truth	50. Of Suspicion

PROLOGUE.

Iterature as well as Dress has its sashions, its varying modes of expressing the Taste of the day. Since printed English books have been, one kind of Subject or one Style of writing, rather than all others, has been in favour both with writers and readers: just as it was consonant with the intelligence and movements, the focial, political, and religious life of the Age. This Subject or Style has maintained its pre-eminence until some change in the national life or the advent of some new strong writer has created interest in a fresh topic or occasioned delight through some new phase of expression. So that as time wore on, not only have books multiplied immensely, but the Literature has vastly increased in species, classes, and kinds of writings. quote a few late examples. In the last century, the existing style of Essay writing was initiated by Addison and Steele; English Romances of Travel were founded in De Foe's Robinson Crusoe; our earliest modern Novels were written by Richardson, Fielding, and Goldsmith; and Dr. Johnson compiled the first of our present recognized Dictionaries. Quite recently also, we have seen that fungus variety of Fiction—the Sensation Novel—live its day and 'To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven.'

2. Within the century fince Caxton had established the use of printing in England, there had come into vogue ALLEGORICAL VERSE in Stephen Hawes' Pastime of Pleasure, which kind of composition had recently been revived in Spenser's Faery Queene. Another class of poetry, PASTORAL VERSE, had been represented by Barclay's Egloges, Spenser's Shepheardes Calender, Lodge's Phillis, Watson's Melibæus (in English), and Barnsield's Affectionate Shep-The Reforming spirit sometimes had used the lash of SATIRICAL VERSE, as in Roy's Rede me and be nott wrothe, and the many unprinted Ballad Invectives and Complaints that have come down to us. Then Classical literature had come in like a flood, and there had arisen a school of severe CRITICISM in Greek, Latin, and English, including such scholars as Sir J. Cheke, Walter Haddon, and Roger Ascham. Then there had Then there had been the almost universal habit among Gentlemen of Sonnett-ING, of which no one knows the entire existing remains. had arisen the fashion of PLAYS: Comedies first, arising out of the Miracle, Mystery, and Morality plays: afterwards Tragedy, in imitation of the Dramas of Seneca. Then had come the fashion of collecting the Sonnets and kindred verse into Poeti-So much poetry occasioned Discussions CAL MISCELLANIES. AND CONTROVERSIES IN THE ART OF POETRY, begun by Gascoigne and which were destined to continue, with hardly a break, beyond the time of Dryden. Soon after came up the EUPHUISTIC OR

• . ••

busy and of idle men, the first book that taught the unlearned reader to observe and reflect for himself on questions of moral philosophy. In an age when every topic of this nature was treated systematically, and in a didactic form, he broke out without connexion of chapters, with all the digressions that levity and garrulous egotism could suggest, with a very delightful, but, at that time, most unusual rapidity of transition from seriousness to galety. It would be to anticipate much of what will demand attention in the ensuing century, were we to mention here the conspicuous writers who, more or less directly, and with more or less of close imitation, may be classed in the school of Montaigne; it embraces, in fact, a large proportion of French and English literature, and especially of that which has borrowed his title of Essays. Intr. to Lit. of Europe [from 1550—1600] ii. 169. Ed. 1839.

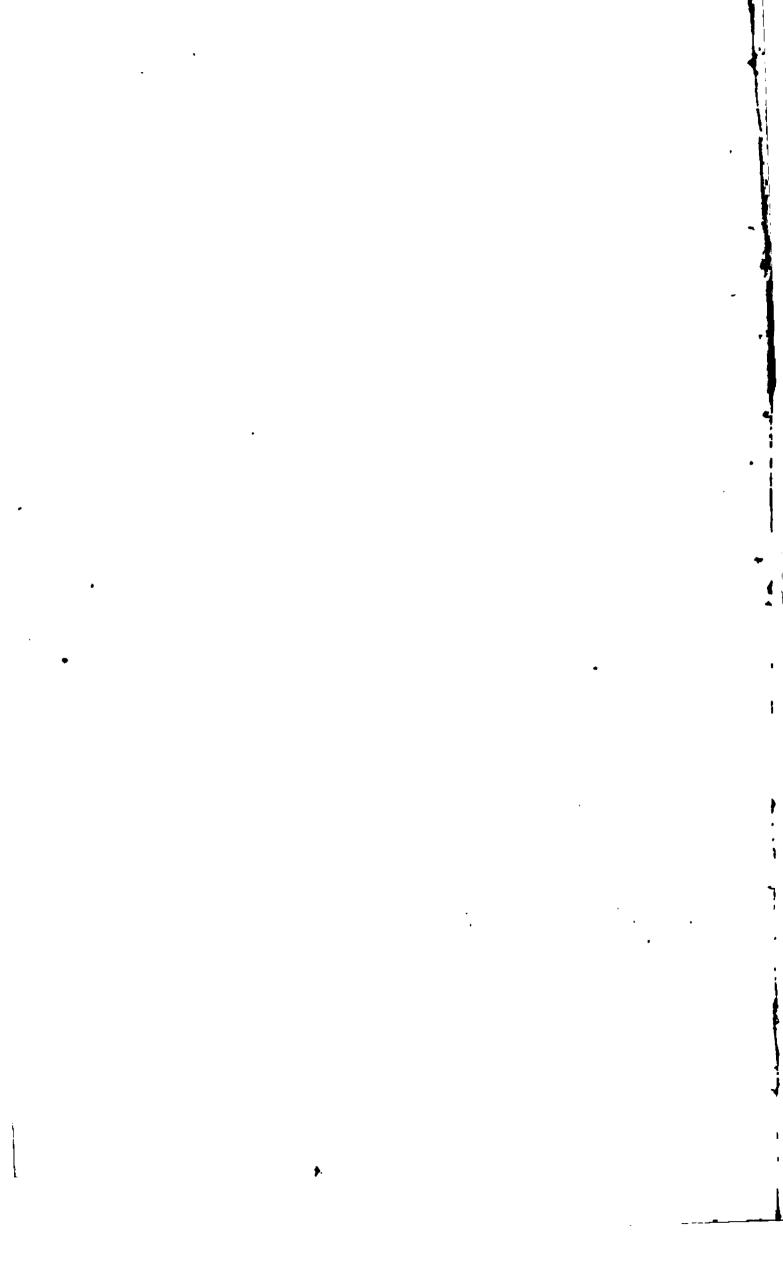
Each book of these *Essais* (the word also came to us from France) forms one of the two volumes. The chapters are shorter than they afterwards became; and there are but sew quotations.

The next edition was published at Bourdeaux in 1582; Edition seconde, renewe et augmentée, and was contained in one volume. An edition also appeared between 1582 and 1587, but no copy of it is now known. Another edition was published at Paris in 1587. A fifth edition appeared at Paris in 1588. Montaigne died on 4 December 1592: and the last edition of his lifetime appeared at Lyons, with the date 1593. Dr. Payen tells us that "Montaigne although he says 'I add but I do not correct' he did often correct even to very light shadings of expressions." It was his custom to note these corrections and additions in the margins of his own copies. His literary fosterdaughter, Mademoiselle Marie de Jars or Jards, daughter of Guillaume de Jars, lord of Neusoi and de Gournay, and hence commonly called Mademoiselle de Gournay, incorporated these corrections and additions in first posthumous edition of 1595; which forms a principal basis for the modern critical text of Montaigne's greatest work,

5. Every excellent Author establishes a distinct section or group of literature in aftertimes, confecrated to the exposition and illustration of his Writings; which create an ever-increasing commentary through their contact with the fresh mind of successive generations. Just as we have a Chaucer, a Shakespeare, a Milton literature: fo is there in France, a Montaigne literature. It may be of affiftance to those who would become acquainted with this, to notice a few works through which they may obtain an entrance into it. M. J. F. Payen, M.D. has been a great worker in this field; especially in his most complete Notice bibliographique sur Montaigne, Paris. 1837, and his Documents inédits, ou peu connus fur Montaigne. Paris, 4 parts of which (250 copies only of some of them being printed,) have appeared, viz. in 1847, 1850, 1855, 1856. M. Alphonse Grün's La vie publique de Michel Montaigne, Paris, 1855, (criticized by Dr. Payen in Part 4 of Documents inédits &c.), will supply references to many of the French Writers who have written on the great Essayist of France. Two tracts likewise may not be overlooked, "Montaigne chez lui. Visite de deux Amis à son Chateau" by MM. E. Galey and L. Lapeyre.

C. Hist. Lit. 141

• **~**



English Reprints.

A HARMONY

OF THE

ESSAYS. ETC.

OF

FRANCIS BACON,

Viscount St. Alban, Baron Verulam, &c.

And after my manner, I alter ever, when I add. So that nothing is finished, till all be finished.—Letter of Sir Francis Bacon to Mr. Tobie Matthew, dated Graies Jnn, Feb. 27. 1610.



ARRANGED BY

EDWARD ARBER.

ociate, King's College, London, F.R.G.S., &c.

LONDON:

5 QUEEN SQUARE, BLOOMSBURY, W.C.

Ent. Stat. Hall.]

1 July, 1871.

[All rights reserved.

(265. k. 89.

CONTENTS.

Prologue.	•	•		•	•	•				AGE -X.
Dr. RAWLEY'S L	IFE O	F Lor	RD B	ACON.	•	•		2	xi-xv	riii.
Ben Jonson's T	ESTIM	ONY.		•	•	•			хv	riii.
Aubrey's Gossi	P.	•	•	•	•			3	xix-x	cxi.
Introduction.		•	•						xii-x	
CONTEMPORARY					_	_			i-xxx	
LATER BIBLIOGR				•	•			xxxiv		
List of Texts c		•					,			xl.
I. A HARMO.	T. E	EN.E	S S 2	4 Y S.		G A	? <i>0 U</i>	P O	F	
		ix tex		. –	_					
FIRST EDITION, 1597.	The Lis	le Page e Epist t of Es	e. le Dec saies.	dicatori	ie.	•	•		•	3 4 5
 Of Study. Of Discourse. Of Ceremonies a Of Followers an Of Suitors. 	nd Res d Frie	spects. nds.	14 24 32	7. Of 8. Of 9. Of	Regi Hond Fact	ment our a ion.	t of H ind R	ealth. eputai	tion.	56 66 76 86
II. MEDITATIO	NES S	SACR.	Æ—S	SACRI	ED I	MEI	OITA	TIOI	VS.	
		Upon	oppos	ite page	es.					
First Edition. Latin, 1597.	{ Tit! { Lis	le Page t of <i>Me</i>	ditat	iones S	`acræ		•		•	96 98
SECOND EDITION. ENGLISH, 1598.		le Page t of Sa			tions		•		•	99
Of the works of God Of the innocency of t Of the exaltation of Of the moderation o	he Dov Charit	e and v ty	visdon	n of the	Serf	•	Lat. Lat.	100—, 104—, 106—,	Eng. Eng.	101 105 107
Of earthly Hope.	•	•	•	•		• .	Lat.	110	Eng.	III
Of Hypocrites Of Impostors	•	•	•	•		•	Lat.	114	eng. Eng.	110
Of the several kinds	of Im	bostors.	•	•			Lat.	118-	Eng.	119
Of Atheism	•	•	•	•			Lat.	120-	Eng.	121
Of Heresies	Z'. C -	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·		•		•	Lat.	124	Eng.	125
Of the Church and t	ne scr	<i>iptures</i>	• •	•		•	Lat.	130	ing.	131

			PAGE
III. OF THE COLOURS OF GOOD	ANI	EV	IL.
[A Preliminary Note	•	•	132-134]
OF THE COLOURS OF GOOD AND EVIL, A fragment.		•	135-154
Contents	•	•	· 137
I. Since all parties or sects challenge the pre-emine place to themselves, that to which all the rest give the second place, seems to be better than every one seems to take the first place out of give the second where it is really due.	with or the or	ne consen hers: fo	st or
2. That kind is altogether best, whose excellence is best.	or pre	-eminen	
3. That which hath a relation to truth is greater to refers to opinion: but the measure and tria belongs to opinion is this: It is that which a do, if he thought it would not be known.	l of th	at which	h
4. That which keeps a matter safe and entire is go destitute and unprovided of retreat is bad: ability of acting is good, not to be able to with a kind of impotency.	for w	hereas a	<i>II</i>
5. That which consists of more parts, and those divi- and more one than what is made up of fewer when they are looked upon piece-meal seem gre a plurality of parts more strongly if they if order; for it then resembles infinity, and hin hending of them.	eter; be in n	all theng when al so certai	zs so in
6. That whose privation (or the want of which) is evil; that whose privation (or the want where in itself good.	good, i	s in itse an evil,	if
7. What is near to good, is good; what is at a distinction is evil.	ance fr	rom good	d,
8. That which a man hath procured by his own defi- mischief (or evil): that which is laid upon his	ault is m by o	a greate thers is	a
lesser evil	stry is ur, or	a greate by the in	. 149 ?r %-
dulgence of fortune, is a lesser good. 10. The degree of absolute privation seems greater the diminution: and again, the degree of inception	han the on (or b	degres (eginnin)	. 151 of g)
seems greater than the degree of increase.	•	•	. 152
IV. A HARMONY OF THE SECON TWENTY-FOUR ESSAY		ROU	P OF
Four texts to an opening.			
Title Page of Harleian MS. 5106. Draft Dedication to Prince Henry of Wales, Sloane I	iS. 42,	• 59•	. 157 . 581
11. Of Friendship 160 14. Of Goodne 12. Of Wisdom for a Man's Self. 182 Nature.	ess and		ss of 198
13. Of Nobility 188 15. Of Beauty	· V	• •	. 208

gifts and bounties of the hand, which His Majesty gave him; both out of the Broad Seal and out of the Alienation Office, to the value in both of £1800 per annum; which with his Manor of Gorhambury and other lands and possessions, near there unto adjoining, amounting to a third part more, he retained

to his dying day.

Towards his rising years, not before, he entered into a married state; and took to wife ALICE, one of the daughters and co-heirs of BENEDICT BARNHAM Esquire, and Alderman of London: with whom he received a sufficiently ample and liberal portion in marriage. Children he had none; which though they be the means to perpetuate our names after our deaths; yet he had other issues to perpetuate his name: the issues of his brain. In which he was ever happy and admired, as Jupiter was in the production of Pallas. Neither did the want of children detract from his good usage of his consort during the intermarriage, whom he presented with much conjugal love and respect, with many rich gifts and endowments, besides a robe of honour which he invested her withal [i.e., he made her a Peeress], which she wore, until her dying day,

being twenty years and more, after his death.

The last five years of his life being withdrawn from civil affairs and from an active life, he employed wholly in contemplation and studies. A thing, whereof his Lordship would often speak during his active life; as if he affected to die in the shadow, and not in the light; which also may be found in several passages of his works. In which time, he composed the greatest part of his books and writings, both in English and Latin. Which I will enumerate (as near as I can) in the just order, wherein they were written. The History of the Reign of King Henry the Seventh. Abecedarium Natura, or a Metaphysical piece, which is lost. Historia Ventorum, Historia vita et mortis: Historia densi et rari; not yet printed. Historia Gravis, et Levis, which is also lost. A Discourse of A Warwith Spain. A Dialogue touching An Holy War. The fable of the New Atlantis. A Preface to a Digest of the Laws of England. The beginning of the History of the Reign of King Henry the Eigth. De Augmentis Scientiarum; or The Advancement of Learning, put into Latin, with several enrichments and enlargements. Counsels Civil and Moral or his book of Essays, likewise enriched and enlarged. The conversion of certain Psalms into English verse. The translation into Latin; of the History of King Henry the Seventh, of the Counsels Civil and Moral, of the dialogue of The Holy War, of the fable of The New Atlantis; for the benefit of other nations. His revising of his book De Sapientia Veterum, Inquisitio de Magnete. Totica Inquisitionis de Ivea et Inquise; both these not vet Magnete, Topica Inquisitionis de Luce et Lumine: both these not yet printed. Lastly, Sylva Sylvarum or the Natural History. These were the fruits and productions of his last five years. His Lordship also designed upon the motion and invitation of his late majesty [Charles I.] to have written The Reign of King Henry the Eigth; but that work perished in the designation merely. God not lending him life to proceed further upon it than only in one morning's work whereof there is extant an Ex Ungue Leonem, already printed in his Lordship's Miscellany Works.

There is a commemoration due as well to his abilities and virtues, as to the course of his life. Those abilities which commonly go single in other men, though of prime and observable parts; were all conjoined and met in him. Those are Sharpness of Wit, Memory, Judgment, and Elocution. For the former three, his books do abundantly speak them, which, with what sufficiency he wrote, let the world judge, but with what celerity he wrote them, I can best testify. But for the fourth, his Elocution, I will only set down, what I heard Sir Walter Raleigh once speak of him, by way of comparison (whose judgment may well be trusted). That the Earl of Salisbury was an excellent speaker but no good penman; that the Earl of Northampton (the Lord Henry Howard) was an excellent penman but no good speaker; but that Sir

Francis Bacon was eminent in both.

I have been induced to think; That if there were a beam of knowledge derived from God upon any man, in these modern times, it was upon him. For though he was a great reader of books, yet he had not his knowledge from books, but from some grounds or notions from within himself; which notwithstanding, he vented with great caution and circumspection. His book of Instauratio Magna (which, in his own account, was the chiefest of his works) was no slight imagination or fancy of his brain; but a settled and concocted notion: the production of many years' labour and travail. I myself have seen at the least twelve copies of the Instauration revised, year by year, one after another; and every year altered and amended in the frame thereof; till, at the last, it came to that model, in which it was committed to the press: as many living creatures do lick their young ones till they bring them to their strength of limbs.

In the composing of his books he did rather drive at a masculine and clear expression than at any fineness or affectation of phrases; and would often ask if the meaning were expressed plainly enough. As being one that accounted words to be but subservient or ministerial to matter, and not the principal: and if his style were polite, it was because he could do no otherwise. Neither was he given to any light conceits, or descanting upon words: but did ever, purposely and industriously, avoid them. For he held such things to be but digressions or diversions from the scope intended, and

to derogate from the weight and dignity of the style.

He was no plodder upon books: though he read much; and that, with great judgement, and rejection of impertinences incident to many authors. For he would ever interlace a moderate relaxation of his mind with his studies; as walking, or taking the air abroad in his coach, or some other befitting recreation. And yet he would lose no time: inasmuch, as upon his first and immediate return, he would fall to reading again: and so suffer no

moment of time to slip from him without some present improvement.

His meals were refections of the ear as well as of the stomack: like the Noctes Atticæ or Convivia Deipno Sophistarum, wherein a man might be refreshed in his mind and understanding no less than in his body. And I have known some of no mean parts, that have professed to make use of their note-books, when they have risen from his table. In which conversations and otherwise, he was no dashing man, as some men are; but ever a countenancer and fosterer of another man's parts. Neither was he one, that would appropriate the speech wholly to himself or delight to out-vie others, but leave a liberty to the co-assessors to take their turns. Wherein he would draw a man on, and allure him to speak upon such a subject as wherein he was peculiarly skilful and would delight to speak: and for himself he contemned no man's observations, but would light his torch at every man's candle.

His opinions and assertions were, for the most part, binding, and not contradicted by any: rather like oracles than discourses. Which may be imputed, either to the well weighing of his sentence by the scales of truth and reason; or else to the reverence and estimation wherein he was commonly had, that no man would contest with him. So that there was no argumentation, or pro and con as they term it, at his table: or if there chanced to be

any, it was carried with much submission and moderation.

I have often observed, and so have other men of great account, that if he had occasion to repeat another man's words after him, he had an use and faculty to dress them in better vestments and apparel than they had before: so that the author should find his own speech much amended and yet the substance of it still retained. As if it had been natural to him to use good forms; as Ovid spake of his faculty of versifying,

Et quod tentabam scribere, versus erat.
[And what I was attempting to write, became a verse.]

When his office called him, as he was of the King's Counsell Learned to charge any offenders, either in criminals or capitals: he was never of an insulting or domineering nature over them, but always tender-hearted and carrying himself decently towards the parties: (though it was his duty to charge them home) but yet as one that looked upon the example with the eye of severity, but upon the person with the eye of pity and compassion. And in Civil Business, as he was Councillor of State, he had the best way of advising: not engaging his master in any precipitate or grievous courses, but

in moderate and fair proceedings. The King whom he served, giving him this testimony, 'That he ever dealt in business suavibus modis, which was

the way that was most according to his own heart.'

Neither was he, in his time, less gracious with the subject than with his Sovereign. He was ever acceptable to the House of Commons when he was a member thereof. Being the King's Attorney and chosen to a place in Parliament; he was allowed and dispensed with to sit in the House, which

was not permitted to other Attorneys.

And as he was a good servant to his master: being never in nineteen years service (as himself averred) rebuked by the King for any thing relating to his Majesty: so he was a good master to his servants, and rewarded their long attendance with good places freely when they fell into his power; which was the cause that so many young gentlemen of blood and quality sought to enlist themselves in his retinue. And if he were abused by any of them in their places; it was only the error of the goodness of his nature: but

the badges of their indiscretions and intemperances.

This Lord was religious. For though the world be apt to suspect and prejudge great wits and politicians to have somewhat of the Atheist: yet he was conservant with God. As appeareth by several passages throughout the whole current of his writings. Otherwise he should have crossed his own principles, which were, 'That a little philosophy maketh men apt to forget God, as attributing too much to second causes; but depth of philosophy bringeth a man back to God again.' Now I am sure there is no man that will deny him, or account otherwise of him but to have been a deep philosopher: and not only so, but that he was able to render a reason of the hope which was in him, which that writing of his of the Confession of the Faith doth abundantly testify. He repaired frequently, when his health would permit him, to the service of the Church, to hear sermons, to the administration of the Sacrament of the blessed Body and Blood of Christ: and died in the true faith established in the Church of England.

This is most true. He was free from malice, which (as he said himself) he never bred, nor fed. He was no revenger of injuries, which if he had minded he had both opportunity and place high enough, to have done it. He was no heaver of men out of their places, as delighting in their ruin and undoing. He was no defamer of any man to his Prince. One day, when a great Statesman was newly dead, that had not been his friend, the King asked him 'what he thought of that Lord which was gone?' He answered 'That he would never have made his majesty's estate better; but he was sure, he would have kept it from being worse.' Which was the worst he would say of him. Which I reckon not amongst his moral but his Christian virtues.

His fame is greater and sounds louder in foreign parts abroad, than at home in his own nation: thereby verifying that Divine sentence, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country and in his own house. Concerning which, I will give you a taste only, out of a letter written from Italy (the Store-House of refined wits) to the late Earl of Devonshire [d. 1628.] then the Lord Cavendish. "I will expect the new Essays of my Lord Chancellor Bacon; as also his History, with a great deal of desire: and whatsoever else he shall compose. But in particular, of his History I promise myself a thing perfect and singular; especially in Henry the Seventh, where he may exercise the talent of his divine understanding. This Lord is more and more known; and his books here, more and more delighted in; and those men, that have more than ordinary knowledge in human affairs, esteem him one of the most capable spirits of this age. And he is truly such."

Now his fame doth not decrease with days since, but rather increase. Divers of his works have been anciently and yet lately translated into other tongues both learned and modern, by foreign pens. Several persons of quality, during his Lordship's life, crossed the seas on purpose to gain an opportunity of seeing him and discoursing with him; whereof one carried his Lordship's picture from head to foot, over with him to France, as a thing which he foresaw, would be much desired there: that so they might enjoy

the image of his person as well as the images of his brain, his books. Amongst the rest, the Marquis Fiat, a French nobleman who came ambassador into England in the beginning of Queen Mary, wife to King Charles; was taken with an extraordinary desire of seeing him; for which he made way by a friend. And when he came to him, being then through weakness confined to his bed, the Marquis saluted him with this high expression; 'That his Lordship had been ever to him like the angels, of whom he had often heard, and read much of them in books, but he never saw them.' After which they contracted an intimate acquaintance: and the Marquis did so revere him that besides his frequent visits, they wrote letters, one to the other, under the titles and appelations of father and son. As for his many salutations by letters from foreign worthies devoted to leaning, I forbear to mention them, because that is a thing common to other men of learning or note together with him.

But yet in this matter of his fame, I speak in the comparative only and not in the exclusive. For his reputation is great in his own nation also, especially amongst those that are of a more acute and sharper judgement. Which I will exemplify but with two testimonies and no more. The former, when his History of King Henry the Seventh was to come forth, it was delivered to the old Lord Brooke to be perused by him; who, when he had despatched it, returned it to the author, with this eulogy, 'Commend me to my Lord, and bid him take care to get good paper and ink: for the work is incomparable.' The other, shall be that of Doctor Samuel Collins, late Provost of King's College in Cambridge, a man of no vulgar wit, who affirmed unto me, 'That when he had read the book Of the Advancement of Learning, he found himself in a case to begin his studies anew and that he had lost all the

time of his studying before.

It hath been desired that something should be signified touching his diet and the regiment of his health: of which in regard to his universal insight into nature, he may, perhaps, be, to some, an example. For his diet, it was a plentiful and liberal diet, as his stomach would bear it, than a restrained. Which he also commended in his book of The History of Life and Death. In his younger years, he was much given to the finer and lighter sort of meats, as of fowls and such like; but afterwards, when he grew more judicious, he preferred the stronger meats, such as the shambles afforded, as those meats which breed the more firm and substantial juices of the body and less dissipable. Upon which, he would often make his meal; though he had other meats upon the table. You may be sure he would not neglect that himself, which he so much extolled in his writings; and that was the use of Nitre: whereof he took in the quantity of about three grains, in thin warm broath every morning for thirty years together next before his death. And for physic he did indeed live physically but not miserably. For he took only a maceration of rhuburb infused into a draught of white wine and beer, mingled together for the space of half an hour, once in six or seven days, immediately before his meal, whether dinner or supper, that it might dry the body less; which, as he said, did carry away frequently the grosser humours of the body, and not diminish or carry away any of the spirits, as sweating doth. And, this was no grievous thing to take. As for other physic, in an ordinary way, whatsoever hath been vulgarly spoken, he took not. His receipt for the gout, which did constantly ease him of his pain within two hours, is already set down in the end of the Natural History.

It may seem the moon had some principal place in the figure of his nativity [!!] For the moon was never in her passion or eclipsed, but he was surprised with a sudden fit of fainting: and that, though he observed not, nor took any previous knowledge of the eclipse thereof. And as soon as the

eclipse ceased, he was restored to his former strength again.

He died on the 9th day of April in the year 1626; in the early morning of the day, then celebrated for our Saviour's Resurrection, in the 66th year of his age, at the Earl of Arundel's house in Highgate, near London. To which place he casually repaired about a week before; God so ordaining that he should die there of a gentle fever, accidentally accompanied with a great

cold; whereby the defluxion of rheum fell so plentifully upon his breast that he died by suffocation. And was buried in St. Michael's Church at Saint Albans: being the place designed for his burial by his last will and testament; both because the body of his mother was interred there, and because it was the only church then remaining within the precincts of old Verulam. Where he hath a monument erected for him of white marble, (by the care and gratitude of Sir Thomas Meutys Knight, formerly his Lordship's secretary, afterwards clerk of the King's Honourable Privy Council, under two kings) representing his full portraiture, in the posture of studying: with an inscription composed by that accomplished gentleman and rare wit, Sir Henry Wotton.

But howsoever his body was mortal, yet no doubt his memory and works will live, and will, in all probability, last as long as the world lasteth. In order to which, I have endeavoured, after my poor ability, to do this honour

to his Lordship, by way of conducing to the same.

BEN JONSON'S TESTIMONY TO BACON.

In a collection of passages entitled, Timber; or, Discoveries made upon

Men and Matter; written after 1630. Ben Jonson writes:

"One, though hee be excellent, and the chiefe, is not to bee imitated alone. For never no Imitator, ever grew up to his Author; likenesse is alwayes on this side Truth: Yet there hapn'd, in my time, one noble Speaker, who was full of gravity in his speaking. His language, (where hee could spare, or passe by a jest) was nobly censorious. No man ever spake more neatly, more presly, more weightily, or suffer'd lesse emptinesse, lesse idlenesse, in what hee utter'd. No member of his speech but consisted of the owne graces. His hearers could not cough, or looke aside from him, without losse. Hee commanded where hee spoke, and had his Judges angry, and pleased at his devotion. No man had their affection more in his power. The feare of every man that heard him, was, lest hee should make an end." p. 101.

"I have ever observ'd it, to have beene the office of a wise Patriot, among the greatest affaires of the State, to take care of the Common-wealth of Learning. For Schooles, they are the Seminaries of State: and nothing is worthier the study of a States-man, then that part of the Republicke, which we call the advancement of Letters. Witnesse the care of Iulius Casar; who in the heat of the civill warre, writ his bookes of Analogie, and dedicated them to Tully. This made the late Lord S. Albane, entitle his worke, nouum Organum. Which though by the most of superficiall men; who cannot get beyond the Title of Nominals, it is not penetrated, nor understood; it really openeth all defects of Learning whatsoever; and is a Booke,

Qui longum noto scriptori porriget ævum.

My conceit of his Person was never increased toward him, by his place, or honours. But I have, and doe reverence him for the greatnesse, that was onely proper to himselfe, in that hee seem'd to mee ever, by his worke one of the greatest men, and most worthy of admiration, that had beene in many Ages. In his adversity I ever prayed, that God would give him strength: for Greatnesse hee could not want. Neither could I condole in a word, or syllable for him; as knowing no Accident could doe harme to vertue, but rather helpe to make it manifest. p. 102. Works. ii. Ed. 1640.

AUBREY'S GOSSIP.

OHN AUBREY, in his MS. notes, the dedication of which to Anthony Wood is dated 15th June 1580, which are printed at the end of Letters written by eminent persons, &c. London. 1813. gives us the following further information about Lord Bacon.

In his Lordship's prosperity Sr. Fulke Grevil, Lord Brooke, was his great fiend and acquaintance, but when he was in disgrace and want, he was so worthy as to forbid his butler to let him have any more small beer, which he had often sent for, his stomack being nice, and the small beere of Grayes Inne not liking his pallet. This has done his memorie more dishonour then Sr Ph. Sydney's friendship engraven on his monument hath donne him honour.

Richard, Earle of Dorset, was a great admirer and friend of the Ld. Ch. Bacon, and was wont to have Sr Tho. Ballingsley along with him, to remember and putt downe in writing my Lord's sayinges at table. Mr. Ben Ionson was one of his friends and acquaintance, as doeth appeare by his excellent verses on his Lops birth day, in his 2nd vol. and in his Vnderwoods, where he gives him a character, and concludes, That about his time, and within his view, were borne all the witts that could honour a nation or help s udie. He came often to Sr John Danvers at Chelsey. Sir John told me that when his Lop had wrote the Hist. of Hen. 7, he sent the manuscript copie to him to desire his opinion of it before it 'twas printed. Qd Sir John, Your Lordship knowes that I am no scholar. 'Tis no matter, said my Lord, I know what a scholar can say; I would know what you can say. Sir John read it, and gave his opinion what he misliked (which I am sorry I have forgott) which my Ld. acknowledged to be true, and mended it. "Why," said he, "a schollar would never have told me this."

Mr. Tho. Hobbes (Malmesburiensis) was beloved by his Lop., who was wont to have him walke in his delicate groves, when he did meditate: and when a notion darted into his mind, Mr. Hobbes was presently to write it downe, and his Lop. was wont to say that he did it better than any one els about him; for that many times, when he read their notes he scarce understood what they writt, because they understood it not clearly themselves. In short, all that were great and good loved and honoured him. Sir Edward Coke, Ld. Chiefe Justice, alwayes envyed him, and would be undervalueing

his lawe. I knew old lawyers that remembred it.

He was Lord Protector during King James's progresse into Scotland, and gave audience in great state to Ambassadors in the banquetting house at Whitehall. His Lop. would many time have musique in the next roome where he meditated. The Aviary at Yorke House was built by his Lop; it did cost 300 lib. Every meale, according to the season of the yeare, he had his table strewed with sweet herbes and flowers, which he sayd did refresh his spirits and memorie. When his Lop. was at his country house at Gorhambery. St. Alban's seemed as if the court had been there, so nobly did he live. His servants had liveries with his crest; his watermen were more imployed by gentlemen then even the kings.

King James sent a buck to him, and he gave the keeper fifty pounds.

He was wont to say to his servant, Hunt, (who was a notable thrifty man, and loved this world, and the only servant he had that he could never gett to become bound for him) "The world was made for man (Hunt), and not man for the world." Hunt left an estate of 1000 lib. per ann., in Somerset.

None of his servants durst appeare before him without Spanish leather bootes: for he would smell the neates leather, which offended him.

The East India merchants presented his Lop, with a cabinet of jewell-

which his page, Mr. Cockaine, received, and deceived his Lord.

His Lordship was a good Poet, but conceal'd as appears by his Letter

See excellent verse sof his Lop's., which Mr. Farnaby translated into Greek. and printed both in his $A\nu\theta o\lambda o\gamma la$, sc.

The world's a bubble, and the life of man, Less than a span, &c.

[As this translation by Lord Bacon is not generally known, we give it entire T. Farnaby's *Epigramata Selecta*, taken from various authors, with ha Greek translations of them upon opposite pages, was published at London i 1629, under the title H $\tau \hat{\eta}$ s av θ o λ o γ las Av θ o λ o γ la. Florilegium E_{λ} grammatum Græcorum, eorumque Latino versu à varijs redditorum.

Among the Eprigrams on 'Human life' is one by John Gorræus: afte

which comes.

Huc elegantem viri clarissimi Domini Verulamij παρωδίαν adj adlubuit.

> THe world's a bubble, and the life of man lesse then a span, In his conception wretched, from the wombe, so to the tombe: Curst from the cradle, and brought vp to yeares, with cares and feares. Who then to fraile mortality shall trust, But limmes the water, or but writes in dust.

Yet since with sorrow here we live opprest: what life is best? Courts are but only superficiall scholes to dandle fooles. The rurall parts are turn'd into a den of sauage men. And wher's a city from all vice so free, But may be term'd the worst of all the three!

Domesticke cares afflict the husbands bed, or paines his head. Those that live single take it for a curse or doe things worse. Some would have children, those that have them, mone, or wish them gone. What is it then to haue or haue no wife, But single thraldome, or a double strife?

Our owne affections still at home to please, is a disease, To crosse the sea to any foreine soyle perills and toyle, Warres with their noyse affright vs: when they cease, W'are worse in peace. What then remaines? but that we still should cry, Not to be borne, or being borne to dye.]

His Lordship being in Yorke house garden looking on Fishers, as the were throwing their nett, asked them what they would take for their draug. they answered so much: his Lop. would offer them no more but so muc They drew up their nett, and it were only 2 or 3 little fishes, his Lop. the told them, it had been better for them to have taken his offer. They replie they hoped to have a better draught; but, said his Lop. Hope is a good breakfast, but an ill supper,

Upon his being in disfavour, his servants suddenly went away, he compared

them to the flying of the vermin when the house was falling.

One told his Lordship it was now time to look about him. He replyed, 'I doe not looke about me, I looke above me.'

are fewer of his decrees reverst, than of any other Chancellor. He had a delicate, lively hazel eie; Dr. Harvey told me it was like the eie

of a viper.

[Aubrey in his Life of Hobbes. Vol. II. Part ii. p. 602 of the same work, ates. "The Lord Chancellor Bacon loved to converse with him. He assisted his Lordship in translating severall of his essayes into Latin, one I well remember is that, Of the Greatness of Cities: [? Kingdoms] the rest I haue forgott. His Lordship was a very contemplative person, and was wont to contemplate in his delicious walks at Gorhambery, and dictate to Mr. Bushell, or some other of his gentlemen, that attended him with ink and paper ready to set downe presently his thoughts."]

Mr. Hobbes told me that the cause of his Lp's death was trying an experiment. As he was taking an aire in a coach with Dr. Witherborne (a Scotchman, Physician to the King) towards Highgate, snow lay on the ground, and it came into my Lord's thoughts, why flesh might not be preserved in snow as in salt. They were resolved they would try the experiment present]y. They alighted out of the coach, and went into a poore woman's house at the bottome of Highgate hill, and bought a hen, and made the woman exenterate it, and then stuffed the bodie with snow, and my Lord did help to doe it himselfe. The snow so chilled him, that he immediately fell so extremely ill, that he could not returne to his lodgings, (I suppose they at Graye's Inne,) but went to the Earl of Arundell's house at Highgate, where they putt him into a good bed warmed with a panne, but it was a damp bed that had not been layn in about a yeare before, which gave him such a cold that in 2 or 3 dayes, as I remember he [Mr. Hobbes].told me, he dyed of suffocation. Vol. II. Part i. p. 221-7.

INTRODUCTION.

*Instauration, wrote the following letter to Lord Bur ley (who had taken Bacon's aunt for his second with in the year 1591, six years previous to the appearance of the first of these Essays.

It is a most able summary of his life and purposes up to that time, and is expressed with excellent power and earnestness.

X/ITH as much confidence, as mine own honest, and faithf My Lord. Devotion unto your Service, and your honourable Co. espondence unto me, and my poor estate, can breed in a Man, do I commend myself unto your Lordship. I waxe now somewhat ancient: One a substitute yeares, is a great deal of sand, in the Houre-glasse. My Health, I thank God, I find confirmed; And I do fear, that Action shall impair i: Because I account, my ordinary course of Study, and Meditation to be more painfull, than most parts of Action are. I ever bare a mind, (in some middle place, that I could discharge,) to serve her Majesty; Not as a Man, born and a Salabat level because I will be the level because that level because that level because the server and a server that level because the server and a server that level because the server that under Sol, that loveth Honour; Nor under Jupiter, that loveth Business (for the Contemplative Planet carrieth me away wholly,) but as a Man born, under an Excellent Soveraign, that deserveth the Dedication, of all Mens Abilities. Besides, I doe not finde, in myself, so much Self-love, but that the greater parts, of my Thoughts are, to deserve well, (if I were able,) of my Frends, and namely of your Lordship; who being the Atlas, of this Commonwealth, the Honour of my House, and the second Founder of my poor Estate, I am tyed, by all duties, both of a good Patriot, and of an unworthy Kinsman, and of an Obliged Servant, to employ whatsoever I am, to doe you Service. Again, the Meanness of my Estate, doth somewhat move me: For though I cannot accuse my Self, that I am either prodigal, or sloathfull, yet my Health is not to spend, nor my Course to get. Lastly, I confesse, that I have as, vast Contemplative Ends, as I have moderate Civil Ends: For I have taken all Knowledge to be my Province; And if I could purge it, of two sort of Rovers, whereof the one, with frivolous Disputations Confuta-tions, and Verbosities: The other, with blind Experiments, and Auricular Traditions, and Impostures; hath committed so many spoils; I hope, I should bring in, Industrious Observations, grounded Conclusions, and pro-fitable Inventions and Discoveries, the best State of that *Province*. This, whether it be Curiosity, or Vain-glory, or Nature, or, (if one take it favourably,) Philanthropia, is so fixed in my minde, as it cannot be removed. I doe easily see, that Place of any Reasonable Countenance, doth bring commandement, of more Wits, than of a Mans own; which is the Thing I greatly affect. And for your Lordship, perhaps you shall not finde more Strength, and less Encounter, in any other. And if your Lordship, shall finde now, or at any time, that I doe seek, or affect, any place, whereunto any that is nearer unto your Lordship, shall be concurrent, say then, that I am a most dishonest Man. And if your Lordship, will not carry me on, I will not doe as Anaraganas did who reduced himself with Contemplation will not doe as Anaxagoras did, who reduced himself, with Contemplation, unto voluntary poverty; But this I will doe, I will sell the Inheritance, that I have, and purchase some Lease, of quick Revenew, or some Office of Gain, that shall be executed by Deputy, and so give over, all Care of Service, and become some sorry Book maker, or a true Pioneer, in that Mine of Truth, which (he said) lay so deep. This which I have writ unto your Lordship, is rather Thoughts, than Words, being set down without all Art, Disguizing, or Reservation. Wherein I have done honour, both to your Lordships Wisdom, in judging, that that will be best believed of your Lordship, which is truest; And to your Lordships good nature, in retaining nothing from you. And even so, I wish your Lordship all Happiness, and to my self, Means and Occasion, to be added, to my faithfull desire, to doe you Service. [Resuscitatio, p. 95. Ed. 1657.] From my Lodgings at Grays Inne.

2. No right judgment can be formed of these Essays, in relation o Bacon's powers: unless some glimpse, however brief and impersect, be obtained of the 'vast contemplative ends' to which he chiefly consecrated his magnificent powers for the last thirty-sive years of his most busy life. Mr. Hallam has given us an excellent sketch of that New Philosophy, which tasked even the mighty intellect of the Lord Chancellor simply to design.

In the dedication of the Novum Organum to James in 1620, Bacon says that he had been about some such work near thirty years, "so as I made no haste." "And the reason," he adds "why I have published it now, specially being imperfect, is, to speak plainly, because I number my days, and would have it saved. There is another reason of my so doing, which is to try whether I can get help in one intended part of this work, namely, the compiling of a natural and experimental history, which must be the main foundation of a true and active philosophy." He may be presumed at least to have made a very considerable progress in his undertaking, before the close of the sixteenth century. But it was first promulgated to the world by the publication of his Treatise on the Advancement of Learning in 1605. In this, indeed, the whole of the Baconian philosophy may be said to be implicitly contained except perhaps the second book of the Novum Organum. In 1623, he published his more celebrated Latin translation of this work, if it is not rather to be deemed a new one, entitled De Augmentis Scientiarum. I find, upon comparison, that more than two thirds of this treatise are a version, with slight interpolation or omission, from the Advancement of Learning, the remainder being new matter. p. 168.

The Instauratio Magna, dedicated to James, is divided, according to the magnificent ground-plot of its author, into six parts. The first of these he entitles Partitiones Scientiarum, comprehending a general summary of that knowledge which mankind already possess; yet not merely treating this affirmatively, but taking special notice of whatever should seem deficient or imperfect; sometimes even supplying, by illustration or precept, these vacant spaces of science. The first part he declares to be wanting in the Instauratio. It has been chiefly supplied by the treatise De Augmentis Scientiarum; yet perhaps even that does not fully come up to the amplitude of this design.

The second part of the Instauratio was to be, as he expresses it, "the science of a better and more perfect use of reason in the investigation of things, and of the true aids of the understanding," the new logic, or inductive method, in which what is eminently styled the Baconian philosophy consists. This, as far as he completed it, is known to all by the name of Novum Organum. But he seems to have designed a fuller treatise in place of this; the aphorisms into which he has digested it being rather the heads or theses of chapters, at least in many places, that would have been further expanded. (It is entitled by himself. Pars secundæ Summa, digesta in aphorismos.) And it is still more important to observe, that he did not achieve the whole of this summary that he had promised; but out of nine divisions of his method we only possess the first, which he denominates prærogativæ instantiarum. Eight others, of exceeding importance in logic, he has not touched at all, except to describe them by name and to promise more. "We will speak," he says, "in the first place, of prerogative instances; secondly, of the aids of induction; thirdly, of the rectification of induction; fourthly, of varying the investigation according to the nature of the subject; fifthly, of prerogative natures (or objects), as to investigation, or the choice of what shall be first inquired into; sixthly, of the boundaries of inquiry, or the synoptical view of all natures in the world; seventhly, on the application of inquiry to practice, and what relates to man; eighthly, on the preparations (parascevis) for inquiry; lastly, on the ascending and descending scale of axioms." All these, after the first, are wanting, with the exception of some slightly handled in separate parts of Bacon's writings; and the deficiency, which is so important,

seems to have been sometimes overlooked by those who have written about

the Novum Organum.

The third part of the *Instauratio Magna* was to comprise an entire natural history, diligently and scrupulously collected from experience of every kind; including under that name of natural history every thing wherein the art of man has been employed on natural substances either for practice or experiment; no method of reasoning being sufficient to guide us to truth as to natural things, if they are not themselves clearly and exactly apprehended. It is unnecessary to observe that very little of this immense chart of nature could be traced by the hand of Bacon, or in his time. His Centuries of Natural History containing about one thousand observed facts and experiments, are a very slender contribution towards such a description of universal nature as he contemplated. These form no part of the *Instauratio Magna*, and had been compiled before [*This is contradictory to Dr. Rawley's statement on next page*]. But he enumerates one hundred and thirty particular histories which ought to be drawn up for this great work. A few of these he has given in a sort of skeleton, as samples rather of the method of collecting facts, than of the facts themselves; namely, the History of Winds, of Life and Density and Rarity, of Sound and Hearing.

The fourth part, called Scala Intellectus, is also wanting with the exception of a very few introductory pages. "By these tables," says Bacon, "we mean not such examples as we subjoin to the several rules of our method, but types and models, which place before our eyes the entire process of the mind in the discovery of truth, selecting various and remarkable instances." These he compares to the diagrams of geometry, by attending to which the

steps of the demonstration become perspicuous.

In a fifth part of the Instauratio Magna Bacon had designed to give a specimen of the new philosophy which he hoped to raise after a due use of his natural history and inductive method, by way of anticipation or sample of the whole. He calls it Prodomi, sive Anticipationes Philosophiæ Secundæ. And some fragments of this part are published by the names of Cogita et Visa, Cogitationes de Natura Rerum, Filum Labyrinthi, and a few more, being as much, in all probability, as he had reduced to writing. In his own metaphor, it was to be like the payment of interest, till the principal could be raised; tanquam fænus reddatur, donec sors haberi possit.

For he despaired of ever completing the work by a sixth and last portion, which was to display a perfect system of philosophy, deduced and confirmed by a legitimate, sober, and exact enquiry according to the method which he had invented and laid down. "To perfect this last part is above our powers and beyond our hopes. We may, as we trust, make no despicable beginnings, the destinies of the human race must complete it; in such a manner, perhaps, as men, looking only at the present, would not readily conceive. For upon this will depend not a speculative good, but all the fortunes of mankind and

all their power."

And with an eloquent prayer that his exertions may be rendered effectual to the attainment of truth and happiness, this introductory chapter of the *Instauratio*, which announces the distribution of its portions, concludes.

Such was the temple, of which Bacon saw in vision before him the stately front and decorated pediments, in all their breadth of light and harmony of proportion, while long vistas of receding columns and glimpses of internal splendour revealed a glory that it was not permitted to him to com-

prehend.

In the treatise De Augmentis Scientiarum and in the Novum Organum, we have less, no doubt, than Lord Bacon, under different conditions of life, might have achieved; he might have been more emphatically the high priest of nature, if he had not been the chancellor of James I.; but no one man could have filled up the vast outline which he alone, in that stage of the world, could have so boldly sketched.—Intro. to the Lit. of Europe, iii. 168-175, Ed. 1839.

Bacon did 'get help' in his Natural History from his chaplain, Dr. Rawley: and among the many writings of his 'writing time,' i.e. from his fall till his death, this work was completed. It was published after his decease under the title of 'Sylva Sylvarum: or A Naturall Historie, in ten Centuries,' London, 1627. fol., with the following dedication to Charles I.:--

May it please your most Excellent Majestie;

The whole Body of the Naturall Historie, either designed, or written, by the late Lo. Viscount S. Alban, was dedicated to your Maiestie, in his Booke De Ventis, about foure yeeres past, when your Maiestie was Prince: So as there needed no new Dedication of this Worke, but only, in all humble-So as there needed no new Dedication of this Worke, but only, in all humblenesse, to let your Maiestie know, it is yours. It is true, if that Lo. had
lived, your Maiestie, ere long, had beene invoked, to the Protection of another Historie; Whereof, not Natures Kingdome, as in this, but these of
your Maiesties, (during the Time and Raigne of King Henry the Eighth)
had beene the Subject: Which since it died vnder the Designation meerely,
there is nothing left, but your Maiesties Princely Goodnesse, graciously to
accept of the Vndertakers Heart, and Intentions; who was willing to have
parted, for a while, with his Darling Philosophie, that hee might have
attended your Royall Commandement, in that other Worke. Thus much I
have beene bold, in all lowlinesse, to represent vnto your Maiestie, as one
that was trusted with his Lordships Writings, even to the last. And as
this Worke affecteth the Stampe of your Maiesties Royall Protection, to
make it more currant to the World, So vnder the Protection of this Worke,
I presume in all humblenesse to approach your Maiesties presence; And to I presume in all humblenesse to approach your Maiesties presence; And to offer it vp into your Sacred Hands.
Your MAIESTIES most Loyal and Denoted Subject, W. RAWLEY.

After which Dr. Rawley gives the following Epistle to the Reader, which 'is the same, that should have been prefixed to this Booke, if his Lordship had lived.' Bacon was singularly fortunate in having such a chaplain: and we are ever indebted to him for such a revelation, both of the spirit and method of the New Philosophy, as hereinafter follows:-

Hauing had the Honour to bee continually with my Lord, in compiling of this Worke; And to be employed therein; I have thought it not amisse (with his Lordships good leave and liking,) for the better satisfaction of those that shall reade it, to make knowne somewhat of his Lordships Intentions, touching the Ordering, and Publishing of the same. I have heard his Lordship often say; that if hee should have served the glory of his owne Name, had been better not to have published this Naturall History: For it hee had been better not to have published this Naturall History: For it may seeme an Indigested Heap of Particulars; and cannot have that Lustre, which Bookes cast into Methods haue; But that he resolued to preferre the good of Men, and that which might best secure it, before any thing that might haue Relation to Himselfe. And hee knew well, that there was no other way open, to vnloose Mens minds, being bound; and (as it were) Maleficiate, by the Charmes of deceiving Notions, and Theories; and therby made Impotent for Generation of VVorkes: But onely no wher to depart from the Sense, and cleare experience; But to keepe close to it, especially in the beginning: Besides, this Naturall History was a Debt of his, being Designed and set downe for a third part of the Instauration. I have also heard his Lordship discourse, that Men (no doubt) will thinke many of the Experiments conteined in this Collection to be Vulgar or Triuall; Meane and Sordid; Curious and Fruitlesse; and therefore he wisheth, that they would have perpetually before their Eyes, what is now in doing; And the Difference betweene this Naturall History, and others. For those Naturall Histories, which are Extant, being gathered for Delight and Vse, are full of pleasant Descriptions and Pictures; and affect and seek after Admiration, Rarities, and Secrets. But contrariwise, the Scope which his Lordship intendeth, is to write such a Naturall History, as may be Fundamentall to the Erecting and Building of a true Philosophy: For the Illumination of the Vnderstanding; the Extracting of Axiomes; and the producing of many Noble Works, and Effects. For he hopeth, by this meanes, to acquit Himselfe of that, for which hee taketh Himselfe in a sort bound; And that is, the Aduauncement of all Learning and Sciences. For having in this present VVorke Collected the Materials for the Building; And in his Novum Organum (of which his Lordship is yet to publish a Second Part,) set downe the Instruments and Directions for the Worke; Men shall now bee wanting to themselves, if they raise not Knowledge to that perfection, whereof the Nature of Mortall me is capable. And in this behalfe, I have heard his Lordship speake complaint ingly: That his Lordship (who thinketh hee descript to be an Architect in ingly; That his Lordship (who thinketh hee descrueth to be an Architect in this building,) should be forced to be a VVork-man and a Labourer; And to digge the Clay, and burne the Brick; And more then that, (according to the hard Condition of the *Israelites* at the latter end) to gather the Strawe and Stubble, ouer all the Fields, to burn the Bricks withall. For he knoweth, that except hee doe it, nothing will be done: Men are so sett to despise the Meanes of their owne good. And as for the Basenes of many of the Experiments; As long as they be Gods VVorks, they are Honourable enough. And for the Vulgarnes of them; true Axiomes must be drawne from plaine Experience, and not from doubtfull; And his Lordships course is, to make VVonders Plaine, and not Plaine things VVonders; And that Experience likewise must be broken and grinded, and not whole, or as it groweth. And for Vse; his Lordship hath often in his Mouth, the two kindes of Experiments; for Vse; his Lordship hath often in his Mouth, the two kindes of Experiments; Experimenta Fructifera, and Experimenta Lucifera: Experiments of Vse, and Experiments of Light; And he reporteth himself, whether he were not a strange Man, that should thinke that Light hath no Vse, because it hath no Matter. Further, his Lordship thought good also, to add vnto many of the Experiments themselues, some Glosse of the Causes; that in the succeeding work of Interpreting Nature, and Framing Axiomes, all things may be in more Readines. And for the Causes herein by Him assigned; his Lordship perswadeth Himselfe, they are farr more certaine, then those that are rendred by Others; Not for any Excellency of his owne Witt, (as his Lordship is wont to say) but in respect of his continual Conversation with Nature, and Experience. He did consider likewise, that by this Addiwith Nature, and Experience. He did consider likewise, that by this Addition of Causes, Mens mindes (which make so much hast to find out the Causes of things;) would not think themselues vtterly lost, in a Vast VVood of Experience, but stay vpon these Causes, (such as they are) a little, till true Axiomes may be more fully discouered. I have heard his Lordship say also, that one great Reason, why he would not put these Particulars into any exact Method, (though he that looketh attentiuely into them, shall finde that they have a secret Order) was, because hee conceined that other men would now thinke, that they could doe the like; And so goe on with a further Collection: which if the Method had been Exact, many would haue despaired to attaine by Imitation. As for his Lordships loue of Order, I can referr any Man to his Lordships Latine Booke, De Augmentis Scientiarum; which (if my Iudgment be any thing) is written in the Exactest Order, that I know any Writing to bee. I will conclude with an vsuall Speech of his Lordships. That this VVorke of his Naturall History, is the World, as God made it, and not as Men haue made it; For that it hath nothing of Imagination.

W. Rawley.

After Sylva Sylvarum appeared in the same impression, the 'New Atlantis, A Worke vnfinished,' respecting which Dr. Rawley thus writes To the Reader.

This Fable my Lord decised, to the end that He might exhibite therein, a Modell or Description of a Colledge, instituted for the Interpreting of Nature, and the Producing of Great and Marueilous Works for the Benefit of Men; Under the name of Salomons House, or the Colledge of the Sixe Payes Works. And even so farre his Lordship hath proceeded, as to finish that Part: Certainely, the Modell is more Vast, and High, than can possibly be imitated in all things. Notwithstanding most Things therin are within Mens Power to effect. His Lordship thought also in this present Fable, to have composed a Frame of Larges or of the hest State or Moveld. Fable, to have composed a Frame of Lawes, or of the best State or Mould of a Conmon-wealth; But foreseeing it would be a long Worke, his Desire Collecting the Naturall History diverted him, which He preferred .nany

grees before it.

This Worke of the New Atlantis (as much as concerneth the English Edition) his Lordship designed for this Place; In regard it hath so neare affinity (in one Part of it) with the Preceding Naturall History.

W. Rawley.

3. We have thought thus much—and we would suggest that every clause and statement quoted should be thoroughly considered—concerning Bacon's Life and Operations, indispensable to a fair consideration of these Essays. For they formed no essential part of his work; they entered not into his conceptions of the proficiency and advancement of knowledge. Like his History of Henry VII., written at the request of King James, and his intended History of Henry VIII., which he promised to Prince Charles; these Counsels are by-works of his life, the labours, as it were, of his left hand; his right being occupied in grafping the

It was indeed the continued fuccess of the small tract of 1597, containing a nearly equal number of Essays and Sacred Meditations, that recommended this form of writing to their author's attention; and induced him-writing rapidly in fuch few moments as he could spare from the avocations of his legal, political, and court life; or the more engrossing revolvency of his Philosophy—to increase them both in number and weight. So in the midst of many other writings they were incessantly corrected and added to, until in the Latin edition of 1638, they assumed their final shape, in that language, in which he thought they

might 'last as long as Bookes last.

4. What kind of writing is an Essay? A question somewhat hard precisely to answer. Usually we are taught that the word Essay (from the French Essayer) is synonymous with Assay or Trial-Examination, and equivalent to Attempt. The word, however, both in its earliest and more recent use, is really but a modest depreciation of a man's own Opinions and Reflections. So that, though he should give you his keenest observation, his ripest thought, his clearest utterance; he disclaims their intrinsic importance and value, and bids you take them but for simple Attempts. The word itself has nothing necessarily to do with any specific manner of the writing. Montaigne, Bacon, and Addison, were Master-Essayists; yet their compositions are wholly unlike in ftyle and form.

The vagueness of the name, Essays, has led in recent times to the use of a number of sectional sub-titles. Essays in Philosophy are known as Dissertations or Treatises; Essays in Science as Papers; Essays in Criticism as Reviews; and Essays in Politics as Articles. All these, however, do separate themselves from the true Essay, which seems to be more especially connected as to its subject with Literature and Human Nature. There is also about an Essay a certain good-humoured steadiness quite separating it from Squibs, Skits, and fuch like; and from bitterness and satire of all kinds. So its weakness is a liability to a wordy dulness: and it requires the hand of a Master for the smooth strong writing of a good Essay.

As regards the substance of an Essay, Bacon's own definition 'dispersed meditations,' may be accepted as true; using Meditation in its full sense of 'considerate fixed contemplation,' the going round about a thing, observing its various aspects and

prospects.

Of the three writers, Montaigne, Bacon, and Addison; the last is by far the most perfect Essayist. For an Essay is a thing to rest in, just as an Heroic Poem is a thing to soar with. consists of thought circumscribed to one principal subject. should be moderately short, concatenated in thought, and modestly illuminated with fancy and illustration. Above all, and this is half the matter, it should be set forth with the greatest possible clearness of expression, the utmost attainable charm of good writing. Some of Addison's papers in the Spectator afford examples of the highest finish and skill in English Essay writing.

5. The present Edition, by fixing the latest date assignable for its composition, to every portion of these Essays, explains a certain incongruity of style between many of them, by showing the change that supervened in Bacon's manner of writing them.

this, the following points may be briefly noted.

a. The composition, correction, and augmentation of these Essays stretched over a period of thirty years. They were commenced under Elizabeth, increased under James I., and assumed their final shape under Charles I. An Author rarely maintains one style for so long a period, let him write much or little. The ordinary changes and vicissitudes of private life tell on us all, and our expression brightens or beclouds, as our years wane. To this must be added the great toil, drive, and occupation of Bacon's public life: and the vast burden of the New Philosophy that constantly rested on his spirit. The marvel is that he ever found time to write the Essays at all.

b. Bacon tells us in Adv. of Learning. ii. fol. 20. Ed. 1605. that "In Philosophy, the contemplations of Man doe either penetrate vnto God, or are circumferred to Nature, or are reflected or reverted vpon himselfe. Out of which seuerall inquiries, there doe arise three knowledges, DIVINE PHILOSOPHY, NATURAL PHILOSOPHY, and HUMANE PHILOSOPHY OF HUMANITIE. For all things are marked and stamped with this triple Character of the power of God, the difference of Nature, and the vse of Man.' These Essays in their method and form are simply the turning of his system of investigating Nature vpon Humanity and Society.

c. The first ten Essays are not true Essays. They are severally a succes-

sion of the sharpest Aphorisms, each isolated from the other with a T, and otherwise independent. They are devoid of quotation, illustration, and almost of explanation: and appear like a series of oracular sentences.

b. When Bacon, after an interval of fifteen years, came to revise this First text, it was chiefly to expand, qualify, or illustrate it. The additions of absolute new thought are not numerous. But in the second and further revision of 1625, he almost doubled these earliest Essays in length.

e. A striking change in the writing meets us as we come to his second Essay. Of Friendship, at p. 163, which is the first specimen herein of the final style of 1625. That Essay represents Bacon's last manner, and all the other Essays, in their successive alterations, do but more or less approximate to it. The Essay is now a methodical Discourse, generally under two or three heads. It usually begins with a quotation or an apothegm. It teems with allusions and quotations, with anecdote and repartee: and altogether is a very brilliant piece of writing. Still, however, it is a succession of distinct points, rather than a ramble round one topic.

Thus, much as to the ripening and enrichment of the style, may suffice.

6. Bacon addressed these Counsels, more perhaps than any other of his writings, immediately and directly to his Contem-Think who these included. We cannot stop to poraries. enumerate them. From Burleigh to Selden, from Spenfer to Milton, they comprised the brightest and greatest intellects of It was the golden Age of our National History.

a Writing for his contemporaries, Bacon naturally appealed to phenomena as it was then accounted for. Indeed, he was in this respect somewhat behind the times: for Archbishop Whately asserts [Essays. p. xiv. Ed. 1856], that he appears to have rejected the discoveries of Copernicus and Galileo: and it is certainly noteworthy how cautiously he refers to the celestial Primum Mobile, leaving it an open question. And so generally: Bacon's argument or counsel is often felicitously true, when the fact adduced in its conclusive proof is now known to be false. As for instance, 'ashes are more generative than dust,' p. 249, that 'out of question' (Astronomy was decidedly his weak point, as human life and character was his strong one) Comets affect 'the grosse and masse of Things,' p. 571. His adducing, as evidence worthy to be considered, the preposterous assertion of an Astrologer, p. 569; and the like.

b. The Essays are an excellent Land Mark in the Constitutional History of England. It helps us towards an understanding of the political system under which our country was ruled under the two first Stuarts, and which but for the Long Parliament, would certainly have drifted on, until England had been made like France came to be under Lous XIV. and his successor. It is startling to hear him so constantly talk of the entire State, as the King's Estate, as a nobleman's park might be; it is curious, in a book dedicated to the reigning Favorite, to hear his defence of Favorites, p. 227, and also to mark his instructions, how the King was to suck the brains of his Counsellors, and then palm all off as his own, p. 317; to note his denounciation of Cabinet Councils, p. 319, (a name since applied to a different kind of assembly;) to see him thinking so late as 1625, that there was little danger to a King, from the Commons, and not much danger from the Gentry. A 202. He from the Commons, and not much danger from the Gentry, p. 307. He seems not to have conceived the possibility of the coming of the English Commonwealth. Thus these Counsels do reflect in many things the times in which they were written.

t. Again, many of these Essays should be read in connection with Macchiavelli's Discourses upon Livy's First Decade, which appears to have been a favourite political work with Bacon. The last one Of Vicissitudes of Things seems to have altogether suggested by Chap 5, Book 11, of that work, the title of which is, That the changes of Religion and Languages, together with the changes of floods and pestilence, abolish the memory of things.

7. There is however a large permanent element in these Essays? that will remain a monument 'more durable than brass':

applicable to all ages, because manhood alters not, and ever fresh

and sparkling as when first written.

a. An excellence that meets us at once is the subtle mastery of words, the singular beauty of the imagery and similitudes, just as he begins *The Advancement of Learning*. 'In the entrance to the former of these; to cleare the way, and as it were to *make silence*:' so among many others we have in this work, 'Imitation is a *globe* of precepts,' p. . 'Atheists will ever be talking of that their opinion, as if they *fainted* in it,' p. . And the like.

Great attention is to be paid to all his words, for their fulness

of meaning adds much to the pleasure of the Essays.

th. Consider the infinite variety of the thought. Nothing can give us a better idea of his powers, than to realize that Bacon's daily thought was just like these Essays, and his Apothegms. Dr. Rawley states with what celerity

he wrote I can testify.

t. The general depth of the thought. Some phrases seem to be a chapter in themselves. As quoting at random, to dash the first Table, against the second; And so to consider men as Christians, as we forget that they are men,' at p. 431, is a whole argument for toleration: his anatomy of a cunning and rotten man, at p. 105: his exquisite summary of our Saviour's miracles at p. 101: and so on ad infinitum.

Next comes the testimony of the book to Bacon's moral

a. It is contrary to human nature, that one in whose mind such thoughts as these coursed, year after year, only becoming more excellent as he grew older, could have been a bad man. Do men gather grapes of thorns? Be all the facts of his legal career what they may, and it is that section of his life mostly includes any discredit to him: (he was also a Philosopher, Historian, that Essayist, Politician, and what not?) the testimony of this one work, agreeing as it does with the tenour of all his other writings is irresistible, that in the general plan of his purposes and acts, he intended nothing less, nothing else than to be 'Partaker of God's Theater, and so likewise to be partaker of God's Rest, p. 183. Can we accuse one who so scathes Hypocrites and Imposters, Cunning and Self-wisdom, of having a corrupted and depraved nature? For strength of Moral Power, there is no greater work in the English language.

b. More than this, (it is notable also as a testimony to his character,) there runs right through all an unfeigned reverence for Holy Scripture, not only as a Revelation of Authority, but as itself the greatest written Wisdom. Not because it was so easy to quote, but because it was so fundamentably and everlasingly true, did this great Intellect search the Bible as a great storehouse of Civil and Moral, as well as Religious Truths, and so Bacon is another illustration, with Socrates, Plato, Dante, Shakespeare, Milton and others, that a deep religious feeling is a necessity to the very highest order of human mind. As he argues at p. 339, Man, when he resteth and assureth himselfe vpon divine Protection and Fauour, gathereth a Force and Faith; which Human Nature, in it selfe, could not obtaine.

8. We have glanced at the connection of this work with Bacon's life and pursuits. We have noticed the change of style perceivable in these Essays. We have touched upon their localism of time and place. We have noted one or two of their permanent constituents; and marked their testimony to Bacon's

Here most reluctantly we must leave off, ere we have hardly begun. One parting word. We rife from the study of this work with a higher reverence than ever for its Author; and with the certain conviction that the Name and Fame of Francis Bacon will ever increase and extend through successive ages.

CONTEMPORARY BIBLIOGRAPHY.

- . There is still so much uncertainty both as to the earlier and more recent editions of the Essays, &c.; that this and the next List must be considered purely tentative. There may be several editions not included in either.
- 1. 1597. London. 1 Vol. 12mo. Editio princeps: see title at p. 3, and sub-titles at pp. 96 and 135.
- 2. 1598. London. Essaies. Religious Meditations. Places of perswat. vol. 12mo. sion and disswasion. Seene and allowed. London. Printed for Humfrey Hooper, and are to bee solde at the blacke Beare in Chauncery lane. 1598.

 Col. Imprinted at London by Iohn Windet for Humfrey Hooper. 1598.
- 3. 1606. London. Same title as No. 2. Printed at London for Iohn 1 vol. 12mo. Iaggard, dwelling in Fleete streete at the hand and Starre neere Temple barre. 1606.
 - [1607-1612. Between these dates was transcribed Harl. MS. 5106, of which see title at p. 157.]
- 4. 1612. London. 1 vol. 12mo. Second and revised Text: see title at p. 420.
- 5. 1612. London. Same title as No. 2. Printed at London for Iohn 1 vol. 12mo. Iaggard, dwelling in Fleete-streete at the Hand and Starre, neere Temple barre. This edition was partially printed when the second text, No. 4, came out. The new Essays were therefore added at the end of this impression.
- 6. 1613. London. Same title as No. 2. Printed at London for Iohn Iaggard, dwelling at the Hand and Starre betweene the two Temple gates. 1613.
- 7. 1618. London. Saggi Morali and Della Sapienza degli Antichi.
 1 vol. 8vo. Trans. by Toby Matthew; whose dedication to Cosmo de
 Medici, Duke of Tuscany, is dated London, 3 July [1618.]
- 8. 1619. London. Essays Moraux. Translated by Sir Arthur Gorges. 1 vol. 8vo. Scutum inuincibile Fides. A Londres. Chez. Ican Bill.
- 9. 1621. Bracciano. Saggi Morali and Sapienza de gl'Antichi. Trans. 1 vol. 32mo. by Andrea Cioli, Secretary of State to the Grand Duke of Tuscany. Dedication signed by Pompilio Totti, 24 June 1621.
- 10. 1621. Paris. 1 vol. 8vo. Essays Politiques et Moraux. Trans. by I. BAUDOVIN.
- 11. 1624. London. The Essaies of Sr Francis Bacon Knight, the King's 1 vol. 8vo. Atturney Generall. His Religious Meditations. Places of Perswasion and Diswasion. Seene and allowed. Printed at London by I. D. for Elizabeth Iaggard, at the hand and Starre, neere the middle Temple-gate. 1624.
- 12. 1625. London. 1 vol. 4to. Final English Edition: see title at p. 497
 This is the first edition in quarto.
 - ... The editions printed for the Jaggard family, viz., Nos. 3, 5, 6, and 11, are considered spurious, and unauthorized.

On the next two pages is shown the order of the Essays in the editions published in Bacon's lifetime, and the Latin text of 1638. It will be seen that as the Essays grew, there were five different arrangements. The first includes 1, 2, and 3. The Second is that of *Harl. MS*. 5106. The Third comprises 4, 6, 8, and 11. The fourth 7, 9, and 10. The fifth is that of 12, and most subsequent Editions.

seems to have been sometimes overlooked by those who have written about

the Novum Organum.

The third part of the *Instauratio Magna* was to comprise an entire natural history, diligently and scrupulously collected from experience of every kind; including under that name of natural history every thing wherein the art of man has been employed on natural substances either for practice or experiment; no method of reasoning being sufficient to guide us to truth as to natural things, if they are not themselves clearly and exactly apprehended. It is unnecessary to observe that very little of this immense chart of nature could be traced by the hand of Bacon, or in his time. His Centuries of Natural History containing about one thousand observed facts and experiments, are a very slender contribution towards such a description of universal nature as he contemplated. These form no part of the *Instauratio Magna*, and had been compiled before [*This is contradictory to Dr. Rawley's statement on next page*]. But he enumerates one hundred and thirty particular histories which ought to be drawn up for this great work. A few of these he has given in a sort of skeleton, as samples rather of the method of collecting facts, than of the facts themselves; namely, the History of Winds, of Life and Death, of Density and Rarity, of Sound and Hearing.

and Death, of Density and Rarity, of Sound and Hearing.

The fourth part, called Scala Intellectus, is also wanting with the exception of a very few introductory pages. "By these tables," says Bacon, "we mean not such examples as we subjoin to the several rules of our method, but types and models, which place before our eyes the entire process of the mind in the discovery of truth, selecting various and remarkable instances." These he compares to the diagrams of geometry, by attending to which the

steps of the demonstration become perspicuous.

In a fifth part of the Instauratio Magna Bacon had designed to give a specimen of the new philosophy which he hoped to raise after a due use of his natural history and inductive method, by way of anticipation or sample of the whole. He calls it Prodomi, sive Anticipationes Philosophiae Secundae. And some fragments of this part are published by the names of Cogita et Visa, Cogitationes de Natura Rerum, Filum Labyrinthi, and a few more, being as much, in all probability, as he had reduced to writing. In his own metaphor, it was to be like the payment of interest, till the principal could be raised; tanquam fanus reddatur, donec sors haberi possit.

For he despaired of ever completing the work by a sixth and last portion, which was to display a perfect system of philosophy, deduced and confirmed by a legitimate, sober, and exact enquiry according to the method which he had invented and laid down. "To perfect this last part is above our powers and beyond our hopes. We may, as we trust, make no despicable beginnings, the destinies of the human race must complete it; in such a manner, perhaps, as men, looking only at the present, would not readily conceive. For upon this will depend not a speculative good, but all the fortunes of mankind and

all their power."

And with an eloquent prayer that his exertions may be rendered effectual to the attainment of truth and happiness, this introductory chapter of the *Instauratio*, which announces the distribution of its portions, concludes.

Such was the temple, of which Bacon saw in vision before him the stately front and decorated pediments, in all their breadth of light and harmony of proportion, while long vistas of receding columns and glimpses of internal splendour revealed a glory that it was not permitted to him to com-

prehend.

In the treatise De Augmentis Scientiarum and in the Novum Organum, we have less, no doubt, than Lord Bacon, under different conditions of life, might have achieved; he might have been more emphatically the high priest of nature, if he had not been the chancellor of James I.; but no one man could have filled up the vast outline which he alone, in that stage of the world, could have so boldly sketched.—Intro. to the Lit. of Europe, iii. 168-175, Ed. 1839.

Bacon did 'get help' in his Natural History from his chaplain, Dr. Rawley: and among the many writings of his 'writing time,' i.e. from his fall till his death, this work was completed. It was published after his decease under the title of 'Sylva Sylvarum: or A Naturall Historie, in ten Centuries,' London, 1627. fol., with the following dedication to Charles I.:--

May it please your most Excellent Majestie;

The whole Body of the Naturall Historie, either designed, or written, by the late Lo. Viscount S. Alban, was dedicated to your Maiestie, in his Booke De Ventis, about foure yeeres past, when your Maiestie was Prince: So as there needed no new Dedication of this Works, but only, in all humblenesse, to let your Maiestie know, it is yours. It is true, if that Lo. had lived, your Maiestie, ere long, had beene invoked, to the Protection of another Historie; Whereof, not Natures Kingdome, as in this, but these of your Maiesties, (during the Time and Raigne of King Henry the Eighth) had beene the Subject: Which since it died under the Designation meerely, there is nothing left, but your Maiesties Princely Goodnesse, graciously to accept of the Undertakers Heart, and Intentions; who was willing to have parted, for a while, with his Darling Philosophie, that hee might have attended your Royall Commandement, in that other Worke. Thus much I have beene bold, in all lowlinesse, to represent unto your Maiestie, as one haue beene bold, in all lowlinesse, to represent vnto your Maiestie, as one that was trusted with his Lordships Writings, euen to the last. And as this Worke affecteth the Stampe of your Maiesties Royall Protection, to make it more currant to the World, So vnder the Protection of this Worke, I presume in all humblenesse to approach your Maiesties presence; And to offer it vp into your Sacred Hands.

Your MAIESTIES most Loyal and Devoted Subject, W. RAWLEY.

After which Dr. Rawley gives the following Epistle to the Reader, which is the same, that should have been prefixed to this Booke, if his Lordship had lived.' Bacon was fingularly fortunate in having such a chaplain: and we are ever indebted to him for fuch a revelation, both of the spirit and method of the New Philosophy, as hereinafter follows:—

Having had the Honour to bee continually with my Lord, in compiling of this Worke; And to be employed therein; I have thought it not amisse (with his Lordships good leave and liking,) for the better satisfaction of those that shall reade it, to make knowne somewhat of his Lordships Intentions, touching the Ordering, and Publishing of the same. I have heard his Lordship often say; that if hee should have served the glory of his owne Name, hee had been better not to have published this Naturall History: For it may seeme an Indigested Heap of Particulars; and cannot have that Lustre, which Bookes cast into Methods have: But that he resolved to preferre the which Bookes cast into Methods haue; But that he resolued to preferre the good of Men, and that which might best secure it, before any thing that might have Relation to Himselfe. And hee knew well, that there was no other way open, to valoose Mens minds, being bound; and (as it were) Maleficiate, by the Charmes of deceiuing Notions, and Theories; and therby made Impotent for Generation of VVorkes: But onely no wher to depart from the Sense, and cleare experience; But to keepe close to it, especially in the beginning: Besides, this Naturall History was a Debt of his, being Designed and set downe for a third part of the Instauration. I have also heard his Lordship discourse, that Men (no doubt) will thinke many of the Experiments conteined in this Collection to be Vulgar or Trivall; Meane and Sordid; Curious and Freitlesse: and therefore he wishest that they would have remarked. and Fruitlesse; and therefore he wisheth, that they would have perpetually before their Eyes, what is now in doing; And the Difference betweene this Naturall History, and others. For those Naturall Histories, which are Extant, being gathered for Delight and Vse, are full of pleasant Descriptions

LATER BIBLIOGRAPHY.

BEING THE ISSUES, SUBSEQUENT TO LORD BACON'S DEATH.

For Contemporary Bibliography, see pp. xxxi-xxxii. * Editions not seen.

In the present Reprint, there are virtually Nine versions of the Five fol-

owing Texts, viz.:-(1.) The Essays or Counsels, &c. in English of 1597, 1598, 1607-12, and 1628; together with their translation into Latin, under the title of (2.) Sermones Fideles, sive Interiora Rerum 'SER. FID.) of 1638.

Also the (3.) Meditationes Sacra (MED. SACRA.) in Latin of 1597, and their English version '4.', Sacred Meditations (SAC. MED.) of 1598. Finally, the English text of (5.) The Colours of Good and Evil Cols. of G.

and E.)

By Text 1612, Text 1625, Text 1638, is intended that the general order of these Editions has been followed: not any guarantee as to the fidelity of the re-impression. In this case, as in so many other instances, many errors have silently crept into some of the later editions: no punishment having yet been invented sufficient to daunt Editors from intentional falsification by unmarked addition or omission in what they put forth as the writings of other men.

I. AS A SEPARATE PUBLICATION.

A. Essays alone.

English.

42. 1798. London. Essays, Moral, Economical, and Political. An absurd impression of six copies only, in which a page of type smaller than this one is printed on a leaf z vol. 8vo. four times its height and five times its width.

London. Essays, Moral, Economical, Political. **445**. 1812.

r vol. 8vo.

50. 1825. London. 1 vol. 12mo. Essays, Moral, Economical, and Political. Essays, Moral, Economical, and Political.

The | 7 vol. 32mo. smallest edition as yet printed.

Bacon's Essays; with annotations by RICHARD 64. 1856. London.

1 vol. 8vo. WHATELY, D.D., Archbishop of Dublin.

Bacon's Antitheta are placed after each corresponding Essay, and the footnotes consist of illustrative quotations showing the meaning of words. The annotations swell showing the meaning of words. The annotations swell the book to over 500 large pages and are good reading but too diffuse for purposes of study.

London. 1 vol. 8vo. Second edition of No. 64.

London. 1 vol. 8vo. Third edition of No. 64.

68. 1857. **69**. 1858.

London. 1 vol. 8vo. Fourth edition of No. 64. **70**. 1858. London. z vol. 8vo. Fifth edition of No. 64. **71**. 1860.

London. 1 vol. 8vo. Sixth edition of No. 64. **75**. 1864.

Essays or Counsels, Civil and Moral. **78.** 1868. Ed. by S. W. London. 1 vol. 160. SINGER. A reprint of No. 67, without Wisdom of the Ancients.

Latin. (Sermones Fideles, &c.)

21. 1641. Lug. Bat. Sermones Fideles, sive Interiora Rerum. [Leyden] 1 vol. 12mo. early foreign Latin editions have Cols, of Good and Evil, with other pieces, at the end.

22. 1644. Lug. Bat. [Leyden.] Sermones Fideles, sive Interiora Rerum. 1 vol. 12mo.

23. 1662. Amsterdam. Sermones Fideles, Ethlici, Politici, Œconomici. 1 vol. 12mo. Graesse.

*29. 1685. Amsterdam. Sermones Fideles, Ethici, Politici, Œconomici. 1 vol. 12mo. Graesse.

Retranslations from the Latin.

on. Lord Bacon's Essays, or Counsels Moral and Civil. Translated from the Latin by WILLIAM WILLYMOTT, LL.D., who thus apologises for his publication:
"Wanting an English Book for my Scholars to Trans-33. 1720. London. 2 vols. 8vo.

late, which might improve them in Sense and Latin at once. (Two Things which should never be divided in Teaching) I thought nothing more proper for that Purpose than Bacon's Essays, provided the English, which is in some places grown obsolete, were a little reformed, and made more fashionable (!).'

The work mainly consists of the Essays, but there are added to it some passages translated from De Augmentis

Scientiarum.

A.E.

•:-

5.

_; ...

Ed

Thi

HARD

dirg

tions 1

strell eg but i

S. W. .

The f Gara

41. 1787. London. The Essays. A reprint of No. 33. 2 vols. 8vo.

Etalian.

*18. 1639. Venice. 1 vol. 12mo. Opere Morali. Graesse.

> **B.** Sacred Meditations alone. No edition published.

C. Colours of Good and Evil alone. No edition published.

II. WITH ONE OR TWO OTHER WORKS BY LORD BACON.

A. Essays with Sacred Meditations only. No edition published.

B. Essays with Colours of Good and Evil only.

English.

13. 1629. London. The Essayes or Covnsels, Civil and Morall, of Francis 1 vol. 4to. Lo. Verulam, Viscovnt St. Alban. Newly enlarged. Lon-

don, Printed by Iohn Haviland, and are sold by R. Allott. on. The Essayes or Covnsels, Civill and Morall, of Francis Lo. Vervlam, Viscovnt St. Alban. Newly enlarged. London, Printed by Iohn Haviland, in the little old Bayley. 1632. 14. 1632. London. 1 vol. 4to.

The Essayes or Covnsels, Civill and Morall, of Francis 19. 1639. London. Lo. Verulam, Viscovnt St. Alban. With a Table of the 1 vol. 4to. Colours, or Apparances of Good and Evill, and their Degrees, as places of Perswasion, and Disswasion, and their several Fallaxes, and the Elenches of them. Newly enlarged. London: Printed by Iohn Beale, 1639.

62. 1853. London. The Essays or Counsels, Civil and Moral, with a Table 1 vol. 8vo. of the Colours of Good and Evil. Ed. by T. MARKBY, M.A. 71. 1862. London. Bacon's Essays and Colours of Good and Evil. Ed. 1 vol. 8vo. by W. A. WRIGHT, M.A. [Text 1625, with Text 1597 in an Appendix.] A most excellent edition: the briefest but most erudite of notes, which will facilitate the labours of all future editors, and to which I gratefully acknowledge my own indebtedness.

LATER BIBLIOGRAPHY. xxxvi

Second edition of No. 71. Third edition of No. 71. **74**. 1863. London. 1 vol. 8vo. **76.** 1865. London. r vol. 8vo. London. 1 vol. 8vo. Fourth edition of No. 71. 77. 1867.

79. 1869. London. 1 vol. 8vo. Fifth edition of No. 71.

C. Essays with both Sacred Meditations and Colours of Good and Evil.

1634. London. The Essaies of S. Francis Bacon Knight, the King's 1 vol. 12mo. Atturney Generall [! The Ex-Lord Chancellor had been 15. 1634. London. now dead eight years.] His Religous Meditations. Places of Perswasion and Disswasion. Seene and allowed. Prin-

ted at London by I. D. for Elizabeth laggard, at the hand and starre neere the middle Temple-gate.

80. 1871. July 1. London 1 vol. 8vo. English Reprints. See title at p. i. We have been much surprised to find that the present Reprint—the only one in recent times containing all that Bacon himself separately published in connection with the Essays—should be the first re-impression of the Sacred Meditations —apart from any collection of his works since the above issue of 1634.

D. Essays with Wisdom of the Ancients.

English.

59. 1845. London. The Essays or Counsels, Civil and Moral, and Wisdom 1 vol. 8vo. of the Ancients. Ed. by Basil Montagu.

.65. 1857. [1856.] London. The Essays or Counsels, Civil and Moral, with the Wisdom of the Ancients. Ed. by S. W. SINGER, F.S.A. 1 vol. 8vo.

E. Essays with both Colours of Good and Evil and Wisdom of the Ancients.

English.

*24. 1664. London. 1 vol. Lowndes.
26. 1668. London. The Essays or Counsels, Civil and Moral, with The 1 vol. 12mo. Colours of Good and Evil and The Wisdom of the Ancients. Apparently a re-issue, with an altered date, of No. 24, as the Imprimatur is dated June 6, 1663.

27. 1669. London. A re-issue of the previous article with an altered date.

1 vol. 12mo.

30. 1691. London. The Essays or Counsels, Civil and Moral With a Table of the Colours of Good and Evil. Whereunto 1 vol. 8vo. is added The Wisdom of the Ancients. Enlarged by the Honourable Author himself, and now more Exactly Published.

82. 1701. London. A Reprint of No. 30.

1 vol. 8vo. 'To this edition is added the Character of Queen Elizabeth; never before Printed in English.' [This is an incorrect claim: it had already so appeared in 'Resuscitatio,' 1657.]

F. Essays, with The Advancement of Learning.

56. 1840. London. Essays with Advancement of Learning. With illus-I vol. 8vo. trations. Eng. Cat.

G. Essays, with the Apophthegmes.

48. 1819. London. Essays, Moral, Economical, and Political. 1 vol. 12mo.

H. Colours of Good and Evil, with other pieces.

French.

L'Artisan de la Fortune, &c. 20. 1640. Paris. Translated by I. BAUDOIN [? BAUDOVIN] Ses Sophismes ou les apparences 1 vol. 12mo. du Bien, et du Mal, occupy pp. 223-288.

44. 1802-3. London. The Miscellaneous Writings, &c. Vol. i. includes

2 vols. 8vo. Colours of Good and Evil.

III. WITH COLLECTIONS OF LORD BACON'S WORKS.

A. Partial Collections.

Latin.

17. 1638. London. Operum Moralium et Civilium . . . Tomus. Ed. 1 vol. fol. by RAWLEY, D.D. The standard Latin text. It contains only 56 Essays: Of Prophecies and Of Masques and Triumphs not being included in this Translation.

25. 1665 [1664] Frankfort. Opera Omnia, &c. Ed. by J. B. Schon-

z vol. fol. WETTER.

French.

16. 1637. Paris. Les Œuvres Morales et Politiques. Translated by I. BAUDOVIN. 56 Essays occupy pp. 1-332. Of Superstition and Of Religion are not translated. I vol. 8vo.

English.

84. 1723. London. The Philosophical Works of Francis Bacon. Me-3 vols. 4to. thodized and made English, from the Originals, by Peter SHAW, M.D. Supplement 11 contained in Vol. iii., pp. 63-164, consists of Interiora Rerum or Essays.

These are grouped into three classes, viz., Essays on Moral Subjects, on Œconomical Subjects, and on Political Subjects, and are stated to be "enrich'd by the Addition of several Pieces, originally written in LATIN, by the Author, and never translated into English." The reader will be surprised to find that these 'Pieces' are the 'Sacred Meditations,' already printed several times in English.

43. 1802. London. The Works, &c. Besides the 'Essays,' lix. 270, and 4 vols. 8vo. 'Cols. of Good and Evil,' ii. 90-15, this edition consists of a 'Miscellany of Lord Bacon's productions:' principally of a translation of the Novum Organum.

61. 1852. London. Bohn's Standard Library. The Moral and Historical vol. 8vo. Works of Lord Bacon. Ed. by Joseph Devey, M.A.

B. Complete Collections.

These began in 1730. Since then there have only been attempted until now Six distinct Texts of the collected Writings of the great Philosopher. Each of them has been a vast improvement upon what had gone before; until in the life-work of Mr Spedding and his coadjutors, we know Lord Bacon as our forefathers never did, and even better than his own contemporaries.

All these Collections are of course in Latin-English.

35. 1730. London. OPERA OMNIA, &c. Ed. by John Blackbourne. This is the first of what we may be termed the modern editions. It has the three dedications (1) to Anthony 4 vols. fol. Bacon, 1597; (2) to Sir John Constable, 1612; and (3) the

Duke of Buckingham, 1625. Text 1625. There are 60 Numbered Essays. The spurious Of a King being No.

14, and Of Fame, being No. 60.
Ess. occupy iii. 299-383. MED. SACRÆ ii. 396-403.
Cols. of G. and E. iii. 384-395. SAC. MED. and SER. FID. do not occur in this edition.

37. 1740. London. Works, &c. With several additional Pieces never before printed in any Edition of his Works. To which is 4 vols. fol. prefixed a new life of the author. [by DAVID MALLET.] The Second Collected Text. It was published by Subscription both in Small and Large Paper. It has the 3 Dedications: and embraces 60 unnumbered Essays. Text 1625, with Of a King and Of Fame in the same position as in previous edition.

> Ess. occupy iii. 299-383. Cols. of G. and E., iii. 384-393. Med. Sacræ, ii. 396-403. No SAC. MED. nor SER. FID.

38. 1753. London. Works, &c. A new edition. [Also edited by MALLET.] The Third Collected Text, and the last edition in folio. 3 vols. fol. 3 Deds. Text 1625. 58 numbered Essays: Of a King, and Of Fame are unnumbered at the end. Also Text 1638.

Ess. occupy i. 377-447. SER. FID. iii. 623-682. MED. SACRÆ. iii. 744-748. COLS. OF G. AND E. i. 365-375. No SAC. MED.

39. 1765. London. WORKS. [The English Part edited by Rev. JOHN 5 vols. 4to. Gambold; the Latin by W. Bowyer: Lowndes.] The Fourth Collected Text and the first in 4to. As this edition was the standard one for upwards of 60 years, it may be advisable to quote thus much from the Advertisement: Two Gentlemen, now deceased, Robert Stephens. Esq., Historiographer Royal, and John Locker, Esq., Fellow of the Society of Antiquaries, both of whom had made a particular Study of Lord Bacon's Writings, and a great Object of their Industry the correcting from original or authentic Manuscripts, and the earliest and best Editions, whatever of his Works had been already published, and adding to them such, as could be recovered, that had never seen the Light.

Mr. Stephens dying in November, 1732, his Papers came into the hands of Mr. Locker, whose Death, on the 30th of May 1760, prevented the World from enjoying the Fruits of his Labours, tho' he had actually finished his Correction of the fourth Volume of Mr. Blackburne's Edition, containing the Law-Tracts, Letters, &c. After his Decease his Collections, including those of Mr. Stephens's, were purchased by Dr. Birch, the use of which he is glad of this

Opportunity of giving to the Public."

3 Dedications, Text 1625. 58 Essays. Of a King, and Of Fame are at the end, unnumbered. Also Text 1638.

Ess. occupy i. 445-527. SER. FID. v. 347-432. MED.

SACRÆ. v. 525-531. Cols. of G. AND E. i. 435-444. The SAC. MED. do not occur.

40. 1778. London. THE WORKS, &c. A Re-issue of 1765 Edition, No. 5 vols. 4to. 39, and the last in 4to.
44. 1803. London. The Works, &c. A Reprint of 1765 Edition, No. 39.

10 vols. 8vo. The first Edition in Octavo.
47. 1819. London. The Works, &c. A Reprint of 1803 Edition, No.

10 vols. 8vo. 44, which is a Reprint of 1765. No. 39.
49. 1824. London. The Works, &c. A Reprint of 1803 Edition. So 10 vols. 8vo. that even so late as this, there was nothing more than the information and criticism of 1765.

51. 1825-36. London. THE WORKS. &c. With a new life. Ed. by BASIL 17 vols. 8vo. MONTAGUE.

This is the Fifth Collected Text in the sequence of time, and is the one which Lord Macaulay reviewed in the

Edinburgh Review of July 1837. 55. 1838. London. Works both English and Latin. Graesse.

2 vols. 8vo.

57. 1842. Philadelphia. 3 vols. 8vo. A Reprint of No. 51. 67. 1857-1862. London. The Works, &c.

67. 1857-1862. London. The Works, &c.
7 vols. 8vo. Ed. by James Spedding, R. L. Ellis, D. D. Heath.

The Sixth Collected Text, and by far the most complete edition in existence. A work that is an honour to our

generation. Mr. Spedding is now writing Lord Bacon's Life and Letters' as a complement to this edition.

Latin.

*28. 1684. Amsterdam. 6 vols. 12mo. Opera Omnia. Graesse. Tres

sor de Livres rares et précieux. Ed. 1859.

*31. 1695. Amsterdam. 6 vols. 12mo. Opera Omnia. Graesse.

*36. 1730. Amsterdam. 7 vols. 12mo. Opera Omnia. Graesse.

French.

*53. 1835. Paris. Œuvres. Ed. by N. Bouillet and Garnier.
54. 1836. Paris. Panthéon Littéraire. Œuvres, &c. Ed. by J. P. A.
1 vol. 8vo. Buchon. 57 Essays of Text 1625.

Portuguese.

*? 1731. London. Obras Philosophicas Trans. By JAC. CASTRO DE SARMENTO. 3 vols. 4to.

v. issues with works of other writers.

A. With Locke's 'Conduct of the Understanding.'

46. 1813. London. British Classics. The Conduct of the Understanding vol. 12mo. with Essays Moral, Economical, and Political.

58. 1844. New York. Harper's Family Library. Essays, Moral, 1 vol. 12mo. Economical, and Political, &c., with John Locke's Conduct of the Understanding. With an Introductory Essay by A. Potter, D.D.

72. [1862.] Edinburgh. Bacon's Essays and Locke's Conduct of the Un-

z vol. 8vo. derstanding.

B. With other Writings.

62. 1853. London. The Universal Library. Division V. vol. i. contains The Essays. Text 1625. 8vo.

VI. IN EXTRACTS, SELECTIONS, &C., OF LORD BACON'S WORKS.

English.

73. [1863.] London. The Wisdom of the Fathers. Selections, from the Writings of Lord Bacon. 26 of the Essays are printed in 1 vol. 8vo. this work.

Merican.

52. 1832. Mexico. Pensamientos Folosóficos. Extracts from 26 of the Essays translated by J. M. FORNEL. I vol. 4to.

LIST OF TEXTS OF ESSAYS FORMING THIS HARMONY.

TEXT I. 1597. Editio princeps: see title at p. 3.

TEXT II. 1598. Second edition.

Same contents as Text I. The variations are trifling, chiefly typographical.

Harleian MS. 5106: see title p. 157. TEXT III. 1607-12.

Mr. Spedding states that "the earliest evidence of additions and alterations which I have met with, is contained in a volume preserved among the Harleian MSS. in the British Museum, No. 5106; a volume undoubtedly authentic, for it contains interlineations in Bacon's own hand; and transcribed some time between 1607, when Bacon became Solicitor-general, and 1612, when he brought out a new edition of the Essays with further additions and altera-

tions."—Works. vi. 535, Ed. 1858.

With the view of ensuring a perfectly accurate reprint, my friend Charles Trice Martin, Esq., B.A., of the Public Record Office has kindly corrected

this text with the original MS.

Second Revised Text: see title at p. 419. TEXT IV. 1612.

This edition is distinguished by great absence of capital letters. It almost reads like a modern book. It does not include Of Honour and Reputation, already printed in Texts I. and II., or Of Seditions and Troubles, which had been begun in Text III.

TEXT V. 1625. Final English Edition: see title at p. 497.

This impression is disfigured by a perfect eruption of capital letters, and is often cut up into almost inch lengths with commas. It contains all the 40 Essays of the three previous Texts, together with 18 new ones. Minute differences in spelling exist between different copies of this Edition. The Museum copy here reprinted has the Press-mark 721. e. o.

Ed. by Dr. TEXT VI. 1638. Posthumous Latin Edition. Rawley. Operum Civilium et Moralium Tomus.

However the omission in this Text of two of the Essays, Of. Prophecies and Of Masques and Triumphs may be accounted for: it is clear that when Bacon penned his dedication to Buckingham, see p. 498, this Latin version was virtually completed. "My Historie of the Seventh (which I have now Also translated into Latin)" with Dr. Rawley's express statement at p. xiv, and its inclusion by him in the text of Bacon's true works at the end of Resuscitatio, sufficiently prove this. Lord Bacon seems to have thought that the English editions would all perish; but that the 'Latine Volume' would 'last as long as Books last.' It is therefore to be looked upon as the final expression of his mind, his last appeal to future ages."

It has been customary to look upon Text V. as the standard one; and to regard all variations from it in this version as so many mistranslations and the like. To some extent this may be true; and Text V. is no doubt the main one: but Bacon—as he once more, and this time, with some sense of finality—went over the Essays, added and varied incessantly. Mr. Martin has noted and translated all the important variations in the fifty-six Essays common to the two editions; and these, amounting to over 1900 in number, have been incorporated in the footnotes of this edition.

These last touches throw a flood of light upon the meaning of the Essays, and endue each page with a separate interest, special to itself. Bacon strove after the briefest expression possible to him, and freely used the strongest English idiom of his day: so that while his contemporaries saw more than they read; posterity does not attain, with equal facility, to his full meaning. He had also great delight in imagery and metaphors, and sometimes used English words of Latin derivation in their original Latin sense, as if he often thought in that language, as 'obnoxious' for 'deferential' (obnoxus) and the like. In the translation, the equivalents for the English idiom or the imagery had of course been given literally: and thus, the superlative value of this Text consists in its preserving in a dead and unvarying language. Basen's authorized equivalents of the fluctuating English of his time guage, Bacon's authorized equivalents of the fluctuating English of his time.

Nor is this all, the variations include additions, omissions, and vital alterations that could not have been made without Bacon's own sanction. The guarantee of this—apart from the intrinsic mind in them—is Dr. Rawley's

faithfulness.

AHARMONY

OF THE

FIRST GROUP

OF

TEN.

ESSAYS.

- I. OF STUDY.
- 2. OF DISCOURSE.
- 3. OF CEREMONIES AND RESPECTS.
- 4. OF FOLLOWERS AND FRIENDS.
- 5. OF SUITORS.

- 6. OF EXPENSE...
- 7. Of REGIMENT OF HEALTH.
- 8. Of Honour and Reputation.
- 9. OF FACTION.
- 10. OF NEGOTIATING.

First Published in 1597.

COLLATED WITH SUBSEQUENT VERSIONS.

• • 1 1

Essayes.

Religious Meditations.

Places of perfwasion and disswasion.

Seene and allowed.

At London,
Printed for Humfrey Hooper, and are
to be fold at the blacke Beare
in Chauncery Lane.

1 5 9 7.

To M. Anthony Bacon his deare Brother.

ng and beloued Brother, I doe re like some that have an Orcharde neighbored, that gather their fruit ore it is ripe, to prevent stealing. se fragments of my conceites were ug to print; To labour the staie of n had bin troublesome, and subject aterpretation; to let them passe had

beene to aduenture the wrong they mought receive by vntrue Coppies, or by fome garnishment, which it mought please any that should set them forth to bestow vpon Therefore I helde it best discreation to publish them my felfe as they paffed long agoe from my pen, without any further difgrace, then the weaknesse of the And as I did euer hold, there mought be as great a vanitie in retiring and withdrawing mens conceites (except they bee of fome nature) from the world, as in obtruding them: So in these particulars I have played my felfe the Inquisitor, and find nothing to my vnderstanding in them contrarie or infectious to the state of Religion, or manners, but rather (as I suppose) medicinable. Only I disliked now to put them out because they will bee like the late new halfe-pence, which though the Siluer were good, yet the peeces were fmall. But fince they would not flay with their Master, but would needes trauaile abroade, I haue preferred them to you that are next my felfe, Dedicating them, fuch as they are, to our loue, in the depth whereof (I affure you) I fometimes wish your infirmities translated vopon my felfe, that her Maiestie mought haue the feruice of fo active and able a mind, and I mought be with excuse confined to these contemplations and Studies for which I am fittest, so commend I you to the prefernation of the divine Maiestie. From my Chamber at Graies Inne this 30. of Ianuarie. 1597.

Your entire Louing brother. Fran. Bacon.

No variations in Text II.



The Table.

I	FT	ruth.	•	•	•	Pag	ge 1	[499]
	2	Of.	Death.	•	•	•	6	[383]
	3	Ŏf	Vnitie	in Re	digion.	•	10	[423]
	4	Of.	Revens	re.	•	•	19	[502]
5	Of Adversiti	e.	•	•	•	•	22	[504]
6	Of Simulation	m an	d Difs	imula	tion.	•	25	[506]
7	Of Parents a	and C	hildre	n.	•	•	32	[273]
8	Of Marriage	_			•	•	36	[265]
9	Of Enuie.	•	•	•	•	•	40	[511]
10	Of Loue.	•	•	•	•	•	50	[445]
II	Of Great Pl	ace.	•	•	•	•	54	[279]
12	Of Boldnesse	•	•	•	•	•	62	[518]
13	Of Goodnesse	, ana	l Good	nesse a	of Nati	ure.	66	[199]
14	Of Nobilitie.	-	•	•	•	•	72	[189]
15	Of Seditions	and	Troubl	es.	•	•	76	[391]
16	Of Atheisme.	•	•	•	•	•	90	[331]
17	Of Superstiti	on.	•	•	•	•	96	[343]
18	Of Trauaile.	•	•	•	•	•	100	[521]
19	Of Empire.	•	•	•	•	•	105	[295]
20	Of Counfell.	•	•	•	•	•	115	[311]
2 I	Of Delaies.		•	•	•	•	125	[524]
22	Of Cunning.	•	•	•	•	•	127	[435]
23	Of Wisdome	for a	a Man	s Self	e.	•	135	[183]
24	Of Innovation	ms.	•	•	•	•	139	[526]
25	Of Dispatch.	•	•	•	•	•	142	
26	Of Seeming			•	•	•	146	[215]
27	Of Frendship		•	•	•	•	149	[161]
28	Of Expence.	•	•	•	•	•	164	[51]
	-		_					

The Table.

29	Of the true Greatnesse of I	Kingdomes	
	and Estates		167 [469]
30	Of Regiment of Health		187 57
31	Of Suspicion	• •	191 [528]
32	Of Discourse	•	194 15
33	Of Plantations	• •	198 [530]
34	Of Riches	• •	205 231
35	Of Prophecies	• •	212 [535]
36	Of Ambition	• •	218 [223]
37	Of Maskes and Triumphs.	• •	223 [539]
38	Of Nature in Men	• •	227 [359]
39	Of Custome and Education.	•	231 [367]
40	Of Fortune		235 [375]
4 I	Of V fury	• •	239 [541]
42	Of Youth and Age	• •	247 [257]
43	Of Beautie	• •	251 [209]
44	Of Deformitie	• •	254 [252]
45	Of Building	• •	257 [547]
46	Of Gardens	• •	266 [555]
47	Of Negotiating	•	280 [87]
48	Of Followers and Frends.		284 [33]
49	Of Sutours	• •	288 [41]
50	Of Studies	• •	292 [7]
5 I	Of Faction	• •	296 [77]
52	Of Ceremonies and Respects.	•	300 [25]
53	Of Praise	• •	304 [351]
54	Of Vain-Glory	• •	308 [463]
55	Of Honour and Reputation.	• •	312 [67]
56	Of Iulicature	• •	316 [451]
57	Of Anger	• •	325 [565]
58	Of Vicissitude of Things	• •	329 [569]
			
	Of Fame, a fragment	• •	[579]

I. & II.

1597-8.

æt. 37·38.

Essaies.*

- 1. Of studie.
- 2. Of discourse.
- 3. Of Ceremonies and respects.
- 4. Of followers and friends.
- 5. Sutors.+
- 6. Of expence.
- 7. Of Regiment of health.
- 8. Of Honour and reputation.
 - 9. Of Faction.
- 10. Of Negociating.

^{*} In the 1598 Edition, the Contents precede 'The Epistle Dedicatorie. † Of Sutors, in 1598 Edition.

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

For variations of II., see footnotes.

[1.] Of Studies.



Tudies ferue for pastimes. for ornaments and for abilities.

Their chiefe vse for pafpriuatenes is in and retiring; for ornamente is in discourse, and for abilitie is in judgement.

For expert men can execute,

but learned men are fittest to judge or censure.

them too much for ornament is affectation: to make iudgement wholly by their rules. the is humour of a Scholler.

They perfect Nature, and perfected by experience.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106. 11. Of Studies.



Tudies ferve for Pastymes, for Ornamentes, and for Abilityes.

Theire cheif vse for Pastyme Privatenes is in and retyreing; for Ornament is in Discourse, and for Abillity is in Iudgement.

For expert Men cann execute,

but learned Men are fittest to iudge, or censure.

To fpend too much time To fpend too much tyme in them is flouth, to vse in them is Sloth, to vse them too much for ornament, is affectacion, to make Iudgment wholly by theire rules, humor of a S[c]holler.

> They perfect Nature, and are perfected by Experience.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ TITLE. De Studiis, et Lectione Librorum, 'of studies and the reading of books.'

² Studies. Studia, et Lectiones Librorum, 'studies and the reading of books.

Delight. Meditationum Voluptati, 'for delight in meditation.'
Cornament. Orationis Ornamento, 'ornament of discourse.'
Ability. Negotiorum Subsidio, 'assistance in business.'

IV. æt. 52. 1612.

29. Of Studies.



Tudies ferue for Delight, for Ornament, and Ability; for

their chiefe vse for delight, is, in privatnesse, and retiring; for ornament, is in discourse, and for abilitie, is in judgement.

For expert men can execute,

but learned men are fittest to iudge or censure.

make iudgement wholly by their rules, is the humour of a Scholer.

They perfect Nature, and are perfected by Experience.

1625. æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

50. Gf Studies.1



Tudies² ferue for Delight,³ for Ornament,4 and for Ability.⁵

Their Chiefe Vse for Delight, is in Priuatenesse and Retiring; For Ornament, is in Discourse;6 And for Ability, is in the Iudgement and Disposition of Businesse. For Expert Men can Execute, and perhaps Iudge of particulars,7 one by one; But the generall Counsels, and the Plots, and Marshalling of Affaires, come best from those that are Learned.

To fpend too much time To fpend too much Time in them, is Sloth; to vse in Studies, is Sloth⁸; To vse them too much for orna- them too much for Ornament, is affectation; to ment, is Affectation,; To make Iudgement wholly by their Rules is the Humour of a Scholler.¹⁰

They perfect Nature, and are perfected by Experience:

⁶ Discourse. In Sermone tam Familiari, quam Solenni, 'in discourse

both friendly and formal.'
Iudge of particulars. In specialibus, judicio non malo utuntur, 'and in particulars use no bad judgment.'

Sloth. Speciosa quadam Socordia, 'a kind of plausible sloth.'

Affectation. Affectatio mera est, qua seipsam prodit; 'is mere affectation which between itself'. tion which betrays itself.'

¹⁰ Humour of a Scholler. Scholam omnino sapit, nec bene succedit. 'savours altogether of the school, and does not succeed well.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. | III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

T Craftie men contime* them, simple men admire them, † wise men vse them:

For they teach not their owne vse, but that is a wise-dome without them: and aboue them wonne by obferuation.

T Reade not to contradict, nor to belieue,

but to waigh and confider.

That is, fome bookes are to be read only in partes; others to be read, but curforily, and fome few to be read wholly and with diligence and attention.

Craftie Men contemne them; simple Men admire them, and wise men vse them:

Ffor they teach not theire owne vse, but that is a wisedome without them, and above them won by observacion.

Reade not to contradict, nor to be-

but to weighe and Consider.

Some bookes are to be tasted, others to be swallowed, and some few to be chewed and digested; That is, some bookes are to be reade onely in partes, others to be read but not curiously, and some few to be read wholly, and with dilligence, and attencion.

^{*} contemne, in 1598 edition.

[†] and, added in 1598 edition.

¹¹ Vse them. Quantum par est, 'as much as is right.'
12 Confute. Disputationum Praisis concertandi; 'engage in battles of discussion.'

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

contemne men them, fimple men admire them, and wife men vie them.

For they teach not their owne vse, but that is a wifdome without them, and aboue them, wonne by obferuation.

Read not to contradict, nor to beleeue,

but to weigh and confider.

Some bookes are to bee tasted, others to bee swallowed, and fome few to be chewed and digested. That is, fome bookes are to be read only in parts; other to bee read, but not curiously; and some few to bee read wholly, and with diligence, and attention.

1625. æt. 65.

For Naturall Abilities, are like Naturall Plants, that need Proyning by Study: Studies themselues, $\mathbf{A}\mathbf{n}\mathbf{d}$ doe giue forth Directions too much at Large, except they be bounded in by experience.

Crafty Men Contemne Studies; Simple Men Admire them; and Wife Men Vse them:11

For they teach not their owne Vse; But that is a Wisdome without them, and aboue them, won by Obferuation.

Reade not to Contradict, and Confute; 12 Nor to Beleeue and Take for granted; Nor to Finde Talke and Discourse; But to weigh and Consider. 13

Some Bookes are to Tasted, Others to be Swallowed,14 and Some Few to be Chewed and Digested: That is, some Bookes are to be read onely in Parts; Others to be read but not Curioufly; 15 And fome Few to be read wholly, and with Diligence and Attention.

¹⁸ Weigh and Consider. Ut addiscas, ponderes, et judicio tuo aliquatenus utaris, 'to learn, weigh, and use your judgment somewhat.'

14 Swallowed. Deglutire, cursimque legere, 'swallowed and read rapidly.'

15 Curiously. Non multum temporis, in iisdem evolvendis, insumendum, 'but not much time to be spent in turning them over.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

T Reading maketh a full man, conference a readye man, and writing an exacteman. And therefore if a man write little, he had neede haue a great memorie, if he conferre little, he had neede haue a prefent wit,* and if he reade little, he had neede haue much cunning, to feeme to know that he doth not.

Thistories make men wife, Poets wittie: the Mathematickes subtle, naturall Phylosophie deepe: Morall graue, Logicke and Rhetoricke able to contend.

₹

Reading maketh a full Man, conference a ready Man, and Writing an exact Man. And therefore if a Man write litle, he had neede have a great memorie; if he conferre litle, he had neede haue a prefent witt, and if hee reade litle, hee had neede have much Cunning to feeme to knowe that he doth not.

Histories make men wise, Poetts wittie, the Mathematicks subtile, Naturall Philosophie deepe, Morall grave, Logick and Rhetoricke able to contend.



^{*} if he confer little, have a present wit, in 1598 edition.

16 Flashy. Insipidi, 'tasteless.'

¹⁷ Full man. Copiosum et bene instructum, 'full and well informed.'
18 Conference. Disputationes et Colloquia, 'discussions and conference.'

¹⁹ Ready. Promptum et facilem, 'ready and fluent.'
20 Writing. Scriptio autem, et Notarum Collectio, 'writing, and the col-

lection of notes.'

21 Exact Man. Perlecta in animo imprimit, et altius figit, 'prints what is read on the mind and fixes it deeper."

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

Reading maketh a ful man, Conference a ready man, and writing an exact man. And therefore if a man write little, hee had neede haue a great memory; if he confer little, hee had neede haue a present wit, and if he read little. hee had neede haue much cunning, to feeme to know that hee doth not.

Histories make men wise, Poets wittie, the Mathematickes subtill, Naturall Philosophie deepe, Morall graue, Logicke and Rethoricke able to contend. Abeunt studia in mores.

1625. æt. 65.

Some Bookes also may be read by Deputy, and Extracts made of them by Others: But that would be. onely in the leffe important Arguments, and the Meaner Sort of Bookes: else distilled Bookes, are like Common distilled Waters. Flashy¹⁶ things.

Reading maketh man;¹⁷Conference¹⁸aReady¹⁹ Man; And Writing²⁰ an Exact 21 Man. And therefore, If a Man Write little,²² he had need haue a Great memory; If he Conferre little, he had need haue a Present Wit: And if he Reade litle. he had need haue much Cunning, to feeme to know that, he doth not.

Histories make men Wife; Poets Witty; The Mathematicks Subtill; Naturall Philosophy deepe; Morall Graue; Logick and Rhetorick Able to Contend.23 ²⁴ Abeunt studia in Mores.a Nay, thear is no stond or Nay there is no Stond 25 or

[&]quot;Manners are changed through studies." Ovid, Her. xv. 83. Bacon's own paraphrase is, "Studies have an influence and operation vpon the manners of those that are conversant in them." Adv. of L. Bk. I. p. 13, Ed. 1605.

In notando, segnis sit, aut fastidiosus, 'is slothful or Write little. averse to taking notes.

Able to Contend. Pugnacem, et ad Contentiones alacrem, pugnacious and ready for contention.'
24 (Ut ait ille,) 'as he says.'

²⁵ Stond. Omitted in the Latin.

HARMONY OF THE ESSAYS. 12

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

²⁶ Impediment. Impedimentum aliquod insitum, aut naturale, 'any im-

planted or natural impediment.'

27 To beat ouer Matters. Ad Transcursus Ingenii segnis sit, 'slow in the motion of his mind to and fro.'

28 Call vp. Accersere, et arripere dextre, 'call up and skilfully lay hold of.'

29 Special Receit. Ex Literis, Medicinas proprias comparare sibi possint, 'may obtain special medicines from literature.'

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

impediment in the wit, but may be wrought out by fit studies: like as diseases of the body may have appropriate exercises. Bowling is good for the Stone and Raines; Shooting for the longs and breast; gentle walking for the stomacke; riding for the head; and the like. So if a mans wit be wandring, let him study the Mathematiks;

if his wit be not apt to diftinguish, or find difference, let him study the Schoolemen;

if it bee not apt to beat ouer matters and to find out refemblances,

let him

study Lawyers cases. So euerie desect of the mind may have a speciall receit.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Impediment²⁶ in the Wit, but may be wrought out by Fit Studies: Like as Diseases of the Body, may have Appropriate Exercises. Bowling is good for the Stone and Reines; Shooting for the Lungs and Breast; Gentle Walking for the Stomacke; Riding for the Head; And the like. So if a Mans Wit be Wandring, let him Study the Mathematicks; For in Demonstrations, if his Wit be called away neuer fo little, he must begin again: If his Wit be not Apt to diftinguish or find differences. let him Study the Schoolemen; For they are Cymini sectores.a

If he be not Apt to beat ouer Matters,²⁷ and to call vp²⁸ one Thing, to Proue and Illustrate another, let him Study the Lawyers Cafes: So every Defect of the Minde, may have a Speciall Receit.²⁹





[&]quot;Antoninus Pius . . . was called Cymini Sector, a caruer, or divider of Comine seede, which is one of the least seedes: such patience hee had and setled spirite, to enter into the least and most exact differences of causes." Advancement of Learning. Bk. I. p. 35, Ed. 1605.

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. For variations of II., see footnotes. [2.] Of Piscourse.



Ome in their difcourfe desire rather commendation of wit in

being able to holde all arguments, then of iudgement in difcerning what is true, as if it were a praise to know what might be faid, and not what shoulde bee thought. Some haue certaine Common places and Theames wherein they are good, and want varietie, which kinde of pouertie is for the most part tedious, and nowe and then

The honourablest part of talke, is to guide* the occasion, and againe to moderate and passe to fomewhat elfe.

ridiculous.

¶ It is good

varie and mixe | to to present fpeech the of

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106,

12. Of Biscourse.



Ome in theire difdesier courfe rather Commendacion of witt, in

beingable to hould all argumentes, then of Iudgement in difcerning what is true, as if it were a praise to knowewhat might be faied, and not what should be thought. Some have certaine Commonplaces, and theames wherein they are good and want variety; which kinde of povertie is for the most part tedious, and now, and then

ridiculous.

The honorableft kind of Talke, is to give the occasion, and againe to moderate, and passe fomewhat els:

It is good

varie. and mixe fpeach of the presente occasion with argument, occasion with of Argument, tales with reasons, asking Tales, with reasons, asking of questions, with telling of Questions, with telling of opinions, and iest with of opinions, and ieste with

a giue, in 1508 edition.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ TITLE. De Discursu Sermonum, 'of the discourse of speech.'

IV. æt. 52. 1612.

19. Of Biscourse.



Ome in their difcourfe defire rather commendation of wit, in

beeing able to holde all arguments, then of iudgement in discerning what is true; as if it were a praise to know what might be faid, and not what should be thought. Some haue certaine common places, and theames wherein they are good, and want variety: which kind of pouerty is for the most part tedious, and now and then

ridiculous.

honorablest kind of talke, is to give the occasion, and againe to moderate and passe to somewhat else.

It is good

varie and mixe to present of the occasion with argument: tales with reasons; asking V. 1625. æt. 65. British Museum Copy.

32. Of **B**iscourse. 1



Ome in their Difcourfe, rather Commendation of Wit, in

being able to hold all Arguments, then of Iudgment, in difcerning what is True: As if it were a Praise, to know² what might be Said, and not what should be Thought. Some haue certaine Common Places, and Theames, wherein they are good,3 and want Variety:4 Which kinde of Pouerty is for the most part Tedious, and when it is once perceiued Ridiculous.

The Honourablest of Talke, is to giue the Occasion; And againe to Moderate and passe fomewhat else; For then a Man leads the Daunce.

It is good, in Difcourfe, and Speech of Conversation, to vary, and entermingle Speech, of the present Occasion with Arguments; Tales with Reasons, Asking of questions, with telling of Questions, with telling of opinions: and iest with of Opinions; and Iest with

² Know. Invenire, 'to discover.'
³ Are good. Luxuriantur, 'are fertile.'
⁴ Want Variety. Catera steriles et jejuni, 'otherwise barren and meagre.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. earnest.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. earnest.

¶ But fome thinges are priviledged from iest,

But fomethinges priuiledged from ieste,

namely Religion, matters of state, great persons, any mans present businesse of importance, and any cafe that deserueth pittie.

namely Religion, Matters of State, great Persons, any mans presente businesse of importance, and anie case that deserveth pittye;

THe that questioneth much shall learne much, and content much, specially if hee tent much, specially if he applie his questions to the apply his questions to the

He that questioneth much shall learne much, and con-

For it is a dull Thing, &c. Satietatem siquidem et Fastidium parit, in aliquo Subjecto diutius hærere, 'for to stick to any subject too long produces satiety and digust.'

IV. 1612. æt. 52. earnest.

But fome things are priviledged from iest,

namely religion, matters of State, great persons, any mans present businesse of importance, and any case that deserueth pitty;

and generally men ought to finde the difference betweene faltnesse and bitternesse. Certainly he that hath a Satyricall vaine, as he maketh others asraid of his wit, so he had need be afraid of others memory. He that questioneth much shall learne much, and content much: specially if he applie his questions to the

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Earnest: For it is a dull Thing to Tire, and, as we say now, to Iade, any Thing too farre.⁵

As for Iest, there be certaine Things, which ought to be priviledged from it; Namely Religion, Matters of State, Great Persons, Any Mans present Businesse of Importance, And any Cafe that deserueth Pitty. Yet there be some, that thinke their Wits haue asleepe; Except they dart out somewhat, that is Piquant, and to the Quicke:6 That is a Vaine, which would be brideled;

Parce Puer stimulis, et fortiùs vtere Loris.a

And generally, Men ought to finde the difference, between Saltnesse and Bitternesse. Certainly, he that hath a Satyricall vaine, as he maketh others asraid of his Wit, so he had need be afraid of others Memory. He that questioneth much, shall learne much, and content much; But especially, if heapplyhis Questions, to the

^a Spare, boy, the whip and tighter hold the reins. Ovid, Met. ii. 127.

Dart . . . Quicke: Acutum aliquem et mordacem Sarcasmum in quempiam contorserint, 'they dart out at some one some sharp and biting sarcasm.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. skill of the person of whome he asketh, for he shal give them occasion to please themselues in speaking, and himfelfe shall continually gather knowledge.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. skill of the person of whom he asketh; for he shall give please them occasion to themselues in speaking, and himfelf shall contynually gather knoweledge.

T If you dissemble sometimes your knowledge of that you are thought to you shall bee knowe. thought another time to know that you know not. ¶ Speech of a mans felfe is not good often,

If you dissemble sometymes your knowledge of that you are thought to knowe, **shalbe** you thought another tyme to knowe that you know not. Speache of a Mans felfe is not good often,

show his knowledge.'

⁷ Skill of the Persons, whom he asketh. Ad captum et peritiam Respondentis, 'to the understanding and skill of the answerer.'

8 To please themselues in Speaking. Scientiam suam ostentandi, 'to

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

heasketh: For he shall give them occasion to please speaking, themselues in and himselfe shal continually gather knowledge.

If you dissemble sometimes your knowledge of that you are thought to know, you **shall** thought an other time to know that you know not. Speech of a mans felfe is not good often,

1625. æt. 65.

skill of the persons of whom | Skill of the Persons, whom he asketh: Forhe shall give them occasion, to please themselues in Speaking,8 and himselfe shall continuallygather Knowledge. But let his Questions, not be troublesome; For that is fit for a Poser. And let him be fure, to leave other Mentheir Turnes to speak.9 Nay, if there be any, that would raigne, and take vp all the time, let him finde meanes to take them off, and to bring Others on; As Musicians vse to doe, with those, that dance too long Galliards.

If you dissemble sometimes your knowledge, of that you are thought to know; you fhall thought another time, to know that, you know not. Speach of a Mans Selfe ought to be feldome, and well chosen. I knew One, was wont to fay, in Scorne; He must needs be a Wise Man, he speakes so much of

Let him be sure, to leaue . . . to speak. Etiam qui Sermonis Familiaris Dignitatem tueri cupit, aliis vices loquendi relinquat, 'also he who wishes to preserve the dignity of friendly conversation, should leave other men their turns to speak.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. and there is but one case, wherin a man may commend himselfe with good grace, and that is in commending vertue in another, especially if it be such a vertue, as whereunto himselfe pretendeth.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. and there is but one case wherein a Man may commend himself with good grace, and that is in commending vertue in another, especially if it be such a vertue, as wherevnto himfelf pretendeth:

T Discretion of speech is Disscretion of speach is more then eloquence, and more then Eloquence, and to speake agreably to him, to speake agreably to him,

¹⁰ But one Case. Vix occurrit Casus aliquis,

^{&#}x27;there scarcely occurs any case . . . but one.'

11 Speech of Touch. Sermo alios pungens et vellicans, 'speech which stings or twits others.'

12 Field. Campi aperti, in quo spatiari licet; Non viæ Regiæ, quæ deducit

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

and there is but one case wherin a man may commend himselse with good grace, and that is in commending vertue in another, especially, is it bee such a vertue, as whereunto himselse pretendeth. Speech of touch toward others, should bee sparingly vsed; for discourse ought to bee as a field, without comming home to any man.

Discretion of speech is more than eloquence; and to speake agreeably to him

V. 1625. æt. 65.

And there is but one Cafe, 10 wherein a Man may Commend Himselfe, with good Grace; And that is in commending Vertue in Another; Especially, if it be such a Vertue, whereunto Himfelfe pretendeth. Speech of Touch¹¹ towards Others, should be sparingly vsed: For Difcourfe ought to be as a Field, 12 without comming home to any Man. two Noble-men, of the West Part of England; Whereof the one was given to Scoffe, but kept euer RoyalCheere in his House: The other, would aske of those, that had beene at the Others Table; Tell truely, was there neuer a Flout or drie Blow 18 giuen; To which the Guest would answer; Such and fuch a Thing paffed: The Lord would fay; 14 I thought would marre a good Dinner. 15

Difcretion of Speech, is more then Eloquence; And to speak agreeably to him,

Domure, 'an open field in which a man may ramble, not the King's highway which leads home.'

18 Drie blow. Omitted in the Latin.

15 Good Dinner. Prandium bonum malis Condimentis, 'a good dinner, with bad sauces.'

¹⁴ The Lord would say. At ille, utpote alterius Æmulus, 'to which he, as the other's rival.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. with whome we deale is more then to speake in good wordes or in good order.

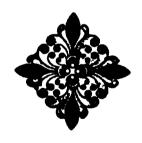
¶ A good continued speech without a good speech of interlocution sheweth flownesse: and a good reply or fecond speech, without a good set speech sheweth shallownesse and weaknes, as wee fee in beaftes that those that are weakest in the course are yet nimblest in the turne.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. with whom wee deale, is more then to speake in good wordes, or in good order.

A good continued Speache without a good speach of interlocucion sheweth flownes; and a good Reply or fecond speach, without a good setled speach sheweth shallownes, and Weakenes, as wee fee in beastes, that those that are Weakest in the course are yet nimblest in the tourne.

To vse too many circum- To vse too manie circumstances ere one come to stances, ere one come to the matter is wearisome, the matter is wearisome, to vse none at all is blunt. to vse none att all is blunte.





16 Shallownesse and Weaknesse. Penuriam, et Scientiam minime fundatam, 'poverty and knowledge ill founded.'

æt. 52. | V. IV. 1612.

with whom wee deale, is more then to speake in good words, or in good order.

A good continued speech without a good speech of interlocution, sheweth flownesse: and a good reply, or fecond fpeech, without a good fetled speach, sheweth shallownesse and weakenesse: as we see in beasts, that those that are weakest in the course, are yet nimblest in the turne.

stances ere one come to

1625. æt. 65.

with whom we deale, is more then to speake in good Words, or in good Order.

A good continued Speech, without a good Speech Interlocution, shews Slownesse: And a Good Reply, or Second Speech, without a good Setled Speech, sheweth Shallownesse and Weaknesse. 16 As we see in Beafts that those that are Weakest in the Course, are yet Nimblest in the Turne: As it is betwixt the Grey-hound, and the Hare.

To vie too many circum- To vie 17 too many Circumstances, ere one come to the matter, is wearisome; the Matter, is Wearisome; to vse none at all, is blunt. To vse none at all, is Blunt. 18





¹⁷ Vsc. Orationem vestire, 'to clothe a speech with.' Blunt. Abruptum quiddam est, et ingratum, 'is blunt and disagree

as

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. For variations of II., see footnotes. [8.] Of Ceremonies and Respectes.



that is onely reall had need haue exceeding great parts of

vertue, as the stone had neede bee rich that is fet without foyle. T But commonly it is in praise

it is in gaine. For as the prouerbe is true, That light gaines make heauie Purses: Because they come thicke, whereas great come but now and then, so it is as true that fmal matters winne great because | commendation: they are continually in vse | they are contynually in vse, and in note, whereas the occasion of any great vertue commeth but on holy-daies.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106.

Of Ceremonies and 10. Respects.



Ee that is onely reall had neede have exceeding great partes of

vertue, as the Stone had neede to be riche that is fett without foyle. commonly it is in praise

as it is in gaine; For as the Proverbe istrue, light gaines That heauie purses; Because they come thicke, whereas great come, but now, and then; fo it is as true, that fmale matters wynn great commendation, and in note, Whereas the occasion of anie great vercometh but tue holie dayes.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

Rich. E purissimis et nitidissimis, 'most pure and bright.' Commendation of Men. Omitted in the Latin.
 Gettings. Omitted in the Latin.

De Caremoniis Civilibus et Decoro, of civil ceremonies and ¹ TITLE. propriety.

Virtutes, 'virtues.' Matters.

IV. æt. 52. 1612.

30. Of Ceremonies and Respects.



Ee that is onely reall, had need haue exceeding great parts of

vertue: as the stone had neede to be rich that is fet without foile. But commonly it is in praise,

as gaine: it is in For as the prouerbe is true, That light gaines make heavie purses, commendation, because they are continually in vse, and in note. Whereas the tue, commeth but on holie daies.

1625. æt. 65. British Museum Copy.

52. Of Ceremonies and Respects.1



E that is only Reall, had need haue Exceeding great Parts of Vertue:

As the Stone had need to be Rich,2 that is fet without Foile. But if a Man marke it well, it is in praise and Commendation of Men,³ as it is in Gettings 4 and Gaines: For the Prouerbe is true. That light Gaines because heavy Purses; For light they come thicke, whereas | Gaines come thick, whereas great come, but now and Great come but now and then: fo it is true, that then. So it is true, that fmall matters winne great Small Matters⁵ win great Commendation, because they are continually in Vse, and in note:6 whereas the occasion of any great ver- Occasion of any great Vertue,7 commeth but Festivals.8 Therefore it doth much adde, to a Mans Reputation, and is, (as Queene Isabella faid) Like perpetuail Letters Commendatory, to haue good 10 Formes.

Great Vertue. Virtutus alicujus magna exercenda, 'of exercising any great virtue.

In Vse and in note. Quia perpetuus earum usus est; Tum in observationem Hominum incurrunt: because their use is continual, and they meet the observation of men.

Festivals. Raro admodum obtingit, 'happens but rarely.'
Isabella. Regina Castiliana, 'Queen of Castile.'
Good. Discretis et decoris, 'discreet and proper.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

To attaine good formes, it sufficeth not-to-despise them, for so shal a man observe them in others and let him trust himselfe with the rest: for if he care

to expresse them hee shall leese their grace, which is to be naturall and vnassected. Some mens behaviour is like a verse wherein every sillable is measured. How can a man comprehend great matters that breaketh his minde too much to small observations?

T Not to vse Ceremonies at all, is to teach others not to vse them againe, and so diminish his respect;

be not to bee omitted to flraungers and flrange natures.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

To attaine good Fourmes, it sufficeth not to dispise them, for so shall a Man observe them in others, and lett him trust himself with the rest; For if he care

to expresse them, hee shall leese their grace, which is to be naturall and vnasfected. Some mens behaviour is like a verse wherein every Syllable is measured. How can a Man comprehend great matters, that breaketh his minde too much to smale observacions?

Not to vse Ceremonies at all is to teach others not to vse them againe, and to diminisheth respect,

especially they be not to be omitted to Straungers and formall Natures.

¹¹ Behaulour. Vultus, et Gestus, et Externa alia, 'look, carriage, and other externals.'

IV. 1612. æt. 52. V.

To attaine good formes, it sufficeth not to despise them: For so shal a man observe them in others: And let him trust himselse with the rest. For if he care

to expresse them, hee shall lose their grace, which is to be naturall and vnassected. Some mens behausour is like a verse wherein every sillable is measured; how can a man compreshend great matters, that breaketh his mind to much to small observations?

Not to vse Ceremonies at al, is to teach others not to vse them againe; and so diminisheth respect:

bee not to be omitted to strangers, and formall natures.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

To Attaine them, it almost fufficeth, not to despife them: For fo shall a Man observe them in Others: And let him trust himselfe with therest. For if he Labourtoo much to Expresse them, he shall lose their Grace; Which is to be Naturall and Vnaffected. Some Mens Behauiour,11 is like a Verse, wherein euery Syllable is Measured: How can a man comprehend great Matters, that breaketh his Minde too much to fmall Observations?

Not to vse Ceremonies at all, is to teach Others not to vse them againe; And fo diminisheth Respect¹² to himselfe: Especially they be not to be omitted to and Strangers, Formall Natures: But the Dwelling vpon them, and Exalting them about the Moone, 18 is not only Tedious, but doth Diminish the Faith and Credit of him that fpeakes. And certainly, there is a Kinde, of Conueying of Effectuall and Imprinting Passages, amongst

Diminisheth Respect. Teipsum facies viliorem, 'make yourself cheaper.'
Exalting them aboue the Moone. Locutio plane Hyperbolica, 'speech which is clearly extravagant.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

¶ Amongst a mans Peires | Amongest a Mans Peeres a man shall be fure of familiaritie, and therefore it is a good title to keepe state; amongst* a mans **shall** inferiours one be l fure of reuerence, and therefore it is good a little to be familiar.

T Hee that is too much in | any thing, fo that he giue an other occasion of fatietie, maketh himselfe cheape.

To applie ones felfe to with demonstration that a man doth it vpon regard, and not vpon facilitie.

¶ It is a good precept feconding generally in another: yet to adde fomeyou will graunt his opinion, you will graunt his opinion, let it be with some distinc- lett it be with some distinction, if you wil follow his tion, if you will followe his

a man shall be suer of familiarity, and therefore it is good a litle to keepe state; amongest a Mans inferiours one shall be fuer of Reverence, and therefore it is good a litle to be familiar.

He that is too much in anie thing, foe that he giveth another occasion of fatietie, maketh himfelf cheape.

To apply ones felf to others is good, fo it be others is good, foe it be with demonstracion that a man doth it vponn regard, and not vponn facility.

It good is a precept feconding generally in another; yet to add fomewhat of ones owne; as if what of ones owne; as if

^{*} amonge, in 1598 edition.

¹⁴ Kind of conveying, &c. Est proculdubio Modus, artificiosæ cujusdum Insinuationis, in Verbis ipsis, inter Formulas communes, qui Homines revera inescat, et mirifice afficit, 'there is certainly a kind of cunning insinuation in the words themselves, among common compliments, which indeed allures men, and is of wonderful effect.'

15 Hit vpon it. Ejus viam calleat, 'knows the way of it.'

V. æt. 52. 1612.

imongst a mans Peeres, man shall be fure of faailiarity; and therefore it good a little to keep late: amongst a mans nferiours one fhal be ire of Reuerence; and therefore it is good a little to bee familiar.

Hee that is too much in any thing, fo that hee gueth another occasion of fatietie, maketh himself cheap.

To apply ones felfe to others is good; so it be with demonstration that a man doth it vpon regard, and not vpon facility.

It is a good precept, feconding | generally in another, Yet to adde some-

1625.

Complements, which is of Singular vse,14 if a Man can hit vpon it.¹⁵

Amongst a Mans Peeres, a Man shall be fure of Familiaritie; And therefore, it is good a little to keepe State.16 Amongst a Mans Inferiours, one shall be fure of Reuerence; And therefore it is good a little to be Familiar. 17

He that is too much in any Thing,18 fo that he giueth another Occasion of Sacietie, maketh himfelfe cheape.

To apply Ones Selfe to others, is good; So it be with Demonstration, that a Man doth it vpon Regard, 19 And not vpon Facilitie.

good Precept, It is a generally Seconding in Another, yet to adde fomewhat of ones owne; as if what of Ones Owne: As if you will grant his opinion, you will grant his Opinion, let it be with some distinc- let it be with some Distinction, if you will follow his tion; If you will follow his

16 Keepe State. Reprime te paululum, et dignitatem tuam, 'repress your-

self a little and keep your dignity.'

17 Be Familiar. Benigne te gerere, et cum Familiaritate quadam, non incongruum est, 'to bear yourself kindly and with a certain familiarity is not unsuitable.

¹⁸ In any Thing. In Sermone aliquo aut re, 'in any discourse or thing.'
19 Regard. Comitate et Urbanitate, 'courtesy and politeness.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. motion, let it be with con- mocion, lett it be with condition; if you allow his counsell, let it be with alleadging further reason.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. dicion, if you allowe his Counsaile, lett it be with alleadginge further reason.





Alleging further Reason. Novi alicujus Argumenti pondus addas, propter quod in Partes ejus transire videaris, 'add the weight of some new reason, on account of which you seem to take his part.'

21 Men had need beware. Cavendum imprimis, ne Magister in Cæremoniis et Formulis habearis: Id enim si fiet, utcunque Virtute vera emineas,

æt. 52. | V. IV. 1612.

they neuer fo fufficient otherwife. their enuiers will bee fure to give them respects, or to be curious in obseruing times and oportunities. Salomon faith He that confidereth the wind shall not sowe, and hee that looketh to the clowdes, shall not reape. A wife man will make more opportunities then he findes.



1625. æt. 65.

motion; let it be with con- Motion, let it be with Condition; if you allow his dition; If you allow his counsell, let it be with al- Counsell, let it be with Alleging further reason. ledging further Reason.20 Men had neede beware Men had need beware,21 how they be too perfit in how they be too Perfect in complements. For be Complements; For be they neuer fo Sufficient otherwife, their Enuiers will be fure to giue them that attribute to the dif- that Attribute, to the Difaduantage of their greater aduantage of their greater vertue. It is losse also in Vertues. It is losse also in businesse to be too full of businesse, to be too full of Respects, or to be too Curious in Obseruing Times and Opportunities. Salomon faith; He that considereth the wind, shall not Sow, and he that looketh to the Clouds, shall not reape. A wife Man will make more Opportunities then he findes.

> Mens Behauiour should be like their Apparell, not too Strait, or point Deuice, but free for Exercise or Motion.



Affectator, 'you must beware first of all of being considered a master of ceremonies and compliments, for if so, however eminent you are in true worth, you will be called by your enviers, to the detriment of your name, only polite and complete and contains. only polite and zealous.

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. No variations in Text II.

14.1 Of followers and friends.



Oftly followers are not to be liked, least while a man maketh his traine

longer, hee make his wings shorter, I reckon to be costly not them alone which charge the purse, but which are wearysome and importune in futes. Ordinary following ought to challenge no higher conditions then countenance, recomendation and protection from wrong.

¶ Factious followers are worse to be liked, which follow not vpon affection to him with whome they raunge themselues, but vpon discontentment conceiued against some other, whereupon commonly infueth that ill intelligence that we many times fee between great personages.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106.

14. Of followers and freinds.



Offlie followers are not to be liked, least while a Man maketh his traine

longer, he make his wings fhorter; I reckon costlie not them alone which charge the purse, but which are wearyfome and ymportune in fuites. Ordinarie Followers ought to challenge noe higher condicions, then countenance, recommendacion and proteccion from wronges.

Ffactious Followers worse to be liked, which followenotyponn affection to him with whom they range themselves, vponn discontentment conceived against some other; Wherevponn commonlyenfueth, that ill intelligence, that wee many tymes fee betweene great parsonages.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

Wings Shorter. Ne dum quis Caudæ pennas adauget, Alarum pennas

¹ TITLE. De Clientibus, Famulis, et Amicis. 'Of followers, servans,

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

32. Of Followers and friends.



Offly followers are not to bee liked, lest while a man maketh histraine

longer, he make his wings shorter. I reckon to bee costly, not them alone which charge the purse, but which are wearisome and importune in suits. Ordinarie sollowers ought to challenge no higher conditions then countenance, recommendation, and protection from wrongs.

Factious fellowes are worfe to bee liked, which follow not vpon affection to him with whom they range themselues, but vpon discontentment conceiued against some other. Whereupon commonly ensuch, that ill intelligence, that we many times see beetweene great personages. Likewise glorious followers

V. 1625. æt. 65.
British Museum Copy.

48. Of followers and frends.1



Oftly Followers are not to be liked; Lest while a Man maketh his Traine

Longer, hee make his Wings Shorter.² I reckon to bee Costly, not them alone, which charge the Purse, but which are Wearisome and Importune in Sutes. Ordinary Followers ought to challenge no Higher Conditions, then Countenance, Recommendation, and Protection from Wrongs.

Factions Followers³ worse to be liked, which Follow not vpon Affection to him, with whom they Themselues, range vpon Discontentment Conceiued against some Other: Whereupon Commonly enfueth, that Ill Intelligence, that we many times fee betweene Great Personages. LikewiseGlorious Followers. who make themselues as Trumpets, of the Commendation of those they Follow,

Prescindat, 'lest while a man increases the feathers of his tail, he cuts off the feathers of his wings.'

Factious Followers. Clientes autem et Amici factiosi adhuc magis vitandi, 'factious followers and friends are the more to be avoided.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. | III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

The following by certaine States answereable to that which a great person himselfe professeth, as of Souldiers to him that hath beene imployed in the warres, and the like hath euer beene a thing ciuile, and well taken euen in Monarchies, so it be without too much pompe or popularitie.

F But the most honorable kind of following is to bee followed, as one that apprehendeth to advance vertue and desert in all fortes

The followeing by certaine States, aunswerable to that which a great person himself professeth, as of Souldiers to him that hath beene ymployed in the warres, and the like hath ever beene a thing Civill, and well taken even in Monarchies, so it be without too much pompe, or popularitye.

But the most honorable kind of following is to be followed, as one that apprehendeth to advance vertue and defert in all fortes of persons; and

⁴ Honour from a Man. Si quis vere rem reputet, 'if one consider the thing truly.'

In great Fauour. Apud Dominos suos, sæpenumero in summo pretio habentur, 'are often held in great esteem by their masters.'

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

are full of inconveniency; for they teint businesse through want of fecrecy, and they export honor from a man and make him a returne in enuv.

The following by certaine States, answerable to that which a great person himselse professeth, as of Souldiers to him that hath beene imploid in warres, and the like, hath euer beene a thing ciuill, and will taken euen in Monarchies fo it be without too much pompe or popularity.

But the most honourable kind of following, is to be followed, as one that apprehendeth to aduance fort persons.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

are full of Inconvenience; For they taint Businesse through Want of Secrecie, And they Export Honour from a Man,4 and make him a Returne in Enuie. There is a Kinde of Followers likewife, which are Dangerous, being indeed Espials; which enquire the Secrets of the House, and beare Tales of them to Others. Yet fuch Men, many times, are in great Fauour;5 For they are Officious, And Commonly Exchange Tales.

The Following by certaine Estates of Men, answerable to that, which a Great Person himselse professeth, (as of Soldiers to him that hath been Employed in the Warres, and the like,) hath euer beene a Thing Ciuill,6 and well taken euen in Monarchies; So it be without too much Pompe or Popularitie.

But the most Honourable Kinde of Following, is to be Followed, as one that apprehendeth, to aduance vertue and desart in all, Vertue and Desert, in all And Sorts of Persons.7

Ciuill. Decora, 'honourable.'

⁷ All Sorts of Persons. Ut quis Patronum se profiteatur eorum qui Virtute et Meritis clarent, cujuscunque Ordinis sint, vel Conditionis, 'to profess one's self a patron of those who are remarkable for worth or desert, of whatever order or condition.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. vet where there is no eminent oddes fuffiin ciencie, it is better to take with the more passable, then with the more able.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. yet where there is noe eminent oddes in ciency, it is better take with the more passable, then with the more able.

In government it is good to vse men of one rancke equally, for, to countenancesome extraordinarily, is to make them infolente, and the rest discontent, because they may claime a due. But in fauours to vse men with much difference and election is good, for it maketh the persons preferred more thankefull, and the rest more officious, because all is of fauour.

¶ It is good not to make too much of any man first, because one holde out cannot that proportion.

To be gouerned by one is not good,

In government it is good to vfe men of one rancke equally, For to countenance some extraordinarily, is to make them infolent, and the rest discontent, because they may claime a due. But in favours to vie them with much difference, and eleccion is good, For it maketh the persons preferred more thankfull, and the rest more officious. because all is of favour. It is good not to make too much of anie Man at the first, because one hold out cannott proporcion. To be governed

by one is not good,

⁸ To take with. Patrocinari, 'to patronize.'
9 Actiue. Industrii et satagentes, 'industrious and active.'
10 Claime a Due. Quandoquidem Ordinis Paritas æquas Gratiæ Conditiones, tanquam ex debito, poscit, 'because the equality of rank demands as a due, equal conditions of favour.'
11 Because all is of Fauour. Neque ex hoc merito conqueratur quispiam.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. vet where there is no eminent oddes in fufficiency, it is better to take with the more passable, then with the more able.

In gouernment it is good to vie men of one rancke equally: For to countenancesome extraordinarily, is to make them infolent, and the rest discontent; because they may claime a due. in fauour to vie men with much difference and election, is good; For it make[t]h the persons preferred more thankfull, and the rest more officiou[s]; because all is of fauour. It is good not to make to much of any man at the first, because one cannot hold out that! proportion. To bee gouerned

by one is not good,

1625. yet, where there is Eminent Oddes in Sufficiencie, it is better take with8 the more Passable, then with the more And besides, Truth, fpeake | in Base Times, Actiue's Men are of more vie, then It is true, that tuous. in Gouernment, it is Good to vse Men of one Rancke equally: for to countenance fome extraordinarily, is to make them Infolent, and therest Discontent; Because they may claime a Due. 10 But contrariwise in Fauour, to vse Men with much Differenceand Election, is Good; For it maketh the Persons Preferred more Thankfull, and the Restmore officious; Because all is of Fauour.¹¹ It is good Discretion, not to make too much of any Man at the first; Because One Cannot hold out Proportion.¹² To be gouerned¹³ (as we call

it) by One, is not fafe, For

cum omnia ex gratia, non ex debito prodeant. 'nor can any one deservedly complain of this, because all is of favour, not of due.'

12 Proportion. Nam quæ tractu temporis sequentur, vix istis initiis respondere possunt, 'for what will follow in the course of time, can scarcely answer to your beginning.'

18 Gouerned. Fingi et regi, 'to be moulded and governed.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

and to be distracted with many is worfe;

but to take aduise of

friends is euer honorable: For lookers on many times fee more then gamesters, And the vale best discouereth the hill.

There is little friendship in the worlde, and least of all betweene equals, which was wont to bee magnified. That that is, is betweene fuperiour and inferiour, whose fortunes may comprehend the one the other.

and to be distracted with manie is worfe;

but to take advise of

frendes is ever honorable. For lookers on manie tymes see more, than gamesters, and the vale best discouereth the hill.

There is litle frendshipp in the world, and least of all betweene equalls which was wont to be magnified. That that is, is betweene Superiour and inferiour, whose fortunes may comprehend the one the other.





¹⁴ Speake ill. Omitted in the Latin.
15 Talke more boldly of. Amicum illum nostrum Contumeliis afficere non verebuntur; 'will not fear to attach contumely to our friend.'

¹⁶ Distracted. .Plurium potestati subjici, et veluti in partes distrahi, to be under the power of several, and as it were distracted.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

31. Of Sutors.



Anie ill matters | are vndertaken, and

many good matters with ill mindes.

Some embrace fuits which deale neuer meane to effectually in them, but if they fee there may be life in the matter by some other meane, they will be content to winne a thanke, or take a fecond reward, or at least to make vse in the meane time of the Sutors hopes.

Some take hold of fuits! occasion only for an to crosse some other, or to make an Information whereof they could not otherwise haue apt pre- otherwise haue

1625. æt. 65. British Museum Copy.

49. Of Sutours.



Any ill Matters and Projects are vndertaken; And Private Sutes doe

Putrifie the Publique Good. Many Good Matters are vndertaken with Bad Mindes; I meane not onely Corrupt Mindes; but Craftie Mindes, that intend not Performance.

Some embrace 1 Sutes, which to deale neuer meane effectually in them; But if they fee, there may be life in the Matter,2 by fome other meane, they will be content to winne3 a Thanke, or take a Second Reward, or at least to make Vse, in the meane time, of the Sutours Hopes.4

Some take hold of Sutes, onely for an Occasion, to Crosse some other;5 Or to make an Information, whereof they could apt

Life in the Matter. Rem aliorum conatu successuram, 'that the matter will succeed by the endeavour of others.'

Be content to winne. Aucupabuntur, 'will try to catch.'
Hopes. Spes dum Negotium vertitur, 'hopes while the business is

Some other. Negotiis aliorum, quæ simul tractantur, 'the business of others, which is being treated at the same time.'

1597-8. æt. 37-8. I. & II. cept,* without care what become of the Sute, when that turne is ferued.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. text, without care what become of the fuite, when that tourne is ferved.

Nay fome vndertake Sutes with a full purpose to let them fall, to the ende to gratifie the aduerse partie or competitor.

¶ Surely there is in forte a right in euerie Sute, either a right of equitie, if it be a Sute of controuersie; or a right of desert, if it bee a Sute of petition. If affection leade a man to fauor the wrong fide in iustice, let him rather vse his countenance to compound the matter then to carrie it. If affection lead a man to fauour the lesse worthy in desert, let him doe it, without difabling depraying or the better deferuer.

¶ In Sutes a man doth not well vnderstand, it is not well vnderstand, it is

Nay fome vndertake fuites with a full purpose to lett them fall, to the end to gratifie the adverse partye or Competitour.

Suerly there is in forte a right in every fuite, either a right of Equity if it be a fuite of Controversie, or a right desert, if it be a suite of peticion. If affection lead a man to favour the wrong fide in Iustice, lett him rather vse his countenance to compound the matter, then to carrie it. If affeccion leade a Man to favour the leffe worthie in defert, lett him doe it, without depraying, or disabling the better deserver.

In Suites a Man

Comitatur omnem Petitionem, 'accompanies every In euery Sute.

^{*} pretext, in 1598 Edition.

Entertainment. Pontem sternant, 'to lay a bridge.'
In some sort. Si quis rem ritè perpendat, 'if a man weigh the matter rightly.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

and to bee distracted with many, is worse;

but to take aduise of some few friends, is ever honourable, For lookers on many times see more then gamesters, and the vale best discovereth the hill.

There is little friendship in the world, and least of all between equals, which was wont to bee magnified. That that is, is betweene Superiour and Inferiour, whose fortunes may comprehend the one the other.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

it shewes Softnesse, and gives a Freedome to Scandall and Disreputation: For those that would not Censure, or Speakeill¹⁴ of a Man immediatly, will talke more boldly of ¹⁵ Those, that are so great with them, and thereby Wound their Honour. Yet to be Distracted¹⁶ with many is Worse; For it makes Men, to be of the Last Impression, and full of Change.

To take Aduice of some few Frends is ever Honourable¹⁷; For Lookerson, many times, see more then Gamesters; And the Vale¹⁸ best discovereth the Hill.

There is Little Friendship in the World, 19 and Least of all betweene Equals, which was wont to be Magnified. 20 That that is, is between Superiour and Inferiour, whose Fortunes may Comprehend, the One the Other.





¹⁷ Honourable. Honorabili sane et utile, 'really honourable and profitable.'

¹⁸ The Vale. (*Ut adagio dicitur*,) vallis, '(as is said in the adage) the vale.'

19 Little Friendship. Amicitia vera in Orbe, rara admodum, 'true friendship in the world is very rare.

Magnified. Apud Veteres, 'amongst the ancients.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. For Variations of 11., see footnotes. [5.] Of Sutes.*



Anie ill matters are vndertaken, and

many good matters with ill mindes.

Some embrace Sutes which deale neuer meane to effectually in them. if they fee there may be life in the matter by some other meane, they will be content to winne a thanke or take a fecond reward.

an occasion onely for

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106. 15. Of Sutors.



Anie ill matters are vndertaken, and

manie good matters with ill mindes.

Some embrace Suites which deale never meane to effectually in them. if they fee there may be life in the matter by fome other meane, they wilbe content to wynne a thanke, or take a fecond reward:

Some take holde of Sutes | Some take hold of suites onely for an occasion to crosse some other, or to crosse some other, or to make an information to make an Informacion, wherof they could not whereof they could not otherwise have an apt pre- otherwise have an apt pre-

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

1 Embrace. In manus suas recipiunt, et operam avide pollicentur, 'take suits into their hands and eagerly promise assistance.'

^{*} Of Sutors, in 1598 Edition.

IV. æt. 52. 1612.

text, without care what become of the fuite when that turne is ferued.

Nay, fome vndertake fuits with a full purpose to let them fall, to the end to gratifie the aduerse party or competitor.

Surely there is in fort a right in euery fuit; either a right of equity, if it be a fuit of controuersie or a right of defart, if it be a fuit of peti[ti]on. Ifaffection leade a man to fauor the wrong side in iustice, let him rather vse his countenance to compound the matter then to carry it. If affection leade a man to fauor the lesse worthy in desart, let him doe it without deprauing or difabling the better deserver.

In fuits a man doth | 1625. æt. 65.

text; without Care what become of the Sute, when that Turne is ferued: Or generally, to make other Mens Businesse, a Kinde of Entertainment, 6 to bring in their owne.

Nay, some vndertake Sutes, with a full Purpose, to let them fall; To the end, to gratifie the Aduerse Partie, or Competitour.

Surely, there is, in fome fort,7 a Right in euery Sute:8 Either a Right of Equity, if it be a Sute of Controuersie⁹; Or a Right of Desert, if it be a Sute of Petition.¹⁰ If Affection lead a Man, to fauour the Wrong Side in Iustice, let him rather vse his Countenance, to Compound the Matter, then to Carry it. If Affection lead a Man, to fauour the leffe Worthy in Defert,11 let him doe it without Deprauing or Difabling¹² the Better Deserver.

In Sutes, which a man doth [not] well vnderstand, it is not well vnderstand, it is

Controuersie. Justitiæ, 'justice.'

Petition. Gratiæ, 'favour.'

In Desert. Merentem, in causa Gratiæ, 'in desert, in a cause of favour.'

Deprauing or disabling. Abstineat saltem ab omni Calumnia et Maledicentia, 'let him abstain from all calumny and evil-speaking.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. good to referre them to fome friend of trust and iudgement, that may reporte whether he may deale in them with honor.

T Suters are so distasted with delaies and abuses, that plaine dealing in denying to deale in Sutes at first, and reporting the successe barely, and in challendging no more thankes then one hath deserued, is growen not onely honourable but also gracious. ¶ In Sutes of fauour the first comming ought to take little place, so far forth confideration may bee had of his trust, that if intelligence of the matter coulde not otherwise haue beene had but by him, aduantage be not taken of the note.

good to referre them to fome freind of trust and Iudgement, that may report whether he may deale in them with honour.

Suitors are fo distasted with delayes, and abuses, that plaine dealing in denying to deale in Suites at first, and reporting the successe barely, and in Challenging noe more thankes then one hath deferved, is growne not onely honorable but alfoe gracious. In fuites of favor the first commeing ought to take litle place, fo farr fourth confideracion may be had of his trust, that if intelligence of the matter could not otherwife have beene had, but by him, advantage be not taken of the note.

To be ignorant of the To be ignorant of the

¹⁸ Suitors are so distasted. His temporibus . . . cruciantur, 'in . are so tortured.'

these times . . . are so tortured.'

14 Reporting the successe barely. Successum ejus qualem-qualem animo simplici referendo, 'reporting the success truly, whatever it is.'

So farre forth . . . for his Discouerie. [This passage is thus rendered

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

good to referre them to fome friend of trust and iudgement, that may reportwhether hee may deale in them with honour.

Sutors fo distasted are with delaies and abuses. that plaine dealing in denying to deale in fuits at first, and reporting the fuccesse barely, and in challenging no more thankes then one hath deserved, is growne not onlie honourable, but also gracious. In fuits of fauour, the first comming ought to take little place: so farre forth consideration may be had of his trust, that if intelligence of the matter could not otherwise haue been had, but by him, aduantage be not taken of the note, but the party left to his other meanes.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

good to referre them, to

fome Frend of Trust and

Iudgement, that may report whether hee may deale in them with Honour: But him chuse well his Referendaries, for else he may be led by the Nofe. Sutours are so distasted 18 with Delayes, and Abuses, that Plaine Dealing, in denying to deale in Sutes at first, and Reporting the Successe barely,14 and in Challenging no more Thanks then one hath deserved, is grown not onely Honourable, but also Gracious. In Sutes of Fauour, the first Comming ought to take little Place: 15 Sofarre forth Confideration may bee had of his Trust, that if Intelligence of the Matter, coulde not otherwise haue beene had, but by him, Aduantage bee not taken of the Note. but the Partie left to his other Meanes; and, in fome fort, Recompenced for his Discouerie. 15

To be ignorant of the To be Ignorant of the

in the Latin] Eo usque Supplicantis Fides, in re illa patefacienda, valere possit, ut si Notitia ejus aliunde quam per eum haberi non potuisset; Hoc ei fraudi non sit, sed potius remuneratur, 'so that the trust of the suitor, in making the thing known, may avail that if the knowledge of it could not be had, except through him, it may be no disadvantage to him, but let him be rather rewarded.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. value of a Sute is simplici-

tie, as well as to be ignorant of the right thereof is

want of conscience.

¶ Secrecie in Sutesis a great meane of obtaining, for voicing them to bee in forwardnes may discourage of fome kinde futers. but doth quicken and awake others.

¶ But tyming of the Sutes is the principall, tyming I fave not onely in respect of the person that shoulde graunt it, but in respect of those which are like to crosse it.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

value of a Suite is simplicitie, as well, as to be ignorant of the right thereof, is want of Conscience.

Secrefie in fuites is a great meane of obtayning, for voyceing them to be in forwardnes may discourage of fuitours. fome kind doth quicken but awake others.

But tymeing of the Suites is the principall, tymeing I fay not onely in respect of the person, that should graunt it, but in respect of those which are like to crosse it.

¹⁶ Ignorant of the Right. Æquitatem ejusdem oscitanter prætervehi, 'to be carelessly carried beyond the right.'

17 Choice of his Meane. Ejus, cui Petitionis tuæ curam demandes, 'to whom you entrust the care of your suit.'

IV. æt. 52. 1612.

value of a fuit is fimplicity, aswell as to bee ignorant of the right therof, is want of conscience.

Secrefie in fuites is a great meane of obtaining; For voicing them to bee in forwardnesse, may discourage some kind of suitors, but doth quicken awake others.

But timage of the fuits is the principall. Timing I say not onely in respect of the person that should grant it, but in respect of those which are like to croffe it.

Let a man in the choise his rather meane. chuse the fittest meane then the greatest meane, and rather them that deale in certaine things then those that are generall.

The reparation of $a \mid$ deniall is fometimes equall fhew himselfe neither | deiected, nor discontented

1625. V. æt. 65.

value of a Sute, is Simplicitie; As well as to be Ignorant of the Right16 thereof, is Want of Conscience.

Secrecie in Sutes, is a great Meane of Obtaining; For voycing them, to bee in Forwardnesse, may discourage some Kinde of Sutours; But doth Quicken Awake Others.

But Timing of the Sute, is the Principall. Timing, I fay, not onely in respect of the Person, that should grant it, but in respect of those, which are like to Crosse it.

Let a Man, in the choice of his Meane,17 rather choose the Fittest Meane, then the Greatest Meane: And rather them, that deale in certaine Things, then those that are Generall.

The Reparation¹⁸ Deniall, is fomtimes Equall to the first grant, if a man to the first Grant, If a Man shew himselfe, neither deiected, nor discontented. Iniquum petas vt æquum Iniquum petas vt Æquum feras, is a good rule where feras; is a good Rule, where

Thou seekest unjustly, that thou mayest do justice. Quintilian Inst. Orat. iv. 5, 16.

¹⁸ Reparation. Denegatæ Petitionis iteratio, 'the repetition of a suit refused.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

T Nothing is thought fo. Nothing is thought fo easie a request to a great person as his letter, and person as his letter, and yet if it bee not in a good yet if it be not in a good cause, it is so much out of his reputation.

easie a request to a great cause, it is so much out of his reputacion.





¹⁹ Rise in his Sute. Gradibus quibusdam, ad id quod petis ascendere, et aliquid saltem impetrare, 'rise by certain steps to what you desire, and at least gain something.'

æt. 52. IV. 1612.

a man hath strength of fauour; but otherwise a man were better rest in his fuit: for hee that would haue ventured at first to haue lost the futor, will not in the conclusion lose both the futor and his owne former fauor.

Nothing is thought easie a request to a great person as his Letter; and yet if it be not in a good cause, it is so much out of his reputation.



1625. æt. 65.

a Man hath Strength of Fauour: But otherwise, a man were better rise in his Sute; 19 For he that would haue ventured at first to haue lost the Sutour, will not in the Conclusion, lose both the Sutour, and his owne former Fauour.

Nothing is thought Easie a Request, to a great Person, as his Letter; And yet, if it be not in a Good Cause, it is so much out of his Reputation.

There are no worse Instruments,20 then these Generall Contriuers of Sutes: For they are but a Kinde of Poyfon and Infection to Publique Proceedings.



²⁰ No worse Instruments. Non invenitur in Rebuspublicis perniciosius Hominum Genus, 'there is found no more dangerous kind of man in states.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.
No variations in Text II.

[6.] Of Expence.



Iches are for spending, and spending for honour and good ac-

tions. Therefore extraordinarie Expence must bee limited by the worth of the occasion; for voluntarie vndoing may bee as well for a mans countrie, as for the kingdome of heauen. But ordinarie expence ought to bee limited by a mans estate, and gouerned with fuch regard, as it be within his compasse, and not subject to deceite and abuse of feruants, and ordered to the best shew, that the Bils maye be lesse then the estimation abroad.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

8. Of Expences.



ing, and fpending for honour and good ac-

Therefore extraorcions. dinary Expence must be limitted by the worth of the occasion; for voluntarie vndoeing may be as well for a Mans Countrey, as for the kingdome of Heaven. But ordinary Expence ought to be limitted by a Mans estate, and governed with fuch regard, as it be within his compasse, and not subject to deceite, and abuse of fervauntes, and ordered to the best shewe; that the Billes may be eleffe, then the estimacion abroade.

TIt is no basenes for the It is noe basenes for the

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

Spending. Destinantur sumptibus, 'are intended for spending.'
 Vndoing. Paupertas, 'poverty.'

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

18. Of Expences.



Iches are for spending, and spending for honour and good ac-

Therefore extraordinary expence must bee limited by the worth of the occasion, for voluntary vndoing may bee as well for a mans Countrey, as for the kingdome of Heaven. But ordinarie expence, ought to be limitted by a mans estate and gouerned with fuch regard, as it be within his compasse, and not subject to decest, and abuse of feruants; and ordered to the best shew, that the bils may be lesse then the estimation abroad.

æt. 65. 1625. British Museum Copy.

28. Of Expence.



Iches are for Spending;1 And Spending for Honour and good Ac-

Therefore Extraordinary Expence must be limitted by the Worth of the Occasion: For Voluntary Vndoing,2 may be aswell for³ a Mans Country, as for the Kingdome Heauen. But Ordinary Expence ought to be limitted by a Mans Estate; And gouerned with fuch gard, as it be within his Compasse; And not subject to Deceit and Abuse of Seruants; And ordered to the best Shew, that the Bils may be leffe, then the Estimation abroad.

Certainly, if a Man will keep but of Euen hand,4 Ordinary Expences his ought to be, but to the Halfe of his Receipts; And if he thinke to waxe Rich, but to the Third Part.

It is no basenesse for the It is no Basenesse, for the

May be aswell for. Debetur, 'is due to.'
Euen hand. Qui Diminutionem Fortunarum suarum pati nolit, 'who does not wish to suffer a decrease of his fortune.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. III. greatest to descend and looke into their owne ef- looke into theire owne eftate. Some forbeare it not vpon negligence alone, but doubting to bring themfelues into Melancholy in | felves into Melancholy in respect they shall finde it broken. But Woundes cancured bee without not fearching.

¶ Hee that cannot looke estate. into his owne choose had neede both well those whom he imployeth, yea and change them after. For new are more timerous and leffe fubtle.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. greatest to descende, and tate. Some forbeare it not vponnnegligence alone, but doubting to bring themrespect they shall finde it broken. But Woundes cancured without nott bee fearchinge.

Hee that cannott looke into estate. his owne had neede both choose well those whom he ymployeth, yea and chaunge Ffor new are them often. more timerous and lesse fubtile.

Descend and looke. Si rationes suas diligenter inspiciant, 'if they look diligently into their affairs.'

Some. Complures, 'very many.' 7 Doubting. Aversatione quadam, ne, 'from a certain dislike, lest they.'

IV. æt. 52. 1612.

greatest to descend and looke into their owne eftates. Some forbeare it not vpon negligence alone, but doubting to bring themfelues into malancholy in broken. But wounds cannot bee cured without fearching.

Heethat cannot looke into at all. his owne estate had neede both choose well those whom he imand change them often: for new are more timorous, and lesse fubtill.

He that can looke into his estate but seldome, had need turne all to certainties.

1625. æt. 65.

Greatest, to descend and looke,5 into their owne Eftate. Some6 forbeare it, not vpon Negligence alone, But doubting⁷ to bring Themfelues into Melancholy, in respect they shall find it respect they shall finde it Broken.⁸ But Wounds cannot be Cured without Searching.

> He that cannot looke into his own Estate at all,9 had need both Choose well, those whom he employeth, and change them often: For New are more Timorous, and lesse Subtile.

He that can looke into his Estate but seldome. it behoueth him to turne all to Certainties. 10

A Man had need, if he be Plentifull, in some kinde of Expence, to be Sauing againe, in some other. As if he be Plentifull in Diet, to be Sauing Apparell: If he be Plentifull in the Hall, to be Sauing in the Stable: And the like. For he that

Broken. Nimio accisas, 'too much impaired.'

At all. Commode, 'conveniently.'

Certainties. Quæ Computationi subjacent, in certos Reditus atque etiam Sumptus vertere, 'to turn what is subject to calculation into certain revenues and expenses.

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

¶ In clearing of a mans estate, hee may as well hurt himselse in being too suddaine, as in letting it runne on too long, for haftie felling is commonly as disaduantageable as interest.

In clearing of a Mans estate, he may aswell hurt himself in being too suddaine, as in letting it run on too long, For haftie Selling is commonly as difadvantageable, as Interest.

¶ He that hath a state to repaire may not despise fmall things; and commonly it is leffe dishonourabridge pettie able to charges then to stoupe to pettie gettings.

T A man ought warily to begin charges, which once begunne must continue. But in matters that returne. not, he may be more magnificent.

that hath He a State to repayer may not dispise fmale thinges; and commonly it is leffe dishonorable abridge pettie to charges, then to stoupe to pettie Gettinges;

A man ought warily to begin charges which once begun must contynue. But in matters that retourne not, hee may be more mag-

nificent.

·**********

11 Estate. Perplexa et obærata Re Familiari, 'estate perplexed and involved in debt.' 12 Gaineth vpon. Medetur, 'heals.'

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

In cleering of a mans estate, hee may aswell hurt himselfe in being too sudden, as in letting it run on to long. For hafty felling is commonly as difaduantageable interest. as Besides, he that cleeres at once will relapse: For finding himselfe out of straught, hee wil reuert to his cuf-But hee that cleertomes. eth by degrees, induceth an habite of frugality, and gaineth aswell vpon his minde as vpon his estate. Certainly who hath a state to repaire may not despise fmall things; and commonly it is leffe dishonourable to abridge pettie charges, then to stoope to petty gettings.

A man ought warily to begin charges, which once begun must continue. But in matters that return not, he may bee more mag-

nificent.

02022

æt. 65. 1625.

is Plentifull in Expences of all Kindes, will hardly be preferued from Decay.

In Clearing of a Mans Estate, 11 he may as well hurt Himselse in being too sudden, as in letting it runne on toolong. For hafty Selling is commonly as Disaduantageable as Interest. Besides, he that cleares at once, will relapse; For finding himselfe out of Straights, he will reuert to his Cuftomes: But hee that cleareth by Degrees, induceth a Habite of Frugalitie, and gaineth¹² as well vpon his Minde, as vpon his Estate. Certainly, who hath a State to repaire, may not despise fmall Things: And commonly, it is lesse dishonourable, to abridge pettie Charges, then to stoope to pettie Gettings.

A Man ought warily to beginne Charges, which once Continue: will begun But in Matters, that returne not,13 he may be more Mag-

nificent.14

O DESCRIPTION OF THE O

Sumptibus, qui non facile redeunt, 'ex 18 Matters that returne not. Sumptibus, qui non facile redeunt, 'expenses that do not easily return.'

14 Magnificent. 'Splendidiorem et magnificentiorem, 'more splendid

and magnificent.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

For variations of II., see footnotes.

[7.] Of Regiment of health.



Here is a wisdome in this beyond the rules of Phisicke. A mans

owne observation what he finds good of, and what he findes hurt of, is the best Physicke to preserve health.

But it is a fafer conclusion to fay, This agreeth* well with me, therefore I will continue it, then this I finde no offence, of this therefore I may vse it. For strength of nature in youth passeth ouer many excesses, which are owing a man till his age.

T Discerne of the comming on of yeares, and thinke not to doe the same things still.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

7. Of Regiment of health.



Here is a Wisedome in this beyond the rules of Phisick. Amans

owne observacion what he findes good of, and what he findes hurt of, is the best Phisicke to preserve health:

But it is a safer conclusion to saie, This agreeth not well with mee, therefore I will not continue it, then this, I sinde noe offence of this, therefore I may vse it. For strength of nature in youth, passeth overmanie excesses, which are oweing a Man till his age.

Discerne of the commeing on of yeares, and thinke not to doe the same thinges still.

^{*} not, inserted here in 1598 edition.

DK. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ There is a wisdome in this. In Regimine Valetudinis, invenire est quandam Prudentiam, 'in the regiment of health there is a certain wisdom to be found.'

IV.

æt. 52. 1612.

17. Of Regiment of health.



Here is a wisdome in this, beyond rules the Phisicke. A mans

owne observation what he findes good of, and what hee findes hurt of, is the best prese[r]ue Physicke to health.

But it is a fafer conclusion to fay; this agreeth not well with mee, therefore I will not continue it; then this, I finde no offence of this, therefore I may vse it: for strength of nature in youth, passeth ouer many excesses, which are owing a man till his age.

Discerne of the comming on of yeares, and thinke not to doe the same things fill. Certainly most lusty old men catch their death by that aduenture; For V.

1625. æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

80. Of Regiment of Bealth.



Here is a wifdome in this, beyond the Rules Physicke: AMans

owne Observation, what he findes Good of, and whathe findes Hurt of, is the best Physicke to preserue Health.

But it is a fafer Conclusion to fay; This agreeth not well with me,2 therefore I will not continue3 it; Then this; I finde no offence of this. therefore I may vse it. Strength of Nature in youth, passeth ouer many Excesses, which are owing⁴ a Man till his Age.

Discerne of the comming on of Yeares, and thinke not, to doe the fame Things still;

For age will not be defied. Age will not be Defied.

Agreeth. Hoc sensi mihi nocuisse, 'I have felt that this injures me.'
Continue. Utar, 'use.'
Owing. Tandem velut debita exigentur, 'will be at last exacted like debts.

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

¶ Beware of any fuddain change in any great point of diet, and if necessitie inforce it, fit the rest to it.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Beware of anie fuadame chaunge in any great pointe

of Dyett, and if necessity inforce it, fitt the rest to it.

chearefully disposed at cheerefully disposed howers of meate, and of howers of meate, and of fleepe, and of exercise, is sleepe, and of exercise, is the best precept of long lasting.

To be free minded, and To bee free minded, and the best precept of long lasting.

Then one. Quam unum Magnum, 'than one great one.'
Apparell. Vestium, Mansionis, 'apparel, habitation.'
It. Ad Consueta, 'to the accustomed course.'

Beware of any fudden change in any great point of diet, and if necessitie enforce it, fit the rest to it. For it is a fecret both in nature and state, that it is fafer to change many things then one.

To bee free minded and disposed cherefullie at houres of meat, and of fleepe, and of exercise, is the best precept of long lasting.

1625. æt. 65. Beware of fudden Change in any great point of Diet, and if necessity inforce it, fit the rest to it. For it is a Secret, both in Nature, and State; That it is fafer to change Many Things, then one. 5 Examine thy Customes, of Diet, Sleepe, Exercife, Apparell, 6 and the like; And trie in any Thing, thou shalt iudge hurtfull, to discontinue it by little and little; But so, as if thou doest finde any Inconuenience by the Change, thou come backe to it? againe: For it is hard to distinguish, that which is generally held good, and wholesome,8 from which is good particularly, and fit for thine owne Body.9 To be free minded, and cheerefully disposed, at Houres of Meat, and of Sleep, and of Exercise, is one of the best Precepts of Long lasting. As for the Passions and Studies of the Minde; Auoid Enuie: Anxious Feares; Anger fretting inwards; Subtill

Held good and wholesome. Sunt salubria, 'are wholesome.'
Body. Corporis tui unici Constitutioni, 'the constitution of thy body alone.

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

¶ If you flie Physicke in health altogether, it will be too strange to your body, when you shall neede it, if you make it too familiar, it will worke no extraordinarie effect when ficknesse commeth.

If you fly Phisicke in health altogither, it wilbe too strange for your body when you shall neede it; If you make it too familiar, it will worke no extraordinarie effect, when sicknesse commeth.

T Despise no new accident | Dispise noe new accident opinion of it.

in the body, but aske in thie body, but aske opinion of it.

¹⁰ Communicated. Alte pressam, et non communicatam, 'pressed down, and not communicated.'

11 Wonder. Omitted in the Latin.

12 Strange. Ingratior, 'too unpleasant.'

If you fly Phisicke in healthaltogether, it will bee too strange for your body, when you shall need it: if you make it too familiar, it will worke no extraordinarie effect, when sicknesse commeth.

Despise no new accident in your body, but aske opinion of it.

1625. æt. 65. and knottie Inquisitions; Ioyes, and Exhilarations in Excesse; Sadnesse not Communicated. 10 Entertaine Hopes; Mirth rather then Ioy; Varietie Delights, rather then Surfet of them; Wonder,11 and Admiration, and therefore Nouelties; Studies that fill the Minde with Splendide and Illustrious Objects. as Histories, Fables, and Contemplations of Nature. If you flie Physicke in Health altogether, it will be too strange 12 for your Body, when you shall need it. you make it too familiar, it will worke no Extraordinary Effect, 18 when Sickneffe commeth. I commend rather, fome Diet, for certaine Seafons, then frequent Vse of *Physicke*, Except it be growen into a Custome. For those Diets alter the Body more, and trouble it leffe. Despise no new¹⁴Accident,

in your Body, but aske Opinion¹⁵ of it.

¹⁸ Extraordinary Effect. Detraket de viribus et efficacia ejus, 'it will de tract from its strength and efficacy.'

¹⁴ New. Novum et insuetum, 'new and unaccustomed.'
15 Opinion. Consilium Medicorum, 'opinion of physicians.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

¶ In sickenesse respect health principally, and in health action. For those that put their bodies to indure in health, may in most sickenesses which are not very sharpe, be cured onelye with diet and tendring.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

respect In ficknes health principally, and in Ffor those health accion. that putt theire bodyes to endure in health, may in most sicknesses which are not verie sharpe, be cured onely with dyett, tendering.

T Physitians are some of Phisitians are them fo pleasing and con- them foe pleasing and conformable* to the humours formable to the humors

of the patient, as they of the Patient, as they

^{*} Comfortable, in 1598 Edition.

¹⁶ Action. Corpore tuo utere, nec sis nimis delicatus, 'use your body and be not too delicate.'

¹⁷ Tendering. Corporis Regimine paulo exquisitiore, . . . absqualita Medicatione, by a little more careful tendering of the body without much doctoring.

IV. æt. 52. 1612.

In fickenesse respect health principally, and in health action. For those that put their bodies to endure in health, may in most sicknesses, which are not very sharpe, be cured with diet onely and tendering.

Celfus could neuer haue spoken it as a Physitian hid he not been a wife man withall: when he giueth it for one of the great precepts of health and lasting. That a man doe varie and interchange contraries, but with an inclination to the more being vſe extreame; fasting, and full eating, but rather full eating; watching and sleepe, but rather fleepe, fitting and exercise, but rather exercise, and the like. So shall nature bee cherished and yet taught masteries.

Physitians are of fome them fo pleasing and con-

V. 1625. æt. 65

Sicknesse, In respect Health principally; And in Health, Action. 16 For those that put their Bodies, to endure in Health, may in most Sicknesses which are not very sharpe, be cured with Diet. onely Tendering.¹⁷

Celfusa could neuer haue spoken it as a Physician, had he not been a Wife Man withall; when he giueth it, for one of the great precepts of Health and Lasting, That a Man doe vary, and enterchange Contraries; But with an Inclination to the more benigne Extreme: Vse Fasting, and full Eating, but rather full Eating; Watching and Sleep, but rather Sleep; Sitting, and Exercife, but rather Exercise; and the like. So shall Nature cherished, and yet be taught Masteries.18

Physicians are some of them so pleasing, and conformable to the humors formable 19 to the Humor of the Patient, as they of the Patient, as

⁴ A. C. Celsus. De re medica. i. 1.

Masteries. Robur acquiret, 'acquire strength.'

19 Conformable. Erga Aegrum, et ejus Desideria, tam sunt indulgentes,

are so indulgent to the sick and his desires.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. presse not the true cure of the disease; and fome other are so regular in proceeding according to Arte for the disease, as they respect not sufficiently the condition of the patient. Take one of a middle temper, or if it may not bee found in one man, compound two of both forts, and forget not to cal as wel the besta c quainted with your body, as the best reputed of for his facultie.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. presse not the true cure of the disease; and other are soe regular in proceedinge according to Art for the difease, as they refpect not fufficiently the condicion of the Patient. Take one of a middle temper, or if it may not be found in one Man, combyne two of both fortes, and forgett not to call aswell the best acquainted with your body, as the best reputed of, for his facultye.





Regular. Regulares et rigidi, 'regular and rigid.'
Condition. Conditionem et Naturam, 'condition and nature.'

the difease; and some other are so regular, in proceeding according to art for the disease, as they recondition of the Patient. Take one of a middle temper, or if it may not bine two of both forts: and forget not to call aswell the best acquainted

1625. æt. 65.

presse not the true cure of presse not the true Cure of the Disease; And some other are so Regular, 20 in proceeding according to Art, for the Disease, as they respect not sufficiently the spect not sufficiently the Condition²¹ of the Patient. Take one of a Middle Temper; Or if it may not be found in one man, com- be found in one Man, combine two of either fort: And forget not to call, aswell the best acquainted22 with your bodie, as the best with your Body, as the best reputed of, for his faculty. reputed of for his Faculty





The best acquainted. Gnarum, non minus quam, 'not less acquainted

No variations in Text II.

[8.] Of Honour and reputation.



HE winning of Honour is but the reuealing of a mans vertue

and worth without disaduantage, for some in their actions doe affect Honour and reputation, which sort of men are commonly much talked of, but inwardly little admired: and some darken their vertue in the shew of it, so as they be vnder-valewed in opinion.

If a man performe that which hath not beene attempted before, or attempted and giuen ouer, or hath beene atchieued, but not with fo good circumstance, he shall purchase more Honour then by effecting a matter of greater difficultie or vertue, wherein he is but a follower.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106.

21. Of Honor and reputation.



He true Wynning
of Honor is but
the revealinge of
a Mans vertue

and worth without disaduantage; For some in theire accions doe affect honour and reputacion, which sorte of Men are commonly much talked of, but inwardlie litle admired; and some darken their vertue in the shewe of it, so as they be vndervalued in opinion.

If a Man performe that which hath not beene attempted before, or attempted and given over, or hath beene atchieved but not with foe good Circumstance, he shall purchase more honor, then by effecting a matter of greater difficultie, or vertue, wherein he is but a Follower.

If a Man confider wherein others have given distast,

FX. Fariations in posthumous Latin Evition of 1638.

1 Winning. Vera, et jure optimo, Acquisitio, 'the true and rightful winning.'

² Honour. Honoris et Existimationis, 'honour and reputation.'

Of Hononr and reputation.

[This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.]

V. 1625. æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

55. Of Honour and Reputation.

He Winning¹ of Honour,² is but the Reuealing of

a Mans Vertue and Worth, without Disaduantage. For some in their Actions, doe Wooe and assect Honour, and Reputation: Which Sort of Men, are commonly much Talked of, but inwardly little Admired. And some, contrariwise, darken their Vertue, in the Shew of it; So as they be

vnder-valued in opinion.

If a Man performe that which hath not beene attempted before; Or attempted and given over; Or hath beene atchieued, but not with fo good Circumstance; he shall purchase more *Honour*, then by Effecting a Matter of greater Difficulty, or Vertue, wherein he is but a Follower.

4 Wooe and affect. Proci Famæ sunt, et veluti Venatores, 'are wooers and as it were hunters of fame.'

Without disaduantage. Dextre et absque detrimento, 'dexterously and without disadvantage.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

¶ If a man fo temper his actions as in some one of doe content them hee euerie saction or combination of people, the Musicke will be the fuller.

¶ A man is an ill husband of his Honour that entereth into any action, the failing wherein may difgrace him more than the carrying of it through can Honour him.

¶ Discreete followers helpe much to reputation.

¶ Enuiewhich is the canker of Honour, is best extinguished by declaring

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. and wynne honor vponn theire envye, the beame will be the quicker.

If a Man so temper his accions, as in some one of them, he doe content every faction, or combinacion of People, the Musick will be the fuller.

A Man is an ill husband of his honor, that entreth into anie accion, the faylinge wherein may difgrace him more, then the carrying of it throughe can honor him.

Discreete followers helpe much to reputacion.

Envy which is the Canker of honour, is best extina guished by declaring

⁵ Temper. Inter se committat, et contemperet, 'combine and temper.' 6 Gained and broken vpon Another. Qui Comparativus est, et Aliume pragravat, 'which is comparative and depresses another.'
7 Diamonds. Adamantis, aut Carbunculi, 'a diamond or carbuncle.'

æt. 65. 1625.

This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.

If a Man fo temper⁵ his Actions, as in some one of them, hee doth content euerieFaction, or Combination of People, the Musicke will bee the fuller. A man is an ill Husband of

his Honour, that entreth into any Action, the Failing wherein may difgrace him more, then the Carying of it through can Honor him.

Honour, that is gained and broken vpon Another,6 hath the quickest Reflection; Like Diamonds⁷ cut with Fascets. And therefore, let a Man contend, to excell any Competitors of his in Honour, in Outshooting them, if he can, in their owne Bowe.8

Discreet Followers Seruants helpe much to Reputation. ⁹Omnis Fama à Domesticis emanat.ª

Enuy, which is the Canker¹⁰ of *Honour*, is best extinguished, by declaring

says, Omnis, &c.'
Canker. Tinea et teredo, 'moth and worm.'

a All Fame proceeds from servants. Cicero. De petitione consulatus. v.

⁸ In their owne Bowe. In iis, in quibus ipsi summe gloriantur, 'surpass them in those things on which they chiefly pride themselves.'

⁹ Omnis Fama. Ita Quintus Cicero, omnis, &c., 'thus Q[uintus] Cicero says. Omnis, &c.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. mans felfe in his ends, rather to feeke merite then fame, and by attributing a mans fuccesses rather to diuine prouidence and felicitie then his to vertue or policie.

The true Marshalling of the degrees of Soueraigne honour are these.

In the first place are Conditores, founders of states.

In the fecond place are In the fecond place are Legislatores Lawgiuers, which are also called second founders, or Perpetui principes, because they gouerne by their ordinances after they are gone.

Liberatores, as compound the fuch warres, or

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Mans felfe in his endes, rather to feeke meritt, then fame, and by attributing a mans fuccesses rather to divine providence, felicitye, then to vertue or pollicie.

The true Marshalling of the degrees of Sovereigne honor are theis.

In the first place are Conditores, Founders of States.

Legislatores, Law givers which are also called second Founders or Perpetui Principes, because they governe by theire ordinances after they are gone.

In the third place are In the third place are Liberatores. Such as compound miseries of civill long miseryes of Civill deliuer their warres, or deliver their

¹¹ Saluatores. Servatores Patriarum suarum, 'preservers of their country.'

[This Essay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.]

1625. æt. 65. Mans Selfe, in his Ends, rather to feeke Merit, then Fame: And by Attributing a Mans Successes, rather to diuine Prouidence and Felicity, then to his owne Vertue or Policy. The true Marshalling of the Degrees of Soveraigne Honour are these. In the First Place are Conditores Imperiorum; Founof States, Common - Wealths: as were Romulus, Cyrus, Cæfar, Ottoman, Ismael. In the Second Place are Legis-latores, Lawgiuers; which are also called, Second Founders, or Perpetui Principes, because they Gouerne by their Ordinances, after they are gone: Such were Lycurgus, Solon, Iustinian, Eadgar, Alphonfus of Castile, the Wise, that made the Siete Partidas. In the Third Place, are Liberatores, or Saluatores:11 Such as compound the Miseries of Ciuill Warres, or deliuer their

Alphonso X. of Castile, surnamed 'The Wise' [b. 1226—d. 4 Apr. 1284], was the author of a legal Code, called Las siete partidas, from its seven parts or sections. It was first printed at Seville in 1491; and a copious Latin index of it by G. Lopez à Touar appeared at Salamanca in 1576.

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. Countries from feruitude of strangers or tyrants.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Countryes from fervitude of Strangers or Tyrantes.

In the fourth place are Propagatores or Propagnatores imperii, such as in honourable warres large their territories, or defence make noble against Inuaders.

And in the last place are Patres patriæ, which raigne iustly and make the times good wherein they liue.

In the fourth place are Propagatores or Propugnatores Imperii, such as in honorable warres enlarge theire Territories, or make noble defence against Invaders.

And in the last place are Patres patriæ, which reigne iustly and make the tymes good wherein they live.

Degrees of honour in fubiects are

first Participes curarum, those vpon whome Princes doe discharge the greatest waight of their affaires, their Right handes (as wee call them.)

The next are Duces belli, great leaders, such as are Princes, Lieutenants, and do them notable feruices doe them notable fervices

degrees of honor in Subiectes are

first Participes curarum, those vponn whom Princes doe discharge the greatest weight of theire affaiers, theire Right handes (as wee call them.)

The next are Duces belli, great leaders, fuch as are Princes Liuetenauntes and

¹² Noble defence. Desensione strenua et Nobili, 'energetic and noble defence.

[This Essay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.]

V. 1625. æt. 65. Countries from Seruitude of Strangers, or Tyrants; As Augustus Cæfar, Vespasianus, Aurelianus, Theodoricus, K. Henry the 7. ot England, K. Henry the 4. of France.

In the Fourth Place, are *Propagatores* or *Propagatores* or *Propagatores* or *Propagatores Imperij*; Such as in Honourable Warres enlarge their Territories, or make Noble defence¹² against Inuaders.

And in the Last Place, are Patres Patriæ; which reigne iustly, and make the Times good, wherein they liue. 13 Both which last Kindes, need no Examples, they are in such Number.

Degrees of *Honour* in *Sub-iects* are;

First, Participes Curarum; Those vpon whom Princes doe discharge the greatest Weight of their Affaires; Their Right Hands, as we call them.

The Next are, Duces Belli, Great Leaders; Such as are Princes Lieutenants, and doe them Notable Seruices

¹⁸ Make the Times good. Temporibus felicibus, quamdiu vivunt, Cives suos beant, 'bless their subjects with happy times while they live.'
14 Vpon whom. Quorum humeris, 'on whose shoulders.'

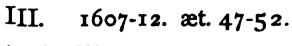
I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. | III.

in the wars.

The third are Gratiofi, fauorites, fuch as exceede not this fcantling to bee follace to the Soueraigne and harmelesse to the and harmeles people.

place vnder Princes, and

execute their places with fufficiencie.



in the Warres.

The third are Gratiofi fauorites fuch as exceede not this fcantling to be folace to the Sovereigne, to People.

And the fourth Negotiis And the fourth Negotiis pares, such as have great pares, such as have great place vnder Princes, and doe execute their places with fufficiencye.





¹⁵ Exceed not this Scantling. Non ultra hoc potes sunt, 'have no power beyond this.'

[This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.]

V. 1625. æt. 65.

in the Warres.

The Third are, Gratiofi, Fauourites; Such as exceed not this Scantling; To be Solace to the Soueraigne, and Harmelesse to the People.

And the Fourth, Negotijs pares; Such as haue great Places vnder Princes, and execute their Places

with Sufficiency.

There is an *Honour* likewise, which may be ranked amongst the Greatest, which happeneth rarely: That is, of such as *Sacrifice themfelues*, to *Death* or *Danger*, for the *Good* of *their Countrey*: As was *M. Regulus*, and the Two *Decij*.



I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. For variations of II., see footnotes.

[9.] Of faction.



Anie haue a newe wisedome, indeed, a fond opinion;

for a Prince to gouerne his estate, or for a great perfon to gouerne his proceedings according to the refpects of Factions, is the principal part of pollicie. Whereas contrariwise, the chiefest wisedome is either in ordering those things which are generall, and wherein men of feuerall Factions doe neuerthelesse agree, or in dealing with correspondence to particular persons one by one, But I fay not that the confideration of Factions is to be neglected.

¶ Meane men

must adheare, but great men that have strength in themselues were better to maintaine themselves indifferent and neutrall; yet euen in beginners to adheare fo moderatly, as he be a man of the one Fac-

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. Harleian MS. 5106.

20. Of faction.



Anie have an opinion not wife:

That

for a Prince to governe his estate, or for a great perfon to governe his proceedinges according to the refpectes of factions, is the principall part of policie. Whereas contrary wife, the cheifest wisedome is either in ordering those thinges which are generall, and wherein Men of feverall factions doe nevertheles agree, or in dealing with correspondence to particuler persons, one by one, But I fay not that the confideracion of ffactions is to be neglected.

Meane men

must adhere, but great men that have strength in themselves were better to mainteine themselves indifferent, and neutrall; yet even in beginners to adhere fo moderately, as he be a man of the one Fac-

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

⁻ TITLE. De Factionibus, 'of factions.'

IV. æt. 52. 1612.

34. Of Faction.



Any haue an opinwise; ion not

That for a Prince to gouerne his estate, or for a great perfon to gouerne his proceedings, according to the refpect of factions, is the principall part of pollicy: whereas contrariwife, the chiefest wisdome is either in ordering those things which are generall, and wherein men of feuerall factions doe neuerthelesse agree, or in dealing with correspondence to particuler persons, one by one. But I fay not, that the consideration of factions is to be neglected.

Meane men must adhere, but men that haue strength in themselues were better to maintaine themselues indifferent, and neutrall. Yet euen in beginners to adhere so moderatly, as he be a man of the one fac- bee a Man of the one Fac-

1625. æt. 65. British Museum Copy.

51. Of Faction.



Anyhaue an Opinwife: ion not

for a Prince to Gouerne his Estate; Or for a Great Perfon to gouerne his Proceedings, according to the Refof Factions, is Principall Part of Policy: whereas contrariwife, the Chiefest Wisdome is, either

in Ordering those Things, which are Generall, and wherein Men of Seuerall Factions doe neuerthelesse agree; Or in dealing with Correspondence to Particular Persons,2 one by one. But I fay not, that the con-

fideration of Factions, is

to be Neglected.

Meane Men, in their Rising, must adhere; But Great Men, that have Strength in themselues, were better to maintaine themselues Indifferent, and Neutrall. Yet euen in beginners, to adhere fo moderately, as hee

² Dealing with Correspondence, &c. Vel in palpandis, conciliandis et tractandis singulis. 'or in touching, conciliating, and treating with particular persons.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

tion, which is passablest with the other, commonly giueth best way.

The lower and weaker Faction is the firmer in conjunction.

¶ When one of the Factions is extinguished, the fubdiuideth remaining which is good for a fecond Faction.*

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. tion, which is passablest with thother, commonly giveth best way.

The lower and weaker Faction is the firmer in coniunction;

When one of the Factions is extinguished, the remayning subdivideth, which is good for a fecond.

^{*} Faction, omitted in 1598 Edition.

⁸ Most Passable. Et tamen Parti adversæ minime odiosus, 'and still is not odious (i.e. the man) to the adverse faction.'
4 Giueth best Way. Viam quandam sternit ad Honores, per Medium Factionum, 'paves a way to honours by means of factions.'

tion, which is passablest with the other, commonly giueth best way.

The lower and weaker faction is the firmer in conjunction.

When one of the factions is extinguished, the remaining fubdiuideth: which is good for a fecond.

1625.

tion, which is most Passable⁸ with the other, commonly giueth best Way.4

The Lower and Weaker Faction, is the firmer⁵ in Coniunction: And it is often feene, that a few, that are Stiffe,6 doe tire out,7 a greater Number, that are more Moderate.

When One of the Factions is Extinguished, the Remaining Subdivideth:

As the Faction, betweene Lucullus, and the Rest of the Nobles of the Senate (which they called Optimates) held out a while,8 against the Faction of Pompey and Cafar: But when the Senates Authority was pulled Downe, Cæfar and Pompey soone after brake. The Faction or Partie of Antonius, and Octauianus Cæfar, against Brutus and Cassius, held out likewise for a time: when Brutus Cassius were ouerthrowne.

Held out a while. In satis magno Vigore, 'with sufficient vigour.'

Firmer. Firmior et constantior, 'firmer and more consistent.'
Stiffe. Obstinati et pertinaces, 'obstinate and persevering.'
7 Tire out. In fine defatigare et depellere, 'in the end tire out and displace.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

It is commonly feene that men once placed, take in with the contrarie faction to that by which they enter.

It is commonly feene, that Men once placed take in with the contrary faction to that by which they enter.

¶ The Traitor in Factions lightly goeth away with it, for when matters haue stucke long in ballancing,

The Traitor in ffactions lightly goeth away with it, For when matters have stuck long in ballancinge, the winning of some one the wynning of some one

their parties soon after divided.'

10 Proue ciphars and Casheer'd. Potestate omni excident, 'fall out of all power.'

¹¹ Once Placed. Postquam Voti compotes sint, et in Dignitate quam ambierunt collocati, 'when they have obtained their wish and are placed in the dignity which they desired.'

1625. V. æt. 65.

then soone after Antonius and Oclauianus brake and Subdivided.9 Thefe Examples are of Warres, but the fame holdeth in Priuate *Factions*. And therefore, those that are Seconds in *Factions*, doe many times, when the Faction Subdivideth, proue Principals: But many times also, they proue Ciphars and Casheer'd:10 For many a Mans Strength is in oppofition; And when that faileth, he groweth out of vſe.

It is commonly feene, that tothat, by which they enter.

It is commonly feene, that men once placed, take in | Men once Placed, 11 take in with the contrary faction | with the Contrary Faction to that, by which they enter; Thinking belike that they haue the First Sure;12 And now are Readie for a New Purchase.

the winning of some one the Winning of some one

The Traitor in factions The Traitour in Faction lightly goeth away with it: lightly goeth away with it; 18 for when matters haue For when Matters haue stucke long in balancing, stucke long in Ballancing,

an advantage.

¹² That they have the First Sure, &c. Se de alterius Factionis Affectu et Studiis, jamdudum certos esse; Itaque ad Amicos novos conciliandos se comparare, 'that they have been long sure of the goodwill and zeal of the other faction, and so prepare themselves to gain new friends.'

13 Lightly goeth away with it. Plerunque rem obtinet, 'commonly gets

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. man casteth them, and hee getteth all the thankes.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Man casteth them, and he getteth all the thankes.





18 Haue often in their Mouth. De quo Vox illa, in Vulgus volitat, 'about whom this saying is common among the people.'

¹⁴ Truenesse to a Mans Selfe. A Consilio callido, quandoquidem proximus sibi quisque sit, 'from a crafty plan, since each man is nearest to himself.'

IV. æt. 52. 1612. man casteth them and he getteth all the thankes. The euen carriage betweene two factions, proceedeth not alwaies of moderation, but of a truenesse to a mans selfe, with end to make vse of both. Certainely in *Italie* they hold it a little suspect in Popes, when they have often in their mouth Padre Commune, and take it to be afigne of one that meaneth to referre all to the greatnesse of his own house.



V. 1625. æt. 65.

Man casteth them, and he getteth all the Thankes. The Euen Carriage betweene two Factions, proceedeth not alwaies Moderation, but of a Truenessetoa Mans Selfe,14 with End to make vie of both. Certainly in Italy, they hold it a little suspect in Popes, when they have often in their Mouth, 15 Padre commune: And take it, to be a Signe of one, that meaneth to referre all, to the Greatnesse of his owne House.

Kings had need beware, how they Side themselues. and make themselues as of a Faction or Partie:16 For Leagues, within the State, are euer Pernicious to Monarchies; For they raife an Obligation, Paramount to Obligation of Soueraigntie, and make the King, Tanquam vnus ex nobis. As was to be seene, in the League of France. When Factions are carried too high,17 and too vio-

trong hand and openly.'

As one of us.

¹⁶ Faction or Partie. Factioni alicui Subditorum suorum, 'any faction of beir subjects. 17 Carried too high. Manu forti, et palam, concertant, contend with the

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

V. 1625. æt. 65. lently, it is a Signe of Weaknessein Princes; And much to the Preiudice, both of their Authoritie, and Businesse. The Motions of Factions, vnder Kings, ought to be like the Motions (as the Astronomers speake) of the Inferiour Orbs; which may have their Proper Motions, but yet still, are quietly carried, by the Higher Motion, of Primum Mobile.



I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. For Variations of II., see footnotes.

[10.] Of Aegociating.



T is generally better to deale by fpeech then by letter, and by

the mediation of a thirde then by a mans felfe. Letters are good when a man woulde draw an answere by letter backe againe, or when it may serue for a mans justification afterwards to produce his owne letter.

To deale in person is good when a mans face breedes regard, as commonly with inferiours.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52

Harleian MS. 5106.

18. Of Regociatinge.



T is generally better to deale by fpeach, then by letter and by

the mediacion of a third, then by a mans felf; Letters are good when a Man would drawe an aunsweare by letter back againe, or when it may serve for a mans Iustificacion afterwardes to produce his owne letter.

To deale in person is good when a mans face breedes regard, as commonly with Inferiours.

¶ In choyce of instru- In choise of Instru-

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Justification. Vbi sua intersit, 'when it may be to a man's profit.'
2 Letter. Exemplaria Literarum, quas scripsit, producere, et monstrare, 'to produce and show the copy of the letter which he wrote.'

33. Of Regoriating.

T is generallie better to deale by fpeach, then by letter, and by

the mediation of a third. then by a mans felfe. Letters are good when a man would draw an answer by letter backe againe, or when it may ferue for a mans iustification afterwards to produce his owne letter, or where it may bee danger to bee interrupted or heard by Peeres. To deale in person is good when a mans face breeds regard, as commonly with in tender inferiours, or cases where a mans eie vpon the countenance of him with whom one speaketh, may giue him a direction how farre to goe, generally where man will referue to himselse libertie either to disaduowe, or to expound. In choise instru- | of

V. 1625. æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

47. Of Regoriating.



T is generally better to *deale* by Speech, then by Letter; And by

the Mediation of a Third. then by a Mans Selfe. Letters are good, when a Man would draw an Answer by Letter backeagaine; Or when it may ferue, for a Mans Iustification, afterwards to produce his owne Letter;² Or where it may be Danger to be interrupted, or heard by Peeces. To deale in Person is good, when a Mans Face breedeth Regard, as Commonly with Inferiours;⁸ Or in Tender Cases,4 where a Mans Eye, vpon the Countenance of him with whom he speaketh, may giue him a Direction, how farre to goe: generally, where a And Man will referue to him-Libertie, either felfe Difavow, or to Expound.⁵ In Choice of

⁸ Inferiours. In Colloquio cum Inferiore: 'in conversation with an inferior.'

⁴ Tender cases. Rebus, quas extremis tantum digitis tangere convenit; in cases which should be touched only with the tips of the fingers.'

⁵ Expound. Interpretandi ea quæ dixerit, 'to expound what he has said.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8. ments it is better to choose men of a plainer forte that are like to doe that that is committed to them; and to reporte backe againe faithfully the fuccesse, then those that are cunning to contriue out of other mens businesse somewhat to grace themselues, and will helpe the matter in reporte for fatisfactions fake.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. mentes it is better to choose men of a playner forte, that are like to doe that, that is committed to them, and to reporte backe againe faithfully the fuccesse, then those that are cunning to contrive out of other mens businesse somewhat to grace themselves, and will helpe the matter in report for fatisfactions fake.

⁶ Instruments. In tractando per alios, 'in treating by means of others.'
7 Better. Cautius et melius, 'safer and better.'
8 Grace themselues. Qui ex aliorum Negotiis, aliquid in se Honoris aut
Vtilitatis transferre, callidi sunt, 'that are cunning to transfer to themselves
some honour or profit from other men's business.'

æt. 52. 1612. ments it is better to choose men of a plainer fort, that are like to doe that, that is committed to them, and to report backe againe faithfully the fuccesse, then those that are cunning to contriue out of other mens busines, somewhat to grace themselues, and will helpe

the matter in report for

fatisfaction fake.

IV.

1625. ments,6 it is better,7 to choose Men of a Plainer Sort, that are like to doe that, that is committed to them, and to report back again faithfully the Successe; Then those, that are Cunning to Contriue out of other Mens Businesse, somewhat to grace themselues;8 And will helpe the Matter, in Report,9 for Satisfaction fake. Viealfo, fuch Persons, as affect the Businesse, wherin they are Employed; For that quickneth10 much; And fuch, as are Fit for the Matter; As Bold Men for Expostulation, Faire spoken Men for Perswasion, Crastie Mensor Enquiry and Observation, Froward and Abfurd Men for Businesse that doth not well beare out it Selfe. 11 Vse also such, as haue beene Luckie, and Preuailed before in Things wherein you haue Emploied them; For that breeds Confidence, and

Help the Matter, in Report. Atque ea, qua referent, verbis emollient, ut impense placeant, 'and smoothe by their words what they report to give

great pleasure.'

10 Quickneth. Industriam acuit, 'sharpeneth industry.'

11 Beare out it Selfe. Qua aliquid iniqui habent, 'which have something unjust about them.'

I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

¶ It is better to found a person with whome one deales a farre off, then to fal vppon the pointe at first, except you meane to furprise him by fome shorte question.

T It is better dealing with men in appetite then with those which are where

they would be.

¶ If a man deale with an other vppon conditions, the starte or first performance is all, which a man can not reasonably demaunde, except either the nature of the thing be fuch which must goe before, or elfe a man can perswade the other partie that he shall still neede him in fome other thing, or elfe that he bee counted the honester man.

¶ All practife is to discouer i or to worke: men difcouer themselves in trust, cover themselves in trust,

It is better to sound a person with whom one deales afarre of, then to fall vppon the pointe at first, except you meane to fupprife him by shorte question.

It is better dealing with men in appetite, then with those which are where

they would be.

If a man deale with an other vponn condicions, the start, or first performance is all, which man cannott reasonably demaunde, except either the nature of the thing be fuch which must goe before, or els a man can persuade the other partie, that he shall still neede him in fome other thing, or els that he be counted the honester Man.

All practize is to discover, or to worke: Men dif-

¹² Striue. Omnem Lapidem movebunt, 'will move every stone.'
13 Sound . . . afar off. Primo leviter degustare, et quasi ex longinquo, 'to try lightly at first, and as if from afar off.'
14 Surprize. Irretire et opprimere, 'entangle and surprise.'
15 Men in Appetite. Qui in Ambitu sunt, 'who are striving for honour.'

It is better to found a person with whom one deales a farre off, then to fall vpon the point at first, except you meane to supprise him by fome short question.

It is better dealing with men in appetite, then with those which are where

they would bee.

If a man deale with an other vpon conditions, the flart or first performance is all, which a man cannot reasonably demand, except either the nature of the thing be fuch which must goe before, or elfe a man can perswade the other party, that hee shall still neede him in fome other thing, or else that he be counted the honester man.

All practife is to discouer or to worke: Men dif-

1625. æt. 65. they will striue¹² to maintaine their Prescription.

It is better, to found¹³ a Person, with whom one Deales, a farre off, then to fall vpon the Point at first; Except you meane to furprize14 him by fome Short Question.

It is better Dealing with Men in Appetite, 15 then with those that are where they would be.

If a man Deale with another vpon Conditions, the Start or First Performance¹⁶ is all; Which a Man cannot reasonably Demaund, except either the Nature of the Thing be fuch, which must goe before; Or Else a Man can perswade the other Partie, that hee shall still need him, in fome other Thing; Or elfe that he be counted the Honester Man. 17

All Practife18 is to Difcouer, or to Worke. Men Difcouer themselues in trust, couer themselues, in Trust, 19

especially upright and truthful.' 18 Practise. Negotiatio, 'negotiation.'

¹⁶ Start or First Performance. Prima veluti Occupatio, aut Possessio Votorum, in præcipuis numeranda, 'the first seizure, as it were, or the possession of one's wishes, is to be considered the chief point.'

17 Honester Man. Pro Homine imprimis integro et verace, 'for a man

¹⁹ In Trust. Vel Animum suam communicando, 'either by communicating their minds.

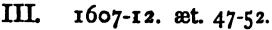
I. & II. 1597-8. æt. 37-8.

in passion, at vnwares and of necessitie, when they would have fomewhat donne, and cannot find If you an apt precept.* would worke any man, you must either know his nature, and fashions and fo leade him, or his ends, and fo winne. or his weakenesses or disaduantages, and fo .awe him, or those that haue interest in him and so gouerne him.

In dealing with cunning persons, we must ever consider their endes to interpret their speeches, and it is good to say little to them, and that which they least looke for.

FINIS.





in passion, att vnawarres and of necessitie when they would have somewhat done, and cannott sinde an apt pretext. If you would worke any Man, you must either knowe his nature, and sashions, and so leade him, or his endes, and so persuade him, or his weakenes, or disadvantages, and so awe him, or those that have interest in him, and so governe them.

In dealing with cunning persons, wee must ever consider theire endes, to interprete theire speaches, and it is good to say litle to them, and that which they least looke for.



^{*} pretext, in 1598 Edition.

* weaknesse, in 1598 Edition.

²⁰ In Passion. Vel cum Ira commoti sunt, nec se bene cohibere sciunt; or when moved with anger and unable to restrain themselves.'

Work any Man. Si quem ad Nutum fingere cupias, ut inde efficias aliquid, 'if you would work any man to your will to gain anything thereby.'

in passion, at vnawares, and of necessity, when they would have fomewhat done, and cannot finde If you an apt pretext. would worke any man, you must either know his nature, and fashions, and so leade him; or his endes, and fo perswade him; or his weaknes or difaduantages, and fo awe him, or those that have interest in him, and so gonerne them.

In dealing with cunning persons, we must ever consider their endes to interpret their speeches; and it is good to say little to them, and that which they least looke for



V. 1625. æt. 65.

In Passion,²⁰ At vnawares; And of Necessitie, when they would have fomewhat done, and cannot finde an apt Pretext. If you woulde Worke any Man, 21 you must either know his Nature, and Fashions, and fo Lead him; Or his Ends, and fo Perswade him: Or his Weaknesse, and Disaduantages, and fo Awe him; or those that have Interest²² in him, and so Gouerne him.

In Dealing with Cunning Persons, we must ever Consider their Ends, 23 to interpret their Speeches; And it is good, to say little to them, and that which they least looke for.

In all Negociations of Difficultie, a Man may not looke, to Sowe and Reape at once; But must Prepare Businesse, and so Ripen it by Degrees.



Those that have Interest. Aut denique Amici ejus, qui plurimum apud eum valent, conciliandi, 'or lastly, you must conciliate his friends, who have the greatest influence with him.'

have the greatest influence with him.'

23 Consider their Ends. Verbis eorum minime credendum, nisi Fines et Intentiones eorum habeas Verborum Interpretes, 'their words must be but little believed, unless you have their ends and intentions to interpret their words.'

SACRED MEDITATIONS.

The Latin Version of 1597. Text I.

PLACED ON OPPOSITE PAGES TO

The English Version of 1598. Text II.



OF THE COLOURS OF GOOD & EVIL.

First Published in 1597. Text I.

Literal corrections of 1598 edition, Text II, are shown between [].



MEDITATIONES SACRÆ.



LONDINI.

Excudebat Iohannes Windet.

1597.

[No separate title.

The text follows on immediately after the Effaies.]

- 1 De operibus Dei, et hominis
- 2 De miraculis Seruatoris
- 3 De columbina innocentia, et serpentina prudentia
- 4 De exaltatione Charitatis
- 5 De menfura curarum
- 6 De Spe terrestri
- 7 De Hypocritis.
- 8 De impostoribus.
- 9 De generibus Imposturæ.
- 10 De Atheismo.
- 11 De Hæresibus.
- 12 De Ecclesia, et Scripturis

Meditationes facræ.

- OF the workes of God and man.
- Of the miracles of our Sauiour.
- Of the innocencie of the Doue, and the wisedome of the Serpent.
- Of the exaltation of Charitie.
- Of the moderation of Cares.
- Of earthly hope.
- Of Hipocrites.
- Of Impostors.
- Of the feuerall kinds of Imposture.
- Of Atheisme.
- Of Heresies.
- Of the Church and the scriptures.



MEDITATIO-

NES SACRÆ.

De operibus Bei et hominis.

Idit Deus omnia quæ fecerant manus eius, et erant bona nimis: homo autem conuerfus, vt videret opera quæ fecerunt manus eius, inuenit quòd omnia erant vanitas, et vexatio fpiritus.

Quare si opera Dei operaberis, sudor tuus vt vnguentum aromatum, et seriatio tua vt Sabathum Dei. Laborabis in sudore bonæ conscientiæ, et seriabere in otwo sauissimæ contemplationis. Si autem post magnalia hominum persequêris, erit tibi in operando slimulus et angustia, et in recordando sassidium, et exprobratio. Et meritò tibi euenit (ô homo) vt cùm tu qui es opus Dei, non retribuas ei beneplacentiam; etiam opera tua reddant tibi fructum similem amaritudinis.

De miraculis Sernatoris.

Bene omnia fecit.

Erus plausus; Deus cùm vniuersa crearet, vidit quòd singula, et omnia erant bona nimis. Deus verbum in miraculis quæ edidit (omne autem miraculum est noua

Of the workes of God and man.



Od beheld all things which his hands had made, and lo they were al pasfing good. But when man turned him about, and tooke a view of the works which his hands had made, he found all to bee vanitie and vexation of spirit: wherefore if thou shalt worke in the workes

of God, thy sweat shall bee as an ointment of odours, and thy rest as the Sabbaoth of God. Thou shalt trauaile in the sweate of a good conscience, and shall keepe holyday in the quietnesse and libertie of the sweetest contemplations. But if thou shalt aspire after the glorious actes of men, thy working shall bee accompanied with compunction and strife, and thy remembrance sollowed with distast and vp-braidings, and iustly doeth it come to passe towardes thee (O man) that since thou which art Gods worke does him no reason in yeelding him well pleasing service, even thine owne workes also should rewarde thee with the like fruit of bitternesse.

Of the miracles of our Saniour.

He hath done all things well.



True confession and applause: God when hee created all things, saw that every thing in particular, and all thinges in generall were exceeding good, God the worde in the miracles which hee wrought (now

euery miracle is a new creation and not according to

creatio, et non ex lege primæ creationis) nil facere voluit, quod non gratiam, et beneficentiam omnind spiraret. Moses edidit miracula, et prosligauit Ægiptios pestibus multis; Elias edidit, et occlusit cœlum ne plureret super terram; et rursus eduxit de cælo ignem dei fu er duces, et cohortes; Elizeus edidit, et euocauit vrsas è deserto quæ laniarent impuberes; Petrus Ananiam facrilegum hypocritam morte; Paulus Elimam magum cæcitate percufsit: Sed nihil huiufmodi fecit Iesus. Descendit super eum spiritus in forma columbæ, de qua dixit, Nescitis cuius spiritus sitis, spiritus Iesu, spiritus columbinus, fuerunt illi ferui dei, tanquam boues dei · triturantes granum, et conculcantes paleam: fed Iefus Agnus dei sine ira, et iudicijs. Omnia eius miracula circa corpus humanum, et doctrina eius circa animan humanam. Indiget corpus hominis alimento, defenjione ab externis, et curâ. Ille multitudinem pifcium in retibus congregauit, vt vberiorem victum hominibus preberet, ille alimentum aquæ in dignius alimentum vini ad exhilarandum cor hominis convertit. Ille ficum, quòd officio fuo ad quod destinatum fuit, ad cibum hominis videlicet non fungeretur, arefieri iufsit. Ille penuriam piscium, et panum ad alendum exercitum populi dilatauit: Ille ventos quòd nauigantibus minarentur corripuit: Ille claudis motum cæcis lumen, mutis fermonem. languidis fanitatem, leprofis carnem mundam, demoniacis animum integrum, mortuis vitam restituit. Nullum miraculum iudicij, omnia beneficentiæ, et circa corpus humanum, nam circa divitias non est dignatus edere miracula; nisi hoc vnicum, vt tributum daretur Cæsari.

the first creation) would do nothing which breathed not towardes men fauour and bountie. Moyses wrought miracles and scourged the Egyptians with many plagues. Elias wrought miracles and shut vp heauen that no raine should fall vppon the earth, and againe brought downe from heauen the fire of God vpon the captaines and their bands. Elizeus wrought also and called Beares out of the desart to deuour yong children. Peter stroke Ananias the sacrilegious hipocrite with present death, and Paule Elimas the sorcerer with blindnesse, but no such thing did Iesus, the spirit of God descended downe vppon him in the forme of a Doue, of whom he said, You know not of what spirit you are. The spirite of Iesus is the spirit of a Doue, those feruants of God were as the Oxen of God treading out the corne and trampling the strawe downe vnder their feete, but Iesus is the Lambe of God without wrath or iudgementes. All his miracles were consumate about mans bodie, as his doctrine respected the soule of man. The body of man needeth these things, sustenance, defence from outward wronges, and medicine, it was he that drew a multitude of fishes into the nets that hee might give vnto men more liberall prouison. He turned water, a lesse worthy nourishment of mans body, into wine a more worthy, that glads the heart of man. He sentenced the Figge tree to wither for not doing that duetie whereunto it was ordayned, which is to beare fruit for. mens foode. He multiplyed the scarsitie of a few loues and fishes to a sufficiency to victuaile an host of people. He rebuked the winds that threatned deftruction to the feafaring men: He restored motion to the lame, light to the blinde, speech to the dumbe, health to the fick, cleannesse to the leprous, a right mind to those that were possessed, and life to the dead No miracle of his is to bee found to have beene of iudgement or reuenge, but all of goodnesse and mercy, and respecting mans bodie; for as touching riches he did not vouchsafe to do any miracle, saue one onely that tribute might be given to Cefar.

Be Columbina innocentia, et Serpentina prudentia.

Non accipit stultus verba prudentiæ, nisi ea dixeris quæ versantur in corde eius.

Vdicio hominis deprauato et corrupto, omnis quæ adhibetur eruditio et perfuasio irrita est, et despectui quæ non ducit exordium a detectione, et representatione malæ com-

plexionis animi fanandi, quem admodum inutiliter adhibetur medicina non pertentato vulnere. homines malitiosi, qui nihil fani cogitant, præoccupant hoc sibi, vt putent bonitatem ex simplicitate morum, ac infcitia quadam, et imperitia rerum humanarum Quare nisi perspexerint ea quæ versantur in corde fuo, id est, penitissimas latebras malitiæ suæ perlustratas esse, ei qui suasum molitur, de ridiculo habent verba prudentiæ; Itaque ei qui ad bonitatem afpirat, non folitariam, et particularem, fed feminalem, et genitiuam quæ alios trahat, debent effe omnind nota, quæ ille vocat Profunda Satanæ; vt loquatur cum auctoritate et insinuatione vera: Hinc est illud, Omnia probate, quod bonum est tenete. Inducens electionem iudiciosam ex generali examinatione: Ex eodem fonte est illud; Estote prudentes sicut serpentes, innocentes sicut columbæ. Non est deus serpentis, nec venenum nec aculeus, qua non probata debeant esse, nec pollutionem quis timeat,

Of the innocency of the Bone, and wisedome of the Serpent.

The foole receyveth not the words of wifedome, except thou difcover to him what he hath in his heart.

O a man of a peruerse and corrupt iudgement all instruction or perswasion is fruitlesse and contemptible, which beginnes not with discouerie, and laying open of the distemper and ill complexion of the mind

which is to be recured as a plaster is vnseasonably applyed before the wound be fearched: for men of corrupt vnderstanding that have lost al found discerning of good and euill, come possest with this preiudicate opinion, that they think al honesty and goodnes proceedeth out of a simplicity of manners, and a kind of want of experience and vnacquaintance with the affaires of the worlde. Therefore except they may perceive that those thinges which are in their hartes, that is to fay, their owne corrupt principles, and the deepest reaches of their cunning and rottennesse to bee throughly founded and knowne to him that goeth about to perfuade with them they make but a play of the words of wisedome. Therefore it behooueth him which afpireth to a goodnes (not retired or particular to himselfe, but a fructifying and begetting goodnesse, which should draw on others) to know those pointes, which he called in the Reuelation the deepes of Sathan. That hee may speake with authoritie and true infinuation. Hence is the precept: Try all things and hold that which is good, which indureth a discerning election out of an examination whence nothing at all is excluded, out of the same fountain ariseth that direction: Be you wise as serpents, and innocent as doues. There are neither teeth nor stinges, nor venime, nor wreathes and fouldes of ferpents which ought not to be all known, and as far as exnam et sol ingreditur latrinas, nec inquinatur, nec quis se deum tentare credat, nam ex præcepto est, Et sufficiens est Deus vt vos immaculatos custodiat.

De exaltatione Charitatis.

Si gauisus sum ad ruinam eius qui oderat me, et exaltaui quòd inuenisset eum malum.

Etestatio Iob; amicos redamare, est charitas publicanorum ex fædere vtilitatis, versus inimicos autem bene animatos effe, ex apicibus iuris Christiani, et imitatio Rurfus tamen huius charitatis complures diuinitatis. funt gradus, quorum primus est inimicis resipiscentibus ignoscere, ac huius quidem charitatis etiam apud generosas feras vmbra quædam, et imago reperitur; nam et leoncs in se submittentes, et prosternentes non vlteriùs sæuire perhibentur. Secundus gradus est inimicis ignoscere, licet fint duriores, et absque reconciliationum piaculis. Tertiu: gradus est non tantum veniam, et gratiam inimicis largiri. fed etiam merita, et beneficia in eos conferre. Sed haben! hi gradus, aut habere possunt, nescio quid potius ex ostentatione, aut faltem animi magnitudine quam ex charitat: pura. Nam cùm quis virtutem ex se emanare, et effluere fentit, fieri potest vt is efferatur, et potius virtutis succ fructu quàm falute, et bono proximi delectetur. Sed ji aliunde malum aliquod inimicum tuum deprehendat, et amination doth lead, tryed: neyther let any man here feare infection or pollution, for the sunne entreth into sinkes and is not defiled. Neyther let any man thinke that herein he tempteth God, for this diligence and generality of examination is commanded, and God is sufficient to preserve you immaculate and pure.

Of the exaltation of Charitie.

If I have reioyced at the overthrow of him that hated me, or tooke pleafure when advertity did befall him.

He detestation or renouncing of Iobe. For a man to loue againe where he is loued, it is the Charitie of Publicanes contracted by mutuall profite, and good offices, but to loue a mans enemies is one of the

cunningest pointes of the lawe of Christ, and an imitation of the divine nature. But yet againe of this charitie there be dyuers degrees, whereof the first is to pardon our enemies when they repent: of which charitie there is a shadow and image euen in noble beaftes, for of Lyons it is a receiued opinion, that their fury and fiercenesse ceaseth towardes any thing that yeeldeth and prostrateth it selfe. The seconde degree is to pardon our enemies, though they persist and without fatisfactions and submissions. The thirde degree is not onely to pardon and forgiue and forbeare our enemies, but to deserue well of them, and to do them good. But all these three degrees either haue or may have in them a certaine bravery and greatnes of the minde, rather then pure Charity: for when a man perceyueth vertue to proceede and flow from himselfe, it is possible that he is pussed vp and takes contentment rather in the fruit of his owne vertue, then in the good of his neighbors: but if any euill ouertake the enemie from any other coast, then from thy selfe, and thou in the inwardest motions of thy tu in interioribus cellulis cordis graueris, et angustieris, nec, quasi dies vltionis, et vindictæ tuæ aduenisset, læteris; hoc ego fastigium, et exaltationem charitatis esse pono.

De mensura curarum.

Sufficit diei malitia fua.

Odus esse in curis humanis debet, alioqui et inutiles sunt, vt quæ animum opprimant, et iudicium consundant, et prosanæ, vt quæ sapiant animum, qui perpetuitatem quan-

dam in rebus mundanis sibi spondeat. Hodierni enim debemus effe ob breuitatem æui, et non crastini, sed vit ille ait, Carpentes diem, Erunt enim futura præsentia vice sua; Quare sufficit sollicitudo præsentium. tamen curæ moderatæ, siue sint æconomicæ, siue publica, sine rerum mandatarum notantur. Sed hic duplex est exceffus. Primus cùm curarum feries in Longitudinem nimiam, et tempora remotiora extendimus, ac si providentiam divinam apparatu nostro ligare possemus, quod femper etiam apud Ethnicos infaustum et insolens suit. Fere enim qui Fortunæ multum tribuerunt, et ad occasiones præsentes alacres, et præsto fuerunt, sælicitate magna vsi funt. Qui autem altum fapientes, omnia curata et meditata habere confisi funt, infortunia subierunt. excessus est, cum in curis immoramur diutius quam opus est ad iustam deliberationem, et ad decretum faciendum. Quis enim nostrum est, qui tantum curet, quantum sufficit, vt fe explicet, vel fefe explicare non poffe iudicet, et hart beest grieued and compassionate and doest no waies insult as if thy dayes of right and reuenge were at the last come. This I interprete to be the height and exaltation of Charity.

Of the moderation of cares.

Sufficient for the day is the euill thereof.

Here ought to bee a m[e]an fure in worldly cares otherwise they are both vnprofitable, as those which oppresse the mind and astonish the judgement, and prophane as those which sauour of a mind which pro-

mileth to it felfe a certain perpetuity in the things of this world: for we ought to be daies-men, and not to morrowes men, confidering the shortnesse of our time, and as he faith: Laying hold on the prefent day: for future thinges shall in their turnes become prefent: therefore the care of the present sufficeth: and yet moderate cares (whether they concerne our particular or the common wealth, or our friends) are not blamed. But herein is a twofold excesse, the one when the chaine or thread of our cares extended and spunne out to an ouer great length, and vnto times too farre off, as if we could bind the divine providence by our prouisions, which euen with the heathen was alwaies found to be a thing infolent and vnluckie, for those which did attribute much to fortune, and were ready and at hand to apprehende with alacritie the present occafions, have for the most part in their actions beene happie. But they who in a compasse wisedome haue entred into a confidence that they had belayed all euents, haue for the most parte encountred missortune. The second excesse is, when we dwel longer in our cares then is requisite for due deliberating or firme resoluing: for who is there amongst vs that careth no more then sufficeth eyther to resolue of a course, or to conclude vpon an non eadem sæpe retractet, et in eodem cogitationum circuitu inutiliter hæreat, et denique euanescat? Quod genus curarum, et divinis et humanis rationibus adversissimum est.

Be Spe terrestri.

Melior est oculorum visio, quam animi progressio.

Enfus purus in singula meliorem reddit conditionem, et politiam mentis, quàm istæ imaginationes et progressiones animi. Natura enim animi humani etiam in in-

genijs grauifsimis est, vt á sensu singulorum statim progrediatur, et faliat, et omnia auguretur fore talia, quale illud est quod præsentem sensum incutit, si boni est fenfus facilis est ad spem indefinitam, si mali est sensus, ad metum: vnde illud, Fallitur augurio spes bona sæpe fuo, et contra illud, Pessimus in dubijs augur. tamen timoris est aliquis fructus, præparat enim tolerantium, et acuit industriam; Non vlla laborum ô virgo noua mî facies inopaue surgit. Omnia præcepi, atque animo mecum ante peregi. Spes vero inutile quiddam videtur. Quorsum enim ista anticipatio boni? Attende, si minus eueniat bonum quam speres, bonum licet sit, tamen quia minùs sit, videtur damnum potiùs quàm lucrum ob excessum spei. Si par et tantum sit, et euentus sit spei æqualis, tamen slos boni per spem decerpitur, et videtur ferè obsoletum, et fastidio magis finitimum. Si maior sit successus spe, videtur aliquid

mpossibilitie, and doth not still chewe ouer the same hinges, and treade a mace in the same thoughtes, and anisheth in them without issue or conclusion, which ind of cares are most contrary to all divine and humane espects.

Of earthly hope.

Better is the fight of the eye, then the apprehension of the mind.

Vre fence receiving every thing acording to the naturall impression makes a better state and government of the mind then these same imaginations and apprehensions of the mind: for the minde of man

noth this nature and propertie, euen in the grauest and nost settled wits, that from the sence of euery particular, it doeth as it were bound and spring forward, and take holde of other matters foretelling to it self that all shal proue like vnto that which beateth vpon the present sence: if the sence be of good, it easily runnes into an vnlimited hope, and into a like seare, when the sence is of euill, according as is said:

The oracles of hopes doth oft abuse.

Ind that contrary,

A frowarde fouthfayer is feare in doubts.

But yet of feare there may bee made some vse, for t prepareth patience, and awaketh industry.

No shape of ill comes new or strange to me.

All forts fet downe, yea and prepared be

But hope seemeth a thing altogether vnprofitable, or to what ende serueth this conceit of good. Conder and note a little if the good fall out lesse then sou hopest, good though it bee, yet lesse because it is, seemeth rather losse then benefite through thy exesse ot hope: if the good proue equal and proportonable in event to thy hope, yet the flower thereof

lucri factum, verum est; sed annon melius fuisset sortem lucrifecisse nihil sperando quam vsuram minus sperando! Atque in rebus secundis ita operatur spes; in malis autem robur verum animi foluit. Nam neque semper spei materia suppetit, et destitutione aliqua vel minima spei, vniuerfa fere firmitudo animi corruit, et minorem efficit dignitatem mentis, cum mala tolleramus alienatione quadam, d errore mentis, non fortitudine et iudicio. Quare fatis leuiter: finxêre Poetæ spem antidotum humanorum morborum esse, quòd dolores eorum mitiget, cùm sit reuera incensie potiùs, et exasperatio, quæ eos multiplicari, et recrudescere faciat. Nihilominus fit, vt plærique hominum imaginationibus spei et progressionibus istis mentis omnind se dedant, ingratique in præterita obliti ferè præfentium semper iuuenes, tantum futuris immineant. Vidi vniuerfos ambulantes fub fole cum adolescente secundo, qui confurget post eum; quod pessimus morbus est, et status mentis insanissimus. Quæras fortasse annon melius sit, cum res in dubia expectatione positæ sint, bene diuinare, et potiùs sperare quam diffidere, cum spes maivrem tranquillitatem animi conciliet. Ego fane in omni mora, et expectatione tranquillum, et non fluctuantem animi statum ex bona mentis politia, et compositione, summum humanæ vitæ firmamentum iudico. Sed eam tranquillitatem, quæ ex spe pendeat, vt leuem et insirmam recufo. Non quia non conueniat tam bona quam maki

by thy hope is gathered, fo as when it comes, the grace of it is gone, and it feemes vsed and therefore fooner draweth on faciety: admit thy fuccesse proue better then thy hope, it is true gaine seemes to bee made: but had it not beene better to have gayned the principall by hoping for nothing then the encrease by hoping for lesse. And this is the operation of Hope in good fortunes, but in missortunes it weakeneth all force and vigor of the mind: for neither is there alwaies matter of hope, and if there be, yet if it faile but in part, it doth wholly ouerthrow the constancie and resolution of the mind, and besides though it doeth carry vs through, yet is it a greater dignitie of mind to beare euilles by fortitude and judgement, then by a kind of abfenting and alienation of the mind from thinges present to thinges future, for that it is to hope. And therefore it was much lightnesse in the Poets to faine Hope to bee as a counterpoyfon of humaine deceases, as to mittigate and asswage the fury and anger of them, whereas in deede it doth kindle and enrage them, and causeth both doubling of them and relapses. Notwithstanding we see that the greatest number of men giue themselues ouer to their imaginations of hope and apprehensions of the mind, in such fort that vngratefull towards thinges past, and in a manner vnmindfull of things prefent, as if they were euer children and beginners, they are still in longing for things to come. I faw all men walking under the funne refort and gather to the fecond person, which was afterwardes to succeede, this is an euill difeafe and a great idlenesse of the mind.

But perhaps you will aske the question, whether it be not better when thinges stand in doubtfull termes, to presume the best, and rather hope wel then distrust, specially seeing that hope doeth cause a greater transmitter.

quillitie of minde.

Surely I doe iudge a state of minde, which in all doubtfull expectations is settled and sloteth not, and doeth this out of a good gouernment and composition of the affections, to be one of the principall supports

ex fana et sobria coniectura prævidere, et præsupponere. vt actiones ad probabilitatem eventuum magis accommodemus; modò sit hoc officium intellectus ac iudicij cum iusta inclinatione affectus. Sed quem ita spes coercuit; vt cùm ex vigilanti et sirmo mentis discursu meliora, vt magis probabilia sibi prædixerit, non in ipsa boni anticipatione immoratus sit, et huiusmodi cogitationi, vt somnio placido indulserit? Atque hoc est quod reddit animum levem, tumidum, inæqualem, peregrinantem. Quare omnis spes in suturam vitam cælestem consumenda est. Hic autem quanto purior sit præsentium sensus absque insectione, et tinctura imaginationis, tanto prudentior et melior anima vitæ summæ brevis spem nos vetat meliorare longam.

De Pypocritis.

Misericordiam volo, et non Sacrificium.

Mnis iactatio Hypocritarum est in operibus primæ tabulæ legis, quæ est de venerationibus Deo debitis. Ratio duplex est, tum quòd huiusmodi opera maiorem habent pompam Sancti-

tatis, tum quòd cupiditatibus eorum minùs aduersentur. Itaque redargutio hypocritarum est, vt ab operibus sacrisicij remittantur ad opera misericordiæ, vnde illud, of mans life: But that affurance and repose of the mind, which onely rides at an cor vpon hope. I do reiect as wauering and weake, not that it is not convenient to foresee and presuppose out of a found and sober coniecture as well the good as the euill, that thereby we may fit out actions to the probabilities and likelihoods of their euent, so that this be a worke of the vnderstanding and iudgement with a due bent and inclination of the affection: But which of you hath fo kept his hopes within limites, as when it is so that you have out of a watchfull and strong discourse of the minde set downe the better fuccesse to bee in apparancy the more likely you haue not dwelt vpon the very muse and forethought of the good to come and giving scope and favour to your minde to fall into fuch cogitations as into a pleafant dreame: and this it is which makes the mind light, frothy, vnequall and wandring: wherefore all our hope is to bee bestowed vpon the heauenly life to come. But here on earth the purer our sence is from the infection and tincture of imagination, the better and the wifer foule.

The fumme of life to little doth amount,
And therefore doth forbidde a longer count.

Of Hipocrites.

I demand mercy and not facrifice.

LI the boasting of the Hipocrite is of the workes of the first table of the law, which is of adoration and dutie towardes God: wherof the reason is double both because such workes have a greater pompe and de-

monstration of holinesse, and also because they do lesse crosse their affections and desires, therefore the way to conuict Hipocrites, is to sende them from the workes of sacrifice to the workes of mercy, whence commeth that saying.

Religio munda et immaculata apud Deum et patrem hæc est, visitare pupillos et viduas in tribulatione eorum, d illud, Qui non diligit fratrem suum quem vidit, Deum quem non vidit quomodo potest diligere? autem altioris et inflatioris Hypocrifiæ seipfos decipientes, et existimantes se arctiore cum Deo conversatione dignos, officia charitatis in proximum vt minora negligunt. Qui error monasticæ vitæ non principium quidem dedit, (nam initia bona fuerunt,) fed exceffum addidit. Recte enim dictum est, Orandi munus magnum esse munus in ecclesia, et ex vsu ecclesiæ est, vt sint cætus hominum á mundanis curis foluti, qui afsiduis et deuotis precibus Deum pro ecclesiæ statu sollicitent. Sed huic ordinationi illa hypocrifia finitima est, nec vniuerfa institutio reprobatur, sed spiritus illi se efferentes cohibentur: nam el Enoch qui ambulauit cum Deo, prophetizauit, vt est apud Iudam, atque fructum fuæ prophetiæ ecclesiam donavit. Et Iohannes Bapt. quem Principem quidam vitæ monasticæ volunt, multo ministerio functus est tum prophetiza tionis, tum Baptizationis. Nam ad alios istos in deum officiosos refertur illa interrogatio, Si iuste egeris, quid donabis Deo, aut quid de manu tua accipiet. opera miserecordiæ sunt opera discretionis hypocritarum. Contra autem fit cum hæreticis, nam vt hypocritæ simulata fua fanclitate verfus Deum, iniurias fuas verfus homines obducunt; ita hæretici moralitate quadæm versus homines, blasphemias suas contra Deum insinuant.

This is pure and imaculate religion with God the father, to visite Orphanes and widowes in their tribulations. And that saying: He that loueth not his brother whome he hath seene, how can hee love God whom hee hath not seene.

Now there is another kind of deeper and more extrauagant hipocrifie, for some deceiuing themselues, and thinking themselues worthy of a more neere accesse and conversation with God do neglect the duties of charity towards their neighbour, as inferior matters, which did not in deede cause originally the beginning of a monastical life (for the beginnings were good) but brought in that excesse and abuse which are followed after: for it is truly faid, That the office of praying is a great office in the Church. And it is for the good of the Church, that there bee conforts of men freed from the cares of this world, who may with dayly and deuout supplications and observances solicite the divine maiestie. for the causes of the Church. But vnto this ordinance that other Hipocrifie is a nigh neyghbour, neyther is the generall institution to be blamed, but those spirites which exalt themselues too high to be refrained: for euen Enoch, which was faide to walke with God, did prophesie, as is deliuered vnto us by Iude, and did indowe the Church with the fruite of his prophesie which heelest: and John Baptist vnto whom they did referre as to the authour of a monasticall life, trauailed and exercised much in the ministerie both of prophesie and baptizing, for as to these others who are so officious towards God, to them belongeth that question: If thou do iustly what is that to God, or what profite doeth he take by thy handes? wherefore the workes of mercy are they which are the workes of distinction, whereby to find out Hypocrites. But with Heretikes it is contrary, for as Hipocrites with their diffembling holinesse towards God doe palliate and couer their iniuries towardes men: So Heretikes by their moralitie and honest carriage towardes men infinuate and make way for their blasphemies against God.

De Impostoribus.

Siue mente excedimus Deo, siue sobrii sumus vobis.

Era est ista essigies, et verum temperamentum viri, cui Religio penitus in præcordijs insedit, et viri operarij Dei. Conuersatio ei quæ cum Deo est, plena excessus, et zeli, et extass.

Hinc gemitus ineffabiles, et exultationes, et raptus spiritus, et agones. At quæ cum hominibus est, plena mansuetudinis, et sobrietatis, et morigerationis; Hinc Omnia omnibus sactus sum, et huiusmodi. Contra sit in hypocritis et impostoribus: Ii enim in populo et ecclesia incendunt se et excedunt, et veluti sacris suroribus assati omnia miscent. Si quis autem eorum solitudines, et separatas meditationes, et cum Deo conversationes introspiciat, deprehendet eas non tantum frigidas, et sine motu, sed plenas malitiæ et sermenti, sobrij Deo, mente excedentis populo.

Be generibus imposturæ.

Deuita prophanas vocum nouitates, et oppositiones falsi nominis scientiæ.

Ineptas et aniles fabulas deuita.

Nemo vos decipiat in sublimitate sermonum.

Res funt fermones, et veluti stili impostura.

Primum genus est eorum qui statim vt aliquam materiam nacti sunt, artem consicuunt, vocabula artis imponunt, omnia in

Of Impostors.

Whether we be transported in mind it is to Godward. Or whether we be fober it is to youwardes.

His is the true image and true temper of a man, and of him that is Gods faithfull workeman, his carriage and conuerfation towards God is full of passion, of zeale, and of tramisses, thence proceed grones

vnspeakeable, and exultinges, likewise in comfort, rauishment of spirit and agonies. But contrariwise his cariage and conversation towards men is sull of mildnesse, sobrietie, and appliable demeanor. Hence is that saying, I am become all things to all men, and such like. Contrary it is with Hipocrites and Imposters, for they in the church and before the people set themselves on fire, and are caried as it were out of themselves, and becomming as men inspired with holy suries, they set heaven and earth together: but if a man did see their solitarie and seperate meditations, and conversation whereunto God is onely prive, he might towards God find them not onely cold and without vertue, but also full of ill nature, and leaven: Sober enough to God, and transported onely towards men.

Of the senerall kinds of Emposture.

Auoid prophane strangenes of wordes and oppositions of knowledge, falfely so called.

Auoid fond and idle fables:

Let no man deceive you by high speech:

Here are three formes of speaking, which are as it were the stile and phrase of imposture: the sirst kind is of them, who as soone as they have gotten any subject or matter, doe straight cast it into an arte,

ex quæstionibus, et responsionibus oppositiones consiciunt; Hinc Scholasticorum quisquiliæ et turbæ. Secundum genus est eorum, qui vanitate ingenij, vt sacri quidem Poetæ, omnem exemplorum varietatem ad mentes hominum tractandas consingunt, vnde vitæ patrum, et antiquorum hæreticorum sigmenta innumera. Tertium genus eorum, qui mysterijs, et grandiloquijs, allegorijs, et allusionibus omnia implet: quod genus mysticum et gnosticum complures hæretici sibi delegerunt. Primum genus sensum et captum hominis illaqueat, secundum allicit, tertium stupesacit, seducunt vero omnia.

De Atheismo.

Dixit insipiens in corde suo; non est Deus.

Rimum dixit in corde, non ait, cogitauit in corde; hoc est, non tam ita sentit penitùs, sed vult hoc credere, quoniam expedire sibil videt, vt non sit Deus omni ratione sibil hoc suadare, el in animum inducere conatur; et tanquàm thema aliquod, vel positum, vel placitum asserere, et astruere, et sirmare studet. Manet tamen ille igniculus luminis primi, quo Divinitatem agnoscimus, quem prorsus extinguere, et stimulum illum ex corde euellere frustrà nititur. Quare

inuenting newe tearmes of art, reducing all into diuifions and distinctions, thence drawing affertions or positions, and so framing oppositions by questions and answeres, hence issueth the copwebbes and clatterings of the Schoolemen.

The feconde kinde is of them who out of the vanity of their wit (as Church poets) doe make and deuise all variety of tales, stories, and examples, whereby they may leade mens mindes to a beliefe, from whence did growe the Legendes and infinite fabulous inuentions and dreames of the ancient heretikes.

The third kinde is of them, who fill mens ears with misteries, high parables, Allegories, and illusions: which misticall and profound forme many of the hereticks have also made choyce of. By the first kind of these, the capacitie and wit of man is settered and entangled: by the seconde it is trayned on and inueigled: by the thirde it is assonished and enchanted, but by every of them the while it is seduced and abused.

Of Atheisme.

The foole hath faid in his heart there is no God.

Irst it is to be noted that the Scripture saith, the foole hath said in his heart, and not he hath thought in his heart, that is to say, he doth not so fully thinke it in judgement, as he hath a good will to bee of

hat beliefe, for feeing it makes not for him that there houlde bee a God, he doeth feeke by all meanes actordingly, to perfuade and resolue himselse, and studes to affirme, proue and verifie it to himselse as some heame or position, al which labor, notwithstanding hat sparkle of our creation light, whereby men acknowedge a Deitie, burneth still within, and in vayne doth te striue vtterly to alienate it or put it out, so that it sout of the corruption of his heart and will, and not tut of the naturall apprehension of his braine and con-

ex malitia voluntatis fuæ, et non ex nativo fenfu, et iudicio hoc fupponit, vt ait comicus Poeta. Tunc animus meus accessit ad meam sententiam, quasi ipse alter esset ab animo suo. Itaque Atheista magis dixit in corde, quàm fentit in corde, quòd non sit Deus. Secundo, dixit in corde, non ore locutus est, sed notandum est ha metu legis et famæ sieri, Nam vt ait ille, Negare Deos difficile est in concione populi, fed in concessu samiliari expeditum. Nam si hoc vinculum tollatur ê medw. non est hæresis quæ maiore studio se pandere, et spargere. et multiplicare nitatur quam Atheismus. Nec videas eos qui in hanc mentis infaniam immersi funt, aliul ferè spirare, et importune inculcare, quam verba atheismi, vt in Lucretio Epicureo, qui ferè suam in Religionem in uectiuam singulis alijs subiectis intercalarem facit. Ratio videtur effe, quòd Atheista cum sibi non satis acquiesat æstuans, nec sibi satisferedens, et erebra suæ opinionis de liquia in interioribus patiens ab aliorum affenfu refocillari cupit. Nam recte dictum est. Qui alteri opinionem approbare fedulò cupit, ipse diffidit. Tertiò insipiens est, qui hoc in corde dixit, quod verissimum est, non tantum quòd divina non fapiat, sed etiam secundum hominem. Primo enim ingenia, quæ funt in Athas mum proniora, videas ferè leuia, et dicacia, et audacula. et infolentia: eius denique compositionis, quæ prudentia. et gravitati morum adversissima est. Secundò inter vires politicos, qui altioris ingenij et latioris cordis fuerunt.

ceit, that he doth fet downe his opinion, as the comicall Poet faith: Then came my mind to bee of mine opinion, as if himselse and his mind had beene two divers things: Therefore the Atheist hath rather saide and helde it in his heart, then thought or believed in his heart that there is no God. Secondly it is to be obserued, that hee hath faid in his heart, and not spoken it with his mouth. But again you shall note, that this fmothering of this perswasion within the hart commeth to passe for feare of gouernment and of speech amongst men: for as he faith, To deny God in a publike argument were much, but in a familiar conference were currant enough. For if this bridle were removed, there is no herefie which would contende more to spread and multiply, and diffeminate it felf abroad then atheisme, neither shall you see those men which are drencht in this frensie of minde to breath almost any thing els, or to inculcate euen without occasion, any thing more then speech tending to Atheisme, as may appeare in Lucresias the Epicure, who makes of his inuectiues against religion, as it were a burthen or verse of returne to all his other discourses: the reason feemes to bee, for that the Atheist not relying sufficiently vpon him felf, floting in mind, and vnsatisfied and induring within many faintings, and as it were fals of his opinion, defires by other mens opinions agreeing with his to be recourred and brought againe: for it is a true faying:

Who fo laboureth earnestly to prove an opinion to an

other, himfelfe distrusts it.

Thirdly, it is a foole that hath fo faide in his heart, which is most true, not onely in respect that he hath no taste in those thinges which are supernatural and divine: but in respect of humane and civile wisedome: for first of all, if you marke the wits and dispositions which are inclyned to Atheisme, you shall finde them light, scoffing, impudent, and vayne: briefly, of such a constitution, as is most contrarie to wisedome and morall gravitie. Secondly, amongst states men and

Religionem non arte quadam ad populum adhibuerunt, fed interiore dogmate coluêre, vt qui prouidentiæ at fortunæ plurimum tribuerint. Contra qui artibus fuis, et industrijs, et causis proximis, et apparentibus omnia ascripserunt, et vt ait Propheta, Retibus suis immolarunt, pusilli suerunt politici, et circumforanei, et magnitudinis actionum in capaces. Tertid, in physicis et illud assirmo parum Philosophiæ naturalis, et in ea progressum liminarem ad Atheismum opiniones inclinare. Contra multum Philosophiæ naturalis, et progressum in ea penetrantem ad Religionem animos circumserre. Quare atheismus stultitiæ et inscitiæ vbique conuictus esse videtur, vt merito sit dictum, Insipientium non est Deus.

Be Hæresibus.

Erratis nescientes scripturas, neque potestatem Dei.

Anon iste mater omnium canonum aduersus hæreses. Duplex erroris causa, ignoratio voluntatis Dei, et ignoratio, vel leuior contemplatio potestatis dei. Voluntas dei reuelatur magis per scripturas scrutamini, potestas magis per creaturas contemplamini. Ita asserenda plenitudo potestatis Dei, ne maculemus voluntatem. Ita asserenda bonitas voluntatem.

politikes, those which have been of greatest depths, and compasse, and of largest and most vniuersall vnderstanding, have not onely in cunning made their profit in seeming religious to the people, but in truth have beene toucht with an inwarde sence of the knowledge of Dyetie, as they which you shall evermore note to have attributed much to fortune and providence.

Contrariwife, those who ascribed all thinges to their owne cunninges and practises, and to the immediate and apparent causes: and as the Prophet saith, have sacrificed to their owne nets, have been alwaies but petty counterfait states men, and not capable of the greatest actions. Lastly, this I dare affirme in knowledge of nature, that a little naturall philosophie: and the first entrance into it doth dispose the opinion to Atheisme: But on the other side much naturall philosophie, and wading deepe into it, will bring about mens mindes to religion: wherefore Atheisme euery way seems to be ioined and combined with folly and ignorance, see that nothing can bee more iustly allotted to be the saying of sooles then this, there is no God.

Of Beresies.

You erre not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God.

His Cannon is the mother of al Canons against Heresie: The causes of errour are two: the ignorance of the wil of God, and the ignorance or not sufficient consideration of his power, the will of God is

more reuealed by the Scriptures, and therefore the precepte is, Search the Scriptures: the will [? power] of God is more reuealed by the creatures, and therefore the precept is: Beholde and consider the creatures: So is the fulnesse of the power of God to bee affirmed,

tatis, ne minuamus potestatem. Itaque Religio vera sita est in mediocritate inter superstitionem cum hæresibus fuperstisiosis ex vna parte, et Atheismum cum hæresibus prophanis ex altera. Superstitio repudiata luce scripturarum, seque dedens traditionibus prauis vel apocryphis. et nouis reuelationibus, vel falsis interpretationibus scripturarum multa de voluntate Dei fingit, et somniat, à scripturis devia et aliena. Atheismus autem et Theomachia contra potestatem Dei infurgit, et tumultuatur, verbo dei non credens, quod voluntatem eius reuelat ob incredulitatem potestatis eius, cui omnia funt possibilia. Hæreses autem quæ ex isto sonte emanant, grauioris videntur cæteris. Nam et in politijs atrocius est potestatem et maiestatem Dei minuere, quam famam principis, notare. Hæresium autem quæ potestatem Dei minunt, præter Atheismum purum tres sunt gradus, habentque vnum et idem mysterium: (Nam omnis antichristianismus operatur in mysterio, id est sub imagine boni) hoc ipfum, vt voluntatem dei ab omni afpersione malitiæ liberet. Primus gradus est eorum, qui due principia constituunt paria, ac inter se pugnantia, et contraria, vnum boni, alterum mali. Secundus gradus est eorum, quibus nimiùm læfa videtur maiestas Dei in constituendo aduersus eum principio affirmativo et activo. Quare exturbata tali audacia, nihilo minùs inducunt contra deum principium negatiuum et priuatiuum. Nan: volunt esse opus ipsius materiæ et creaturæ internum, a

wee make no imputation to his will, fo is the odnesse of the will of God to be affirmed, as we ake no derogation from his power: Therefore true ligion feated in the meane betwixt Superstition, with perstitious heresies on the one side, and Atheisme, ith prophane herefies on the other: Superstition iecting the light of the scriptures, and giving of it If ouer to vngrounded traditions and writinges subtfull and not Canonicall, or to newe reuelations, to vntrue interpretations of the Scriptures themlues doth forge and dreame many thinges of the vvill God, which are strange and farre distant from the ue sence of the scriptures: But Atheisme and Theoachie rebelleth and mutineth against the power of od, giuing no faith to his worde, which reuealeth is will, vpon a discredit and vnbeliefe of his power, whom all thinges are possible. Now those heresies hich spring out of this fountain seeme more haynous nen the other: for euen in ciuile gouernment it is eld an offence in a higher degree to deny the power and authority of a prince, then to touch his honour nd fame. Of these heresies which derogate from the www of God beside plain atheisme, there are three egrees, and they have all one and the same mistery: r all Antichristianity worketh in a misterie, that is, nder the shadow of good, and it is this to free and eliuer the will of God from all imputation and afperon of ill. The first degree is of those who make and ppose two principles contrary and fighting one gainst the other, the one of good, the other of euill. The fecond degree is of them to whome the Maiestie God feemes too much wronged in fetting vppe id erecting against him another adverse and opposite inciple, namely such a principle as should bee active

affirmative, that is to fay, cause or fountaine of the effence or being: therefore rejecting all such premption they doe neverthelesse bring in against God: principle negative and privative, that is a cause of

natiuum, et substantiuum, vt ex se vergat et relabatur ad confusionem, et ad nihilum, nescientes eiusdem esse omnipotentiæ ex aliquo nihil facere, cuius ex nihilo aliquid. Tertius gradus est eorum, qui arctant et restringunt opinionem, priorem tantùm ad actiones humanas, qua participant ex peccato, quas volunt substantiue, absque nexu aliquo caufarum, ex interna voluntate et arbitrio humano pendere, statuuntque latiores terminos scientia Dei, quam potestatis, vel potius eius partis potestatis Da, (nam et ipfa scientia potestas est) qua scit quam eius, quâ mouet, et agit, vt præsciat quædam otiose, quæ non prædestinet et præordinet. Et non absimile est sigmente, quod Epicurus introduxit in Democritismum, vt fatum olleret, et fortunæ locum daret, declinationem videlict atomi, quod semper à prudentioribus inanissimum commentum habitum est. Sed quicquid a deo non pendet, v autore, et principio, per nexus et gradus fubordinatos id loco Dei erit, et nouum principium, et Deaster quidem. Quare meritò illa opinio respuitur, vt læsio et diminutir maiestatis et potestatis Dei. Et tamen admodum rest dicitur, quòd Deus non sit author mali, non quia non author, fed quia non mali.

not being and subsisting, for they will haue it to be an inbred proper worke, and nature of the matter and creature it selfe, of it selfe to turne aganie and resolue into confusion and nothing, not knowing that it is an effect of one and the same omnipotencie, to make nothing of somewhat, as to make somewhat of no-The third degree is of those, who abridge and restraine the former opinion onely to those humane actions which pertake of sinne: which actions, they will have to depende substantiuely and originally, and without any fequele or fubordination of causes vpon the will, and make and fet downe and appoint larger limites of the knowledge of God then of his power, or rather of that parte of Gods power (for knowledge it felfe is a power whereby he knoweth) then of that by which hee moueth and worketh, making him foreknow some thinges idlie and as a looker on, which hee doeth not predestinate nor ordayne: Not vnlike to that deuise which Epicurus brought into Democritus opinion, to take away destinie and make way to Fortune, to witte, the start and slippe of Attemus, which alwaies of the wifer fort was rejected as a most friuolous shift. But whatsoeuer depends not of God, as Author and Principle by inferiour linkes and degrees, that must needes bee in place of God, and a new principle, and a certaine vsurping God: wherefore worthely is that opinion refused as an indignitie and derogation to the maiestie and power of God, and yet it is most truely affirmed, that God is not the author of euill, not because he is not author, but because not as of euill.

De ecclesia et Scripturis.

Proteges eos in tabernaculo tuo a contradictione linguarum.

Ontradictiones linguarum voique occurrunt extra tabernaculum Dei. Quare quocunque te verteris, exitum controuersiarum non reperies nist huc te receperis. Dices,

verum est, nempe in vnitatem ecclesiæ. Sed adverte. Erat in tabernaculo Arca, et in Arca Testimonium vel tabulæ legis. Quid mihi narras corticem Tabernaculi, sine nucleo testimonij? Tabernaculum ad custodiendum et tradendum testimonium erat ordinatum. Eodem modo et ecclesiæ custodia, et traditio per manus scripturarum demandata est, sed anima Tabernaculi est testimonium.

FINIS.

Of the Church and the Scriptures.

Thou shalt protect them in thy tabernacle, from the contradiction of tongues.

He contradiction of tongues doeth every where meet with vs out of the tabernacle of God, therefore whither foeuer thou shalt turne thy selfe, thou shalt find no ende of controversies, except thou with-

draw thy selfe into that tabernacle, thou wilt say, t'is true, and that it is to bee vnderstood of the vnitie of the church: But heare and note, there was in the tabernacle the Arke, and in the Arke the testimony or tables of the lawe: what doest thou tell me of the huske of the tabernacle without the kernel of the testimonie. The tabernacle was ordained for the keeping and deliuering ouer from hand to hande of the testimony. In like manner the custodie and passing ouer of the scriptures is committed vnto the

Church. But the life of the tabernacle is the testimony.

[A PRELIMINARY NOTE TO

THE COLOURS OF GOOD AND EVIL.

T would feem that among his early studies, Bacon was led to enquire into the nature and powers of human Imagination as a means for obtaining knowledge. What flesh and blood are to the Body, what love and friendship are

to the Soul; that is imagination to the Spirit of man. It is a warm, exhilarating, active fource of Thought. By it we can realize perfection, beauty, and felicity never to be feen by mortal eyes. It is the creative power in Poetry, Fiction, Painting, and in much of the Fine Arts. It is a comfort to Man; both as an Earthly Hope in the midst of his troubles, and as a recreation from the toil of his other faculties.

Imagination as a Guide in the establishing of his New Philosophy, Bacon utterly rejected. Yet it is not to be universally put aside. We could not do so if we would. The intuition of women often outstrips the reason of men in true judgment; and God, who has honoured this faculty as He has done the rest, has taught truth to man through his imagination, in the sublime visions of the Old and New Testament.

We must think to what an abuse, Imagination had been substituted for Enquiry down to Bacon's time; in considering this description.

There is yet a much more important and profound kinde of Fallacies in the Minde of Man. . . . The force whereof is such, as it doth not dazle, for snare the vnderstanding in some particulars, but doth more generally, and sinwardly infect and corrupt the state thereof. For the mind of Man is farretfrom the Nature of a cleare and equall glasse, wherein the beames of things should reflect according to their true incidence; Nay, it is rather like an inchanted glasse, full of superstition and Imposture, if it bee not delivered and reduced. Adv. of Learning. ii. fol. 55. Ed. 1605.

Nothing can be stronger than these Meditations of 1597—

Pure sence receiving every thing according to the naturall impression makes a better state and government of the mind then these same imaginations and apprehensions of the mind: for the minde of man hath this nature and propertie, even in the gravest and most setled wits, that from the sence of every particular, it doeth as it were bound and spring forward, and take holde of other matters fortelling to it self that all shal prove like vnto that which beateth vpon the present sense.

That assurance and repose of the mind which only rides at ancor vpon hope. I do reject as wavering and weake.

Here on earth the purer our sence is from the infection and tincture of imagination, the better and wiser soule. See pp. 111-115.

And he sums up his judgement on this faculty in the Apothegm Heraclitus. Dry Light is the best Soul.

2. Bacon, in the fecond book of The Advancement of Learny also tells us.

The dutie and Office of Rhetoricke is, To apply Reason to Imagination, the better moouing of the will; For wee see Reason is disturbed in the dministration thereof by three meanes; by Illaqueation [i.e. Entangle-ent], or Sophisme [i.e. Falacy], which pertaines to Logicke: by Imaginam or Impression, which pertaines to Rhetoricke, and by Passion or Affectm, which pertaines to Moralitie. And as in Negotiation with others; men e wrought by cunning, by Importunitie, and by vehemencie; So in this egotiation within our selves, men are vndermined by Inconsequences, illicited and importuned, by Impressions or Observations: and transported y Passions. Fol. 66. Ed. 1605.

There is a seducement that worketh by the strength of the Impression, and not by the subtiltie of the Illaqueation, not so much perplexing the leason, as ouer-ruling it by the power of the *Imagination*. Fol. 55. Ed. 65.

Colours of Good and Evil are Impressions perplexing and wer ruling the Reason by the power of the Imagination. Being food in the cases where they hold true; and Evil where such impressions are fallacious.

3. Bacon was further of this opinion.

I doe not finde the Wisedome and diligence of Aristotle well poursued, who began to make a collection of the popular signes and colours of good and evil, both simple and comparative, which are as the Sophismes of thetoricke, (as I touched before.) For Example.

SOPHISMA.

[The Sophism.]

Quod laudatur, bonum; Quod vituperatur, malum. [What is praised is good: what is abused is bad.]

REDARGVTIO. [The Confutation].

Laudat venales, qui vult extrudere merces.

[He who wishes to sell his goods, praises them.]

Malum est, Malum est (inquit Emptor) sed cum recesserit, tum loriabitur.

[It is naught, it is naught, sayth the buyer: but when he is gone his way, hen he boasteth. PROVERBS XX. 14.]

The defects in the labour of Aristotle are three; One, that there be but few of many; another, that their *Elenches* are not annexed; and the third, hat he conceived but a part of the vse of them: for their vse is not onely in robation, but much more in Impression. For many fourmes are equall in *lignification*, which are differing in *Impression*: as the difference is great n the piercing of that which is sharpe, and that which is flat, though the trength of the percussion be the same. *Adv. of Learning. Bk.* ii. fol. 68. Ed. 1605.

4. To these three quotations; we can add in surther elucidation of the intention of this fragment, a copy of its dedication while in a manuscript state. We give it in the modernized form given by Mr. Spedding. (Works. vii. 70. Ed. 1858.)

Mr. Francis Bacon of The Colours of Good and Evil, to the Lord Mountjoye.

I send you the last part of the best book of Aristotle of Stagira, who (25 your Lordship knoweth) goeth for the best author. But (saving the civil respect which is due to a received estimation) the man being a Grecian and of a hasty wit, having hardly a discerning patience, much less a teaching patience, both so delivered the matter, as I am glad to do the part of a good househen, which without any strangeness will sit upon pheasants' eggs. And yet perchance some that shall compare my lines with Aristotle's lines, will muse by what art, or rather by what revelation I could draw these conceits But I, that should know best, do freely acknowledge out of that place. that I had my light from him; for where he gave me not matter to perfect, at the least he gave me occasion to invent. Wherein as I do him right, being myself a man that am as free from envying the dead in contemplation, as from envying the living in action or fortune: so yet nevertheless still I say, and I speak it more largely than before, that in perusing the writings of this person so much celebrated, whether it were the impediment of his wit, or that he did it upon glory and affectation to be subtile, as one that if he had seen his own conceits clearly and perspicuously delivered, perhaps would have been out of love with them himself; or else upon policy to keep himself close, as one that had been a challenger of all the world, and had raised infinite contradiction: to what cause soever it is to be ascribed, I do not find him to deliver and unwrap himself well of that he seemeth to conceive, nor to be master if his own knowledge. Neither do I for my part also, (though I have brough: in a new manner of handling this argument to make it pleasant and lightsome,) pretend so to have overcome the nature of the subject, but that the full understanding and use of it will be somewhat dark, and best pleasing the tastes of such wits as are patient to stay the digesting and soluting un: themselves of that which is sharp and subtile. Which was the cause, joined with the love and honour which I bear to your Lordship, as the person I know to have many virtues and an excellent order of them, which moved me to dedicate this writing to your Lordship; after the ancient manner, choosis; both a friend, and one to whom I conceive the argument was agreeable The original transcript is Harl. MS. 6797, art. 6.]

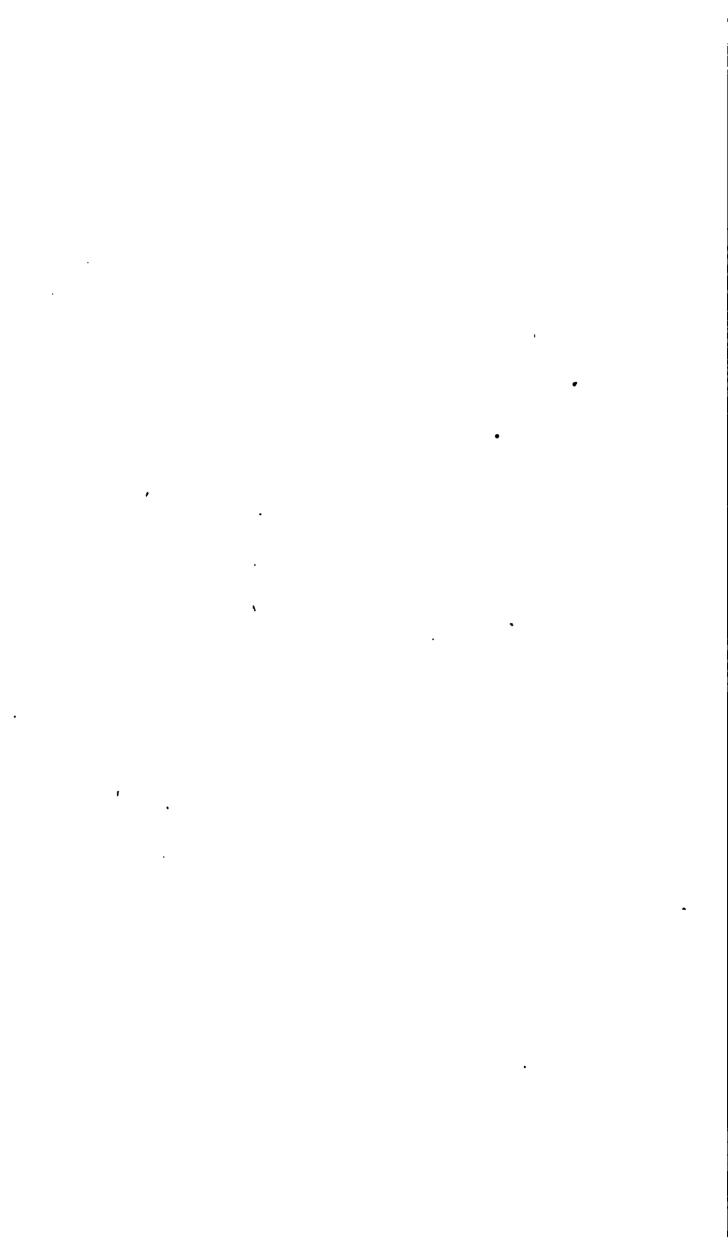




O F

The Coulers of good and euill a fragment.





- I CVi ceteræ partes vel sectæ secundas vnanimiter deserunt, cum singulæ principatum sibi vindicent melior reliquis videtur. Nam primas quæque ex zelo videtur sumere, secundas autem ex vero tribuere.
- ² Cuius excellentia vel exuperantia melior id toto genere melius.
- 3 Quod ad veritatem refertur maius est quam quod ad opinionem. Modus autem, et probatio eius quod ad opinionem pertinet hæc est. Quod quis si clam putaret fore facturus non esset.
- 4 Quod rem integram servat bonum quod sine receptu est malum. Nam se recipere non posse impotentiæ genus est, potentia autem bonum.
- 5 Quod ex pluribus constat, et divisibilius est maius quàm quod ex paucioribus et magis vnum: nam omnia per partes considerata maiora videntur; quare et pluralitas partium magnitudinem præ se fert, fortiùs autem operatur pluralitas partium si ordo absit, nam inducit similitudinem infiniti, et impedit comprehensionem.
- 6 Cuius priuatio bona, malum, cuius priuatio mala bonum.
- 7 Quod bono, vicinum bonum, quod a bono remotum malum.
- 8 Quod quis culpa fua contraxit, maius malum, quod ab externis imponitur minus malum.
- 9 Quod opera, et virtute nostra partum est, maius bonum, quod ab alieno benesicio, vel ab indulgentia fortunæ delatum est, minus bonum.
- 10 Gradus privationis maior videtur quàm gradus diminutionis, et rursus gradus inceptionis maior videtur quàm gradus incrementi.



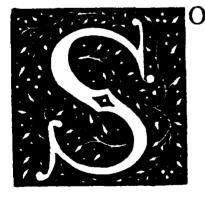
N deliberatives the point is what is good and what is euill, and of good what is greater, and of euill what is the lesse. So that the perswaders labor is to

make things appeare good or euill, and that in higher or lower degree, which as it may be perfourmed by true and folide reasons, so it may be represented also by coulers, popularities and circumstances, which are of fuch force, as they sway the ordinarie iudgement either of a weake man, or of a wife man, not fully and confiderately attending and pondering the matter. Besides their power to alter the nature of the subject in appearance, and so to leade to error, they are of no leffe vse to quicken and strengthen the opinions and perswasions which are true: for reasons plainely deliuered, and alwaies after one manner especially with fine and fastidious mindes, enter but heavily and dully; whereas if they be varyed and haue more life and vigor put into them by these fourmes and infinuations, they cause a stronger apprehension, and many times suddainely win the minde to a refolution. Lastly, to make a true and safe iudgement, nothing can be of greater vse and defence to the minde, then the discovering and reprehension of these coulers, shewing in what cases they hold, and in what cases they deceive: which as it cannot be done, but out of a very vniuerfall knowledge of the nature of things, fo being perfourmed, it so cleareth mans judgement and election, as it is the lesse apt to slide into any error.



A Table of Coulers, or apparances of good and euill, and their degrees as places of perswasion and disswasion; and their seuerall fallaxes, and the elenches of them.

[1] Cui ceteræ partes vel fectæ fecundas vnanimiter deferunt, cum singulæ principatum sibi vindicent melior reliquis videtur, nam primas quæque ex zelo videtur sumere, secundas autem ex vero et merito tribuere.



Cicero went about to proue the Secte of Academiques which sufpended all asseueration, for to be the best, for sayth he, aske a Stoicke which Philosophie is true, he will preferre his owne: Then aske him which approcheth next the truth, he will confesse the Academiques. So

cleale with the *Epicure* that will scant indure the *Stoicke* to be in sight of him, as soone as he hath placed himselfe, he will place the *Academiques* next him.

So if a Prince tooke divers competitors to a place, and examined them feuerallie whome next themselves they would rathest commend, it were like the ablest man should have the most second votes.

The fallax of this couler hapneth oft in respect

of enuy, for men are accustomed after themselues and their owne saction to incline to them which are softest and are least in their way in despite and derogation of them that hold them hardest to it. So that this couler of melioritie and preheminence is oft a signe of eneruation and weakenesse.

2 Cuius excellentia vel exuperantia melior, id toto genere melius.

Ppertaining to this are the fourmes; Let vs not wander in generalities: Let vs compare particular with particular, etc. This appearance though it seeme of strength and rather Logicall then Rhetoricall, yet is

very oft a fallax.

Sometimes because some things are in kinde very casuall, which if they escape, proue excellent, so that the kinde is inserior, because it is so subject to perill, but that which is excellent being proued is superior, as the blossome of March and the blossome of May, whereof the French verse goeth.

Bourgeon de Mars enfant de Paris, Si vn eschape, il en vaut dix.

So that the blossome of May is generally better then the blossome of March; and yet the best blossome of March is better then the best blossome of May.

Sometimes, because the nature of some kindes is to be more equall and more indifferent, and not to have very distant degrees, as hath bene noted in the warmer clymates, the people are generally more wise, but in the Northerne climate the wits of chiefe are greater. So in many Armies, if the matter should be tryed by duell betweene two Champions, the victory should go on one side, and yet if it be tryed by the grosse, it would go of the other side; for excellencies go as it were by chance, but kindes go by a more certaine nature, as by discipline in warre.

Lastly, many kindes have much refuse which counteruale that which they have excellent; and therefore generally mettall is more precious then stone, and yet a dyamond is more precious then gould.

3 Quod ad veritatem refertur maius est quam quod ad opinionem. Modus autem et probatio eius quod ad opinionem pertinet, hæc est, quod quis si clam putaret fore, facturus non effet.

1597.

O the Epicures say of the Stoicks selicitie placed in vertue, That it is like the selicitie of a Player, who if he were lest of his Auditorie and their applause, he would streight be out of hart and countenance,

and therefore they call vertue Bonum theatrale. of Riches the Poet fayth:

> Populus me sibilat, At mihi plaudo.

And of pleasure.

Grata fub imo

Gaudia corde premens, vultu simulate pudorem.

The fallax of this couler is somewhat subtile, though the aunswere to the example be readie, for vertue is not chosen propter auram popularem. But contrariwise, Maxime omnium teipfum reuerere, So as a vertuous man will be vertuous in folitudine, and not onely in theatro, though percase it will be more strong by glory and fame, as an heate which is doubled by reflexion; But that denieth the supposition, it doth not reprehend the fallax whereof the reprehension is a low [Alow], that vertue (fuch as is ioyned with labor and conflict) would not be chosen but for fame and opinion, yet it followeth not that the chiefe motive of the election should not be reall and for it selse, for same may be onely causa impulsiua, and not causa constituens, or efficiens. As if there were two horses, and the one would doo better

without the spurre then the other: but agayne, the other with the spurre would farre exceede the doing of the former, giuing him the spurre also, yet the latter will be judged to be the better horse, and the fourme as to say, Tush, the life of this horse is but in the fpurre, will not serue as to a wife iudgemente: For fince the ordinary instrument of horsemanship is the spurre, and that it is no manner of impediment nor burden, the horse is not to bee accounted the lesse of. which will not do well without the spurre, but rather. the other is to be reckoned a delicacie then a vertue. fo glory and honor are as spurres to vertue: although vertue would languish without them, yet fince they be alwayes at hand to attend vertue, vertue is not to be fayd the lesse, chosen for it selfe, because it needeth the spurre of same and reputation: and therefore that position, Nota eius rei quod propter opinionem et non propter veritatem eligitur, hæc est quod quis si clam putaret fore facturus non effet is reprehended.

4 Quod rem integram servat bonum, quod sine receptu est malum. Nam se recipere non posse impotentia genus est, potentia autem bonum.

Ereof Aesope framed the Fable of the two Frogs that consulted together in time of drowth (when many plashes that they had repayred to were dry) what was to be done, and the one propounded to goe

downe into a deepe Well, because it was like the water would not sayle there, but the other aunswered, yea but if it do saile how shall we get vp againe? And the reason is, that humane actions are so vn-certayne and subjecte to perills, as that seemeth the best course which hath most passages out of it.

Appertaining to this perswasion the sourmes are, you shall ingage your selfe. On the other side, Tantum quantum voles sumes ex fortuna, you shall keepe the

atter in your owne hands. The reprehension of it, That proceeding and resoluing in all actions is ressarie: for as he sayth well, Not to resolue, is to relue, and many times it breedes as many necessities, and ingageth as farre in some other fort as to resolue. So it is but the couetous mans disease translated sto power, for the couetous man will enioy nothing ecause he will have his full store and possibilitie to nioy the more, so by this reason a man should execute nothing because hee should be still indifferent at libertie to execute any thing. Besides necessive and this same iasta est alea hath many times and duantage, because it awaketh the powers of the ninde, and strengtheneth indeuor. Cateris pares recessitate certe superiores estis.

Quod ex pluribus constat et divisibilius est maius quam quod ex paucioribus et magis vnum: nam omnia per partes considerata maiora videntur; quare et pluralitas partium magnitudinem præ se fert; fortius autem operatur pluralitas partium si ordo absit, nam inducit similitudinem infiniti et impedit comprehensionem.

His couler feemeth palpable, for it is not pluralitie of partes without maioritie of partes that maketh the totall greater, yet neuerthelesse it often carries the minde away, yea, it deceyueth the sence, as it

eemeth to the eye a shorter distance of way if it be all dead and continued, then if it haue trees or buildings or any other markes whereby the eye may deuide to the solution of the solution. And this maketh the greater hew if it be done without order, for consuson maketh

things muster more, and besides what is set downe by order and division, doth demonstrate that nothing is lest out or omitted, but all is there; whereas if it be without order, both the minde comprehendeth lesse that which is set downe, and besides it leaueth a sufpition, as if more might be sayde then is expressed.

This couler deceyueth, if the minde of him that to be perswaded, do of it selfe ouer-conceiue or preiudge of the greatnesse of any thing, for then the breaking of it will make it feeme leffe, because it maketh it appeare more according to the truth, and therefore if a man be in sicknes or payne, the time will feeme longer without a clocke or howre-glaffe then with it, for the minde doth value every moment, and then the howre doth rather summe vp moments then deuide the daye. So in a dead playne, the way feemeth the longer, because the eye hath preconceyued it shorter then the truth: and the frustrate ing of that maketh it seeme longer then the truth Therefore if any man haue an ouergreat opinion of any thing, then if any other thinke by breaking it into feuerall confiderations, he shall make it seeme greater to him, he will be deceyued, and therefore in fuch cases it is not safe to deuide, but to extoll the entire still in generall.

An other case wherein this couler deceyueth, is when the matter broken or deuided is not comprehended by the sence or minde at once in respect of the distracting or scattering of it, and being intire and not deuided, is comprehended, as a hundred pounde in heapes of siue poundes will shewe more, then it one grosse heape, so as the heapes be all vppo one table to be seene at once, otherwise not, of slowers growing scattered in divers beds will shew more then if they did grow in one bed, so as all those beds be within a plot that they be object to view a once, otherwise not: and therefore men whose living lieth together in one Shire, are commonly counted greater landed then those whose livings are dispersed

though it be more, because the notice and comprehension.

A third case wherein this couler deceiueth, and it is not fo properly a cafe or reprehension as it is a counter couler being in effect as large as the couler it selse, and that is, Omnis compositio indigentiæ cuiusdam videtur effe particeps, because if one thing would serue the turne it were euer best, but the desect and impertections of things hath brought in that help to piece them vp as it is fayd, Martha Martha attendis ad plurima, vnum sufficit. So likewise hereupon Aesope framed the Fable of the Fox and the Cat, whereas the Fox bragged what a number of shifts and deuises he had to get from the houndes, and the Catte faide she had but one, which was to clime a tree, which in proofe was better worth then all the rest, whereof the prouerbe grew, Multa nouit Vulpes sed Felis vnum magnum. And in the morall of this fable it comes likewise to passe: That a good sure friend is a better helpe at a pinch, then all the stratagems and pollicies of a mans owne wit. So it falleth out to bee a common errour in negociating, whereas men haue many reasons to induce or persuade, they striue commonly to vtter and vse them all at once, which weakeneth For it argueth as was faid, a needines in euery of the reasons by it selfe, as if one did not trust to any of them, but fled from one to another, helping himselfe onely with that. Et quæ non profunt singula multa iuuant. Indeed in a fet speech in an assemblie it is expected a man shoulde vse all his reasons in the case hee handleth, but in private perswasions it is alwayes a great errour.

A fourth case wherein this colour may be reprehended is in respecte of that same vis unita fortior, according to the tale of the French King, that when the Emperours Amb[assador] had recited his maysters stile at large which consistent of many countries and dominions: the French King willed his Chancellor or other minister to repeate and say ouer Fraunce as many

times as the other had recited the feuerall dominions, intending it was equivalent with them all, and beside more compacted and vnited.

There is also appertayning to this couler an other point, why breaking of a thing doth helpe it, not by way of adding a shew of magnitude vnto it, but a note of excellency and raritie; whereof the sources are. Where shall you finde such a concurrence? Great but not compleat, for it seemes a lesse worke of nature or fortune to make any thing in his kinde greater then ordinarie, then to make a straunge composition.

Yet if it bee narrowly confidered, this coulour will bee reprehended or incountred by imputing to all excellencie in compositions a kind of pouertie or at least a casualty or ieopardy, for from that which is excellent in greatnes somewhat may be taken, or there may be decay; and yet sufficiencie lest, but from that which hath his price in composition if you take away any thing, or any part doe sayle all is disgraced.

6 Cuius priuatio bona, malum, cuius priuatio mala, bonum.

He formes to make it conceyued that that was euill which is chaunged for the better are, He that is in hell thinkes there is no other heaven. Satis quercus, Acornes were good till bread was found etc. And of the

other side the formes to make it conceyued that that was good which was chaunged for the worse are, Bona magis carendo quam fruendo sentimus, Bona a terge formosissma, Good things never appear in their full beautie, till they turne their backe and be going away, etc. The reprehension of this colour, is, that the good or euil which is removed may be esteemed good or euil comparatively and not positively or simply. So that if the privation bee good, it sollows not the former

condition was euil, but lesse good, for the slower or blossome is a positive good, although the remove of it to give place to the fruite be a comparative good. So in the tale of Æsope; when the olde fainting man in the heat of the day cast downe his burthen and called for death, and when death came to know his will with him, said it was for nothing but to helpe him vppe with his burthen agayne: it doth not follow that because death which was the privation of the burthen was ill, therefore the burthen was good. And in this parte the ordinarie forme of Malum necessarium aptly reprehendeth this colour, for Privatio mali necessarii est mala, and yet that doth not convert the nature of the necessarie euil, but it is euill.

Againe it commeth sometimes to passe, that there is an equalitie in the chaunge or privation, and as it were a *Dilemma boni* or a *Dilemma mali*, so that the corruption of the one good is a generation of the other, *Sorti pater æquus vtrique est*: And contrarie the remedy of the one euill is the occasion and commencement of an other, as in *Scilla* and *Charibdis*.

7. Quod bono vicinum, bonum: quod a bono remotum malum.

Vch is the nature of thinges, that thinges contrarie and distant in nature and qualitie are also seuered and dissoyned in place, and thinges like and consenting in qualitie are placed, and as it were quar-

tered together, for partly in regarde of the nature to spredde, multiplie and infect in similitude, and partly in regard of the nature to break, expell and alter that which is disagreeable and contrarie, most thinges do eyther associate and draw neere to themselues the like, or at least assimulate to themselues that which approcheth neer them, and doe also drive away,

chase and exterminate their contraries, And that is the reason commonly yeelded why the middle region of the aire shold be coldest, because the Sunne and stars are eyther hot by direct beames or by reflection. The direct beames heate the vpper region, the reflected beames from the earth and feas heate the lower That which is in the middest being furthest Region. distant in place from these two Regions of heate are most distant in nature that is coldest, which is that they tearme colde or hot, per antiperistasin, that is inuironing you by contraries, which was pleafantly taken holde of by him that faid that an honest man in these daies must needes be more honest then in ages heretofore, propter antiperistasin, because the shutting of him in the middest of contraries must needs make the honesty stronger and more compact in it selfe.

The reprehension of this colour is, first many things of amplitude in their kind doe as it were ingrosse to themselves all, and leave that which is next them most destitute, as the shootes or vnderwood that grow neare a great and spread tree, is the most pyned and shrubbie wood of the sield, because the great tree doth deprive and deceive them of sappe and nourishment. So he saith wel, Divitis servi maxime servi: And the comparison was pleasant of him that compared courtiers attendant in the courtes of princes, without great place or office, to sasting dayes, which were next the holy daies, but otherwise were the leanest dayes of all the weeke.

An other reprehension is, that things of greatnes and predominancie, though they doe not extenuate the thinges adioyning in substance,; yet they drowne them and obscure them in shew and appearance. And therefore the Astronomers say, that whereas in all other planets coniunction is the perfectest amitie: the Sunne contrariwise is good by aspect, but eaill by coniunction.

A third reprehension is because euill approcheth to good sometimes for concealement, sometimes for protection, and good to euill for conversion and resormation. So hipocrisie draweth neer to religion for covert

and hyding it selse: Sæpe latet vitium procinitate bons, and Sanctuary men which were commonly inordinate men and malesactors, were wont to be neerest to priestes and Prelates and holy men, for the maiestie of good thinges is such, as the confines of them are reuered. On the other side our Sauiour charged with neerenes of Publicanes and rioters said, The Phistian approcheth the sicke, rather then the whole.

8. Quod quis culpa fua contraxit, maius malum; quod ab externis imponitur, minus malum.

HE reason is because the sting and remorse of the mind accusing it selfe doubleth all aduersitie, contrarywise the considering and recording inwardly that a man is cleare and free from fault, and just imputation,

doth attemper outward calamities: For if the euill bee in the sence and in the conscience both, there is a gemination of it, but if euill be in the one and comfort in the other, it is a kind of compensation. So the Poets in tragedies doe make the most passionate lamentations, and those that sorerunne final dispaire, to be accusing, questioning and torturing of a mans selfe.

Seque vnum clamat causamque, caputque malum. and contrariwise the extremities of worthie persons have been annihilated in the consideration of their owne good deseruing. Besides when the euill commeth from without, there is lest a kinde of evaporation of griese, is it come by humane iniurie, eyther by indignation and meditating of revenge from our selves, or by expecting or forconceyuing that Nemesis and retribution will take holde of the authours of our hurt, or if it bee by fortune or accident, yet there is lest a kinde of expostulation against the divine powers.

Atque Deos atque astra vocat crudelia mater.
But where the euill is deriued from a mans own fault there all strikes deadly inwardes and suffocateth.

of enuy, for men are accustomed after themselues and their owne saction to incline to them which are softest and are least in their way in despite and derogation of them that hold them hardest to it. So that this couler of melioritie and preheminence is oft a signe of eneruation and weakenesse.

2 Cuius excellentia vel exuperantia melior, id toto genere melius.

Ppertaining to this are the fourmes; Let vs not wander in generalities: Let vs compare particular with particular, etc. This appearance though it seems of strength and rather Logicall then Rhetoricall, yet is

very oft a fallax.

Sometimes because some things are in kinde very casuall, which if they escape, proue excellent, so that the kinde is inferior, because it is so subject to perill, but that which is excellent being proued is superior, as the blossome of March and the blossome of May, whereof the French verse goeth.

Bourgeon de Mars enfant de Paris, Si vn eschape, il en vaut dix.

So that the blossome of May is generally better then the blossome of March; and yet the best blossome of

March is better then the best blossome of May.

Sometimes, because the nature of some kindes is to be more equall and more indifferent, and not to have very distant degrees, as hath bene noted in the warmer clymates, the people are generally more wise, but in the Northerne climate the wits of chiefe are greater. So in many Armies, if the matter should be tryed by duell betweene two Champions, the victory should go on one side, and yet if it be tryed by the grosse, it would go of the other side; for excellencies go as it were by chance, but kindes go by a more certaine nature, as by discipline in warre.

Lastly, many kindes have much refuse which counteruale that which they have excellent; and therefore generally mettall is more precious then stone, and yet a dyamond is more precious then gould.

3 Quod ad veritatem refertur maius est quam quod ad opinionem. Modus autem et probatio eius quod ad opinionem pertinet, hæc est, quod quis si clam putaret fore, facturus non esset.

O the Epicures say of the Stoicks selicitie placed in vertue, That it is like the selicitie of a Player, who if he were lest of his Auditorie and their applause, he would streight be out of hart and countenance,

and therefore they call vertue Bonum theatrale. But of Riches the Poet fayth:

Populus me sibilat, At mihi plaudo.

And of pleasure.

Grata fub imo

Gaudia corde premens, vultu simulate pudorem.

The fallax of this couler is somewhat subtile, though the aunswere to the example be readie, for vertue is not chosen propter auram popularem. But contrariwise, Maxime omnium teipsum reveree, So as a vertuous man will be vertuous in folitudine, and not onely in theatro, though percase it will be more strong by glory and same, as an heate which is doubled by reflexion; But that denieth the supposition, it doth not reprehend the sallax whereof the reprehension is a low [Alow], that vertue (such as is ioyned with labor and conslict) would not be chosen but for same and opinion, yet it solloweth not that the chiese motiue of the election should not be reall and for it selse, for same may be onely causa impulsiva, and not causa constituens, or efficiens. As if there were two horses, and the one would doo better

154 A Table of Coulers of good and euill.

place of extolling the beginning of euery thing, Dimidium qui bene cæpit habet. This made the Astrologers fo idle as to judge of a mans nature and destiny by the constellation of the moment of his natiuitie, or conception. This couler is reprehended, because many inceptions are but as Epicurus termeth them, tentamenta, that is, imperfect offers, and essayes, which vanish and come to no substance without an iteration, fo as in such cases the second degree seemes the worthyest, as the body-horse in the Cart, that draweth more then the forehorse, hereof the common fourmes are, The fecond blow makes the fray, The fecond word makes the bargaine, Alter principium dedit, alter abstulit, etc. Another reprehension of this couler is in respect of defatigation, which makes perseuerance of greater dignitie then inception, [for chaunce or instinct of nature may cause inception, but setled affection or iudgement maketh the continuance.

Thirdly, this couler is reprehended in such things which have a naturall course, and inclination contrary to an inception. So that the inception is continually evacuated and gets no start, but there behoveth perpetua inceptio, as in the common sourme. Non progredi, est regredi, Qui non prosicit, desicit: Running against the hill: Rowing against the streame, etc. For if it be with the streame or with the hill, then the degree of

inception is more then al the rest.

Fourthly, this couler is to be vnderstoode of gradus inceptionis à potentia, ad actum comparatus; cum gradu ab actu ad incrementum: For other, maior videtur gradus ab impotentia ad potentiam, quam a potentia ad actum.

FINIS.

Printed at London by John Windet for Humfrey Hooper.

1597.

AHARMONY

OF THE

SECOND GROUP

OF

TWENTY-FOUR

ESSAYS.

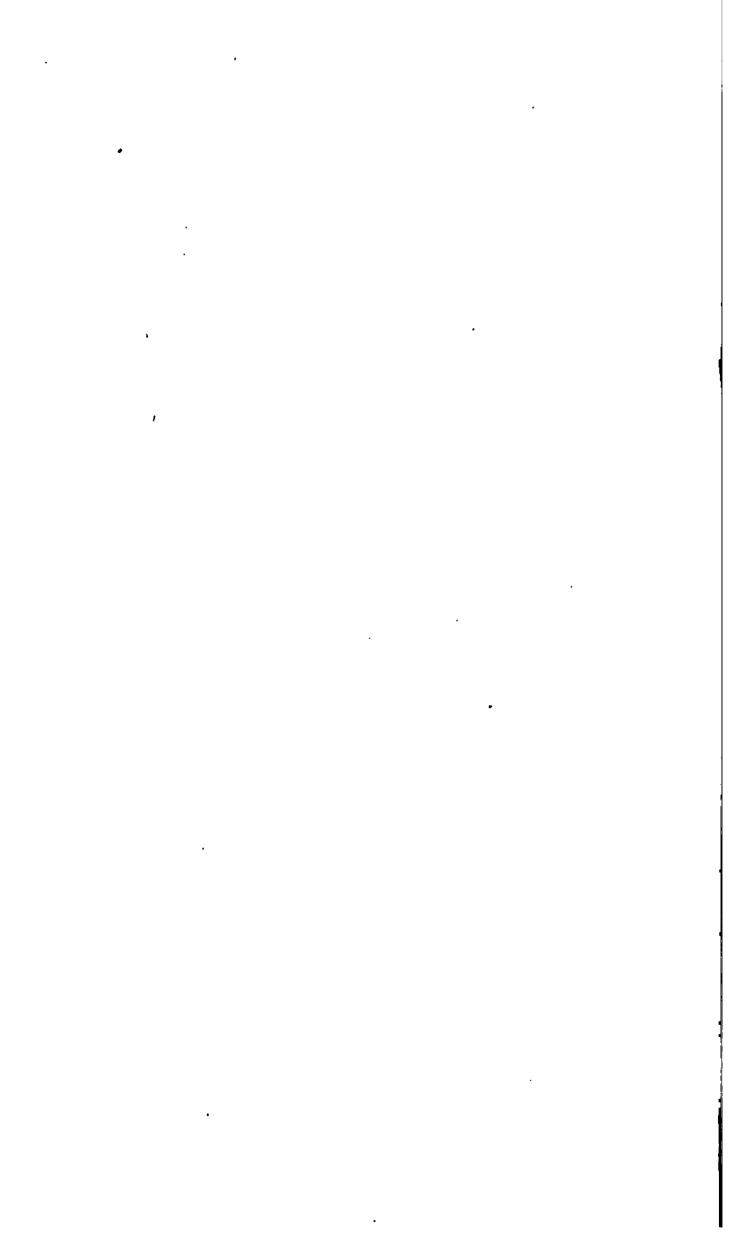
- II. OF FRIENDSHIP.
- 12. OF WISDOM FOR Man's Self.
- 13 OF NOBILITY.
- 14 OF GOODNESS GOODNESS OF NATURE. | 27. OF ATHEISM.
- 15. OF BEAUTY.
- 16. OF SEEMING WISE.
- 17. OF AMBITION.
- 18. OF RICHES.
- 19. OF DESPATCH.
- 20. Of DEFORMITY.
- 21. OF YOUTH AND AGE.
- 22. OF MARRIAGE SINGLE LIFE.

- 23. OF PARENTS CHILDREN.
- 24. OF GREAT PLACE.
- 25. OF EMPIRE.
- AND 26. OF COUNSEL.

 - 28. OF SUPERSTITION.
 - 29. OF PRAISE.
 - 30. OF NATURE IN MEN.
 - 31. Of Custom EDUCATION.
 - 32. OF FORTUNE.
 - 33. OF DEATH.
 - 34. Of SEDITIONS TROUBLES.

First found in Harleian MS. 5106.

COLLATED WITH SUBSEQUENT EDITIONS.



The Writings of S' ffrancis Bacon Kn! the Kinges Solli citor Generall in Moralitie Policie, and Historie.

[This draft dedication was never printed by Bacon.] Sloams MS. 4259, fel. 155.

To the most high and excellent Prince Henry, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall and Earle of Chester.

yt may plcase your H[ighness]

Aving devided my life into the Contemplative, and active parte, I am defierous to give his Maiesty, and your Highness of the Fruites of both, simple thoughe they be. To

write inft Treatifes requireth leafure in the Writer, and leafure in the Reader, and therefore are not so sit, neither in regard of your Highnesses princely affaiers, nor in regard of my continual Services, Which is the cause, that hath made me chuse to write certaine brest notes, sett downe rather significantly, then curiously, which I have called Essaies; The word is late, but the thing is auncient. For Senecaes Epistles to Lucilia.

That Is

spersed Meditacions, thoughe conveyed in the forme Theis labors of myne I knowe cannott be orthie of your highness—for what can be worthie of But my hope is, they may be as graynes of lte, that will rather give you an appitite, then offend n with fatiety. And althoughe, they handle those inges wherein both Mens Lives, and theire pens are of conversant, yet (What I have attained, I knowe ot) but I have endeavoured to make them not Ilgar; but of a nature, Whereof a Man shall find such in experience, litle in bookes; so as they are either repeticions, nor fansies. But howsoever, I all most humbly desier your Highness to accept them gracious part, and to conceive that if I cannott rest, it must shewe my dutifull, and devoted affection to)ur Highness, in theis thinges which proceed from my If, I shalbe much more ready to doe it, in performance any your princely Commaundementes; And so wishg your Highness all princely felicitye, I rest.

your Highnesses most humble Servant.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106.

[1.] Of Friendship.

[The first page of the MS. is

torn away, so that there remains only the conclusion of this Essay.

It is, however, certain from the next following Essays being numbered 2, 3, 4, &c., that there was no other Essay than this one upon the missing page, though of what length this one consisted cannot at the sent he this one consisted cannot at present be known. Possibly the MS. began with a list of the Essays contained in it.] inanimate, vnion strengthneth anie naturall mocion, and weakeneth anie violent mocion; Soe amongest men, Frendshipp multiplyeth ioyes, and deuideth greifes. Therefore whofoeuer wanteth Fortitude, lett him worshipp Frendshipp; For the yoke of Frendshipp maketh the yoke of *Fortune* more light; There bee fome whose liues are, as if they perpetually played vponn a stage, disguised to all others, open onely to themselues; But perpetuall diffimulacion is painefull, and hee that is all fortune and noe nature is an exquisite Hirelinge; Liue not in contynuall fmoother, but take fome frendes with whom to communicate. It will vnfould

thie vnderstanding; it will

evaporate thie affections,

it will prepare thie bufi-

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

13. Of friendship



Here is no greate defert or wildene then to bee will out true friend

For without friendship, for ety is but meeting. And it is certaine, that in bodi inanimate, vnion strengt neth any naturall motion and weakeneth any viole motion; So amongst m friendship mukiple ioles, and divideth grid Therefore who foeuer was eth fortitude, let him wo shippe Friendship. yoke of Friendship makel the yoke of fortune no There bee for light. whose liues are, as if the perpetually plaid vpon stage, disguised to all other open onely to themselve But perpetuall diffinu tion is painfull; and h that is all Fortune, and *Nature* is an exquisit *Hi* ling. Liue not in cont uall smother, but take so friends with whom to co municate. It will vn thy vndersanding; it w euaporate thy affection it will prepare thy but ٧.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

27. Frendship.

[Entirely rewritten, see below.]

III. 1605-12. æt. 47-52.

A Man may keepe a Corner of his minde from his frend, and it bee but to witnesse to himself that it is not vponn faciltye, but vponntruevse of Frendshipp that hee imparteth himself. Want of true frendes as it is the rewarde of perfidious Natures, so it is an impoficion vponn great fortunes. The one deserve it, the other cannottscape it. And therefore it is good to retayne finceritye, and to putt it into the reckoning of Ambition, that the higher one goeth, the fewer true Frendeshe shall have. Perfection of Frendshipp is but a Speculacion; It is Frendshipp, when a Man can fav to himself, I loue this Man without respect of Vtilitye. I am open harted to him, I fingle him from the generalitye of those with whom I liue, I make him a porcion of my owne wishes.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

nesse. A man may keepe a corner of his minde from his friend, and it be but to witnesse to himselfe, that it is not vpon facility, but vpon true vse of friendship that hee imparteth himselfe. Want of true friends, as it is the reward of perfidious natures; fo it is an impofition vpon great fortunes. The one deserve it, the other cannot scape it. And therefore it is good to retaine fincerity, and to put it into the reckoning of Ambition, that the higher one goeth, the fewer true friends he shall haue. fection of friendship, is but a speculation. It is friendship, when a man can say to himselfe, I loue this man without respect of vtility. I am open hearted to him, I fingle him from the generality of those with whom I liue; I make him a portion of my owne wishes.





[Entirely rewritten in 1625 Edition, see opposite.]

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

27. frendship.

[Entirely rewritten, see below.]

T had beene hard for him that spake it, to have put more Truth and vntruth together, in sew Words, then in that Speech; Whosoeuer is delighted in solitude, is either a wilde Beast, or a God.^a For it is most true, that a Naturall and Secret Hatred, and Auersation towards Society, in any Man, hath somewhat of the Sauage Beast; But it

^a Aristotle. Politics. Bk. i. c. 2.

1612. III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. æt. 52.

[Entirely rewritten in 1625 Edition, see opposite.]

IV. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

8 Loue. Omitted in the Latin.

¹ But it is. Illud tamen e converso, 'but the converse.'
2 It. Hujusmodi Vita solitaria, 'a solitary life of this kind.'

⁴ Candian. Cretense, 'the Cretan.'
5 What Solitude is. Quid hoc sit quod Solitudo nominatur, 'what that is which is called solitude.'
6 Is not Company. Non est Societas dicenda, 'is not to be called company.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

is 1 most Vntrue, that it should have any Character, at all, of the Divine Nature; Except it2 proceed, not out of a Pleasure in Solitude, but out of a Loue³ and desire, to sequester a Mans Selfe, for a Higher Conversation: Such as is found, to have been falfely and fainedly, in some of the Heathen; As Epimenides the Candian,4 Numa the Roman, Empedocles the Scicilian, and Apollonius of Tyana; And truly and really, in divers of the Ancient Hermits, and Holy Fathers of the Church. But little doe Men perceiue, what Solitude is.⁵ and how farre it extendeth. For a Crowd is not Company; And Faces are but a Gallery of Pictures; And Talke but a Tinckling Cymball, where there is no Loue. The Latine Adage meeteth with it a little; Magna Ciuitas, Magna folitudo; Because in a great Towne, Friends's are scattered; So that there is not that Fellowship,9 for the most Part, which is in leffe Neighbourhoods. But we may goe further, and affirme most truly, That it is a meere, and miserable Solitude, to want true Friends; without which the World is but a Wildernesse: And even in this sense also of Solitude, whosoeuer in the Frame of his Nature and Affections, is vnfit10 for Friendship, he taketh it of the Beast, and not from Humanity.

A principall Fruit of Friendship, is the Ease and Discharge of the Fulnessellings of the Heart, which Passions of all kinds doe cause and induce.12 We know Diseases of Stoppings, and Suffocations, are the most dangerous in the body; And it is not much

A great city is a great desert.

⁷ Faces. Facies Hominum, 'faces of men.'
8 Friends. Amici et Necessarii, 'friends and relatives.'
9 Fellowship. Familiariter, et in consortio, vivatur, 'men live inti-

mately and in company.'

10 Vnfit. Abhorret, 'shrinks from.'

11 Fulnesse. Anxietatis, 'anxiety.'

12 Cause and induce. Imprimere, 'impress.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. 1612. æt. 52.

[Entirely rewritten in 1625 Edition, see opposite.]

¹⁸ Minde. Ægritudinibus Animæ, 'diseases of the mind.'
14 Suspicions. Curas, 'cares.'
15 In a kind. Sub Sigillo, 'under the seal.'
16 Shrift. Omitted in the Latin.
17 Distance. Distantiam et Sublimitatem, 'distance and loftiness.'

 V_{-} 1625. æt. 65.

otherwise in the Minde: 13 You may take Sarza to open the Liuer; Steele to open the Spleene; Flower of Sulphur for the Lungs; Castoreum for the Braine; But no Receipt openeth the Heart, but a true Friend, to whom you may impart, Griefes, Ioyes, Feares, Hopes, Suspicions, ¹⁴ Counsels, and whatsoeuer lieth vpon the Heart, to oppresse it, in a kind ¹⁵ of Ciuill Shrift¹⁶ or Confession.

It is a Strange Thing to obserue, how high a Rate, Great Kings and Monarchs, do fet vpon this Fruit of Friendship, whereof we speake: So great, as they purchase it, many times, at the hazard of their owne Safety, and Greatnesse. For Princes, in regard of the distance¹⁷ of their Fortune, from that of their Subjects and Seruants, cannot gather this Fruit; Except (to make Themselues capable thereof) they raise18 some Persons, to be as it were Companions, and almost Equals to themselues, which many times forteth to Inconuenience. The Moderne Languages giue vnto fuch Persons, the Name of Fauorites, or Privadoes; 19 As if it were Matter of Grace, or Conuersation. But the Roman Name attaineth the true Vse, and Cause thereof; Naming them Participes Curarum; For it is that, which tieth the knot.20 And we fee plainly, that this hath been done, not by Weake and Passionate Princes onely, but by the Wisest, and most Politique that euer reigned; Who haue oftentimes ioyned to themselues, some of their Seruants; Whom both Themselues have called Frends; And allowed Others likewise to call them in the same manner; Vsing the Word which is received between Private²¹ Men.

Raise. Evehant et promoveant, 'raise and promote.'
Privadoes. Amicorum Regis, 'friends of the king.'
Knot. Verum Ligamen, 'true knot.'

²¹ Private. Privatæ Fortunæ, 'of private fortune.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. 1612. æt. 52.

[Entirely rewritten in 1625 Edition, see opposite.]

Great. Verba Indignationis, 'indignant words.'

In effect. Fere disertis Verbis, 'almost in express words.'

Had power. Omitted in the Latin.

Calpurnia. Vxoris suæ Calpurniæ, 'his wife Calpurnia.'

Dismisse. Eum Senatum non tam parvi habiturum, ut dimitter vellet, 'he would not have so little respect for the senate as to dismiss them.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

L. Sylla, when he commanded Rome, raised Pompey (after furnamed the Great) to that Heigth, that Pompey vaunted Himselse for Sylla's Ouermatch. For when he had carried the Confulship for a Frend of his, against the pursuit of Sylla, and that Sylla did a little resent thereat, and began to speake great,22 Pompey turned vpon him againe, and in effect²³ bad him be quiet; For that more Men adored the Sunne Rising, then the Sunne fetting.^a With Iulius Cæfar, Decimus Brutus had obtained that Interest, as he set him downe, in his Testament, for Heire in Remainder, after his Nephew. And this was the Man, that had power²⁴ with him, to draw him forth to his death. For when Cafar would have discharged the Senate, in regard of some ill Presages, and specially a Dreame of Calpurnia;25 This Man lifted him gently by the Arme, out of his Chaire, telling him, he hoped he would not dismisse²⁶ the Senate, till his wife had dreamt a better Dreame. And it feemeth, his fauour was fo great, as Antonius in a Letter, which is recited Verbatim, in one of Cicero's Philippiques, calleth him Venefica,27 Witch; As if he had enchanted Cæfar. Augustus raised Agrippa (though of meane Birth) to that Heighth, as when he confulted with Macenas, about the Marriage of his Daughter Iulia, Macenas tooke the Liberty to tell him; That he must either marry his Daughter to Agrippa, or take away his life, there was no third way, he had made him so great.d With Tiberius Cæsar, Seianus had ascended to that Height, as they Two were tearmed and reckoned, as a Paire of Frends. Tiberius in a Letter to him saith; Hæc pro Amicitià nostrà non occultaui. And the whole Senate, dedicated

Plutarch. Pompey. xiv.
Cicero. Philippics. xiii. 11.

b Plutarch. Julius Cæsar. lxiv.
d Dion Cassius. lvi. 6.

Cicero. Philippics. xiii. 11. d Dion Cassius. lvi. 6. e On account of our friendship, I have not concealed these things. Tacitus. Annales. iv. 40.

²⁷ Venefica. Veneficum, 'sorcerer.'

170 A HARMONY OF THE ESSAYS.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. 1612. æt. 52.

[Entirely rewritten in 1625 Edition, see opposite.]

Great dearenesse of friendship. Arctam Amicitiam, 'close friendship'
 The like. Similis, Amicitiæ Exemplum, 'an example of like friendship.

1625.

æt. 65.

Altar to Frendship, as to a Goddesse, in respect of e great Dearenesse of Frendship, 28 between them Two. 4 he like²⁹ or more was between Septimius Seuerus, id Plantianus. For he forced his Eldest Sonne to arry the Daughter of Plantianus; And would often aintaine Plantianus, in doing Affronts to his Son: nd did write also in a Letter to the Senate, by these 'ords; I loue the Man so well, as I wish he may er-liue me. Now if these Princes, had beene as a raian, or a Marcus Aurelius, A Man might haue ought, that this had proceeded of an abundant Goodeffe of Nature; But being Men fo Wise, of such rength and Seueritie of minde, and fo Extreme ouers of Themselues, as all these were; It proueth oft plainly, that they found their owne Felicitie hough as great as euer happened to Mortall Men) ut as an Halfe Peece, except they mought haue a rend to make it Entire: 30 And yet, which is more, they 'ere Princes, that had Wiues, Sonnes, Nephews; And et all these could not supply the Comfort of Frendship. It is not to be forgotten, what Commineus observeth, his first Master Duke Charles the Hardy; Namely, at hee would communicate his Secrets with none; nd least of all, those Secrets, which troubled him 10st. Whereupon he goeth on, and faith, That toards his Latter time; That closenesse did impaire, and little perish his vnderstanding. Surely Commineus ought have made the same Iudgement also, if it had leased him, of his Second Master Lewis the Eleuenth, hose closenesse³¹ was indeed his Tormentour. arable of Pythagoras is darke, but true; Cor ne

Tacitus. Annals. iv. 74.

Should be Plautianus: see Dion Cassius. lxxv. 15.

Philip de Comines. Historie. Trans. by T. Dannett. Bk. v. c. p. 148.

Entire. Integra et persecta. 'entire and complete.'
Closeness. Occultatio Consiliorum, 'concealment of counsel.'

HARMONY OF THE ESSAYS.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. 1612. æt. 52

[Entirely rewritten in 1625 Edition, see opposite.]

84 Good. Omitted in the Latin.

Open. Cogitationes suas, et Anxietates libere impertiant, 'impart free.y their thoughts and cares.'

83 Admirable. Ad Miraculum proxime accedit, 'comes very near to a miracle.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

dito; Eat not the Heart. Certainly, if a Man would giue it a hard Phrase, Those that want Frends to open⁸² hemselues vnto, are Canniballs of their owne Hearts. But one Thing is most Admirable,38 (wherewith I will winclude this first Fruit of frendship) which is, that his Communicating of a Mans Selfe to his Frend, works wo contrarie Effects; For it redoubleth Ioyes, and utteth Griefes in Halfes. For there is no Man, that mparteth his Ioyes to his Frend, but he ioyeth the nore; And no Man, that imparteth his Griefes to his Frend, but hee grieueth the lesse. So that it is, in Truth of Operation vpon a Mans Minde, of like vertue, as he Alchymists vie to attribute to their Stone, for Mans Bodie; That it worketh all Contrary Effects, nut still to the Good,34 and Benefit of Nature. But yet, rithout praying in Aid of Alchymists, there is a maniest Image of this, in the ordinarie course of Nature. for in Bodies, 35 Vnion strengthneth and cherisheth any laturall Action; And, on the other side, weakneth and ullethany violent Impression: Andeuen so is it of Minds. The fecond Fruit of Frendship, is Healthfull and oueraigne³⁶ for the *Vnderstanding*, as the first is for the Iffections. For Frendship maketh indeed a faire Day the Affections, from Storme and Tempests: But it aketh Day-light³⁷ in the Vnderstanding, out of Darkesse and Confusion of Thoughts.88 Neither is this to e vnderstood, onely of Faithfull Counsell, which a lan receiueth from his Frend; But before you come that, certaine it is, that whosoeuer hath his Minde aught, with many Thoughts, his Wits and Vnder-

A saying of Pythagoras, quoted by Plutarch. De Educ. Puer. xvii.

Bodies. Rebus Naturalibus, 'natural things.'

Soueraigne. Omitted in the Latin.

Day-light. Noctem abigit, et Lumen infundit, 'drives away night and urs in light.

Out of Darknesse . . . Thoughts. Confusione cogitationum dissipata, aving dissipated confusion of thoughts.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. 1612. IV. æt. 52.

[Entirely rewritten in 1625 Edition, see opposite.]

Breake vp. Omitted in the Latin.
Communicating. Communicatione Consiliorum, communicating plans.

⁴¹ Easily. Et in omnes partes versat, 'and turns them in every direction!'
42 Lie. Complicantur et Involvuntur, 'are folded and rolled up.'
48 Vnderstanding. Obstructionibus Intellectus, 'obstructions of the understanding.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

flanding doe clarifie and breake vp, 39 in the Communicating40 and discoursing with Another: He tosseth his Thoughts, more eafily;41 He marshalleth them more orderly; He feeth how they looke when they are turned into Words; Finally, He waxeth wifer then Himselse; And that more by an Houres discourse, then by a Dayes Meditation. It was well faid by Themistocles to the King of Persia; That speech was like Cloth of Arras, opened, and put abroad; Whereby the Imagery doth appeare in Figure; whereas in Thoughts, they lie⁴² but as in Packs.^a Neither is this Second Fruit of Frendship, in opening the Vnderstanding,43 restrained onely to such Frends, as are able to give a Man Counfell: (They indeed are best) But euen, without that, a Man learneth of Himselse, and bringeth his owne Thoughts to Light, and whetteth his Wits as against a Stone, which it selfe cuts not. In a word, a Man were better relate himselfe, to a Statua, or Picture, then to fuffer his Thoughts to passe in smother.44

Adde now, to make this Second Fruit of Frendship compleat, that other Point, which lieth more open, and falleth within Vulgar Observation; which is Faithfull Counsell from a Frend. Heraclitus saith well, in one of his Ænigmaes; Dry Light is ever the best.b And certaine it is, that the Light, that a Man receiveth, by Counsell from Another, is Drier, and purer, then hat which commeth from his owne Vnderstanding, ind Iudgement; which is euer infused and drenched n his Affections and Customes. 45 So as, there is as nuch difference, betweene the Counfell, that a Frend jueth, and that a Man giueth himselfe, as there is be-

^a Plutarch. Themistocles. xxix. 4.
^b Heraclitus the Obscure sayd; The drie Light was the best Soule.
leaning, when the Faculties Intellectual are in vigour, not wet, nor, as it rere, blouded by the Affections. Lord Bacon's Apophth. No. 268, Ed. 1625.

Suffer to passe in smother. Silentio suffocare, 'smother in silence.' And Customes. Omitted in the Latin.

IV. III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. 1612. æt. 52.

[Entirely rewritten in 1625 Edition, see opposite.]

50 A Man may think. Vetus est, 'it is an old saying.'
51 No more. Melius, 'better.' [The illustration is put inversely in the Latin.]

Licet nonnulli hoc cavillentur, etiam recte dicitur. 'Some may make this objection. It is rightly said.

63 Gamester. Spectatorem sæpe plus videre, quam Lusorem, 'a looker-os often sees more than a player.'

⁴⁶ Such. Magis infestus, 'more dangerous.'
47 Good. Omitted in the Latin.
48 Dead. Omitted in the Latin.
49 Others. Tanquam in speculo, aliquando, ut fit etiam in speculis.
minus respondet, 'as if in a mirror, sometimes does not answer, as is also the case in mirrors.'
50 A Mag may think. Vetus and 'it is an old carrier'

V. . . 1625.

æt. 65.

tween the Counfell of a Frend, and of a Flatterer. For there is no fuch46 Flatterer, as is a Mans Selfe; And there is no fuch Remedy, against Flattery of a Mans Selfe, as the Liberty of a Frend. Counfell is of two Sorts; The one concerning Manners, the other concerning Businesse. For the First; The best Preservative to keepe the Minde in Health, is the saithful Admonition of a Frend. The Calling of a Mans Selfe, to a Strict Account, is a Medicine, fometime, too Piercing and Corrofiue. Reading good⁴⁷ Bookes of Morality, is a little Flat, and Dead. 48 Obseruing our Faults in Others,49 is fometimes vnproper for our Case. But the best Receipt (best (I say) to worke, and best to take) is the Admonition of a Frend. It is a strange thing to behold, what grosse Errours, and extreme Absurdities, Many (especially of the greater Sort) doe commit, for want of a Frend, to tell them of them; To the great dammage, both of their Fame, and Fortune. For, as S. Iames saith, they are as Men, that looke sometimes into a Glasse, and presently forget their owne Shape, and Fauour. As for Businesse, a Man may think, 50 if he will, that two Eyes fee no more 51 than one; Or52 that a Gamester58 feeth alwaies more then a Looker on; 54Or that a Man in Anger, is as Wise as he, that hath faid ouer the foure and twenty Letters; Or that a Musket may be shot off, aswell vpon the Arme, as vpon a Rest; And such other fond and high55 Imaginations, to thinke Himfelfe All in All. But when all is done,56 the Helpe of good57 Counfell, is that, which

James i. 23.

b In Bacon's time, i and j, and w and v, were not considered distinct letters.

Or that a Man in Anger . . . Letters. Omitted in the Latin.

Fond and high. Quidam tam altum sapiant, 'some think so highly.'

All is done. Quicquid dici possit in contrarium, 'whatever may be said to the contrary.'

¹⁷ The Helpe of, &c. Certum est, Consilium Negotia dirivere, et stabilire.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. | TV. æt. 52. 1612.

[Entirely rewritten in 1625 Edition, fee opposite.]

Perfect and entire. Fideli, et intimo, 'feithful and intimate.'

59 Counsell. Consilia illa, et diversis manantia, 'counsels coming from divers persons.'

60 Good Meaning. Fide, et bona intentione, 'faith and good meaning.'

61 You complaine of. Omitted in the Latin.

63 Rody. Contemis twi Constitutionin 'the constitution of meaning.'

⁶² Body. Corporis tui Constitutionis, 'the constitution of your body.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

fetteth Businesse straight. And if any Man thinke, that he will take Counsell, but it shall be by Peeces; Asking Counfell in one Businesse of one Man, and in another Businesse of another Man; It is well, (that is to fay, better perhaps then if he asked none at all;) but he runneth two dangers: One, that he shall not be faithfully counselled; For it is a rare Thing, except it be from a perfect and entire⁵⁸ Frend, to have Counsell giuen, but fuch as shalbe bowed and crooked to some ends, which he hath that giueth it. The other, that he shall haue Counsell 59 giuen, hurtfull, and vnsafe, (though with good Meaning 60) and mixt, partly of Mischiese, and partly of Remedy: Euen as if you would call a Physician, that is thought good, for the Cure of the Disease, you complaine of,61 but is vnacquainted with your body;62 And therefore, may put you in way for a present Cure, but ouerthroweth your Health in some other kinde;63 And so cure the Disease, and kill the Patient.⁶⁴ But a *Frend*, that is wholly acquainted with a Mans Estate, will beware by furthering any present Businesse, how he dasheth vpon other Inconuenience. And therefore, rest not vpon Scattered Counfels; They will rather distract, and Misleade, then Settle, and Direct.

After these two Noble Fruits of Frendship; (Peace in the Affections, and Support of the Indgement,) followeth the last Fruit; which is like the Pomgranat, full of many kernels; I meane Aid, and Bearing a Part, in all Actions, and Occasions. Here, the best Way, to represent to life manifold vse of Frendship, is to cast and see, how many Things there are, which a Man cannot doe65 Himfelfe:

⁶⁸ Other kinde. In summa, 'on the whole.'
64 Patient. Atque hoc facto Morbum extinguet, et non ita multo post,
Hominem, 'and in this way destroys the disease, and not so long after, the

⁵⁵ Doe. Exequi commode, 'do conveniently.'

III. IV. 1612. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. æt. 52.

[Entirely rewritten in 1625 Edition, fee opposite.]

66 Sparing. Non per Hyperbolen, sed sobrie dictum, 'not hyperbolically. but sparingly said.

67 For that. Quandoquidem, si quis vere rem reputet, 'since, if one truly considers the matter.

68 Farre more then Himselse. Amici officia, proprias cujusque vires superent, 'the services of a friend surpass one's own strength.

69 Haue their Time. Mortales sunt, 'are mortal.'

70 Desire some Things. In Medio Operum aliquorum, 'in the middle of some works.

71 Bestowing of a Child. Collocations Filii in Matrimonium, bestow-

ing a son in marriage.'

72 Worke. Conqtuum et Desideriorum suorum, 'their endeavours and desires.

78 Care of those Things. . . after Him, De iisdem rebus, Amici cura et opera, post Mortem perficiendis, 'that those things will be perfected after his death, by the care and assistance of his friend.

74 So that a Man . . . his desires. Adeo ut Fatum immaturum viz obsit; Atque habeat suis (ut loquamur more Tribulum aut Firmariorum,) in Desideriis suis, Terminum, non unius, sed duarum vitarum, 'so that premature fate scarcely injures him; and a man has (to speak as common people and farmers do) the term of not one but two lives in his desires.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

And then it will appeare, that it was a Sparing66 Speech of the Ancients, to fay, That a Frend is another Himfelfe: For that⁶⁷ a Frend is farre more then Himfelfe.⁶⁸ Men haue their Time,69 and die many times in desire of fome Things, 70 which they principally take to Heart; The Bestowing of a Child, 11 The Finishing of a Worke, 12 Or the like. If a Man haue a true Frend, he may rest almost secure, that the Care of those Things, will continue after Him. 73 So that a Man hath as it were two Liues in his desires.⁷⁴ A Man hath⁷⁵ a Body, and that Body is confined to a Place; But where Frendship is, all Offices of Life, are as it were granted to Him, and his Deputy. ⁷⁶ For he may exercise them by his *Frend*. How many Things are there, which a Man cannot, with any Face or Comelines, fay⁷⁷ or doe Himfelfe? A Man can scarce alledge his owne Merits with modesty. much lesse extoll them: A man cannot sometimes brooke to Supplicate or Beg: And a number of the like. But all these Things, are Gracefull in a Frends Mouth, which are Blushing in a Mans Owne. So againe, a Mans Person hath many proper Relations, which he cannot put off. A Man cannot speake to his Sonne, but as a Father; To his Wife, but as a Husband; To his Enemy, but vpon Termes: 78 whereas a Frend may speak, as the Case requires, and not as it sorteth with the Person. But to enumerate these Things were endlesse: I have given the Rule, where a Man can fitly play his owne Part: If he haue not a Frend, he may quit the Stage.



Hath. Circumscribitur, 'is bounded by.'
For he may exercise them by his Frend. Omitted in the Latin.

Say. Omitted in the Latin. But vpon Termes. Nisi salva dignitate, 'without preserving his honour.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

2. Of Misedome for a Mans selfe.



N Ant is a wife Creature for it felf, but it is a shrewd thing in

an Orchard, or a garden. And certainlye Men that are great lovers of themfelves, wast the publike. Divide with reason betweene selfe-love, and societye, and be so true to thie self, as thou be not salfe to others.

It is a poore Centre of a Mans actions, himselfe; It is right Earth, For that onely standes fast vponn his owne Centre, Whereas all thinges, that have affinitye with the heavens, move vpponn the Centre of another, which they benefitt. The referring of all to a Mans felf is more tolerable in a Sovereigne Prince, themselves because are not themselves, but theire good, and evill is at the

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

18. Wisdome for a Mans selfe.



N Ante is a wife creature for it felfe: But it is a shrewd thing in

And certainly men that are great louers of themfelues, waste the puplike. Divide with reason betweene selfe loue, and society: and bee so true to thy selfe, as thou be not false to others.

It is a poore Centre of a mans actions, himfelfe. It is right earth. For that only flands fast vpon his owne centre: whereas all things that have affinity with the heauens, moue vpon the centre of an other, which they benefit. The referring of all to a mans felfe, is more tollerable in a foueraigne Prince; because themselues not themselues; but their good and euill is at the

VX. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ TITLE. De Prudentia quæ sibi sapii, 'of prudence which is wise for one's self.'

<sup>Orchard. Omitted in the Latin.
Society. Amorem Reipublicæ, 'love of the state.'
True. Proximus, 'nearest.'</sup>

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

23. Of Misedome for a Mans selfe,1

N Ant is a wife Creature for it Selfe; But it is a shrewd Thing, in an Orchard,2 or Garden.

And certainly, Men that are great Louers of Themfelues, waste the Publique. Divide with reason betweene Self-loue, and Soaiety: 3 And be so true 4 to thy Selfe, as thou be not false to Others; Specially to thy King, and Country. It is a poore⁶ Center of a

Mans Actions, Himfelfe.7 It is right Earth.8 For that onely flands fast vpon his owne Center; Whereas all Things, that haue Affinity with the Heauens, moue vpon the Center of another, which they benefit. The Referring of all to a Mans Selfe, is more tolerable in a Soueraigne Prince; Because Themselues are not onely Themfelues; 10 But their Good and Euill, is at the

False. Injurius, 'unjust.'
Poore. Ignobile, 'ignoble.'

Himselfe. Commodium Proprium, 'his own interest.'

Earth. Terrestrem naturam sapit, 'savours of earthly nature.'

That onely. Terra, 'the earth.'

Their Good, &c. Sed publico periculo, et Fortuna, degunt, 'but they live with the danger and fortune of the people.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. perill of the publique Fortune, but it is a desperate evill in a Servaunt to a *Prince*, or a Cittizen in a Republique; For whatfoever affayres passe such a Mans hande hee crooketh them to his owne endes, which must needes be often excentrique to the endes of his Master, or State; Therefore lett Princes, or chuse such fervauntes, as have not this marke, except they meane theire feruice should be made but the Accessorie. And that which maketh the effect more pernicious is, that all proporcion is lost. disproporcion were enoughe for the feruauntes good to be preferred before But yet it the Maisters. is greater extreame, when a litle good of the feruauntes shall carry thinges against a great good of the Masters; and yet that is the case.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. perill of the publike fortune. But it is a desperate euil in a feruant to a Prince, or a Citizen in a Republike. For whatfoeuer affaires passe such a mans hand, hee crooketh them to his owne ends: which must needs beeosten Eccentrike to the ends of his master or state. Therefore let Princes or States. chuse fuch uants, as haue not this marke; except they meane their feruice should made but the accessary. And that which maketh the effect more pernitious, is, that al proportion is loft. disproportion It were enough for the feruants good to be preferred before the masters: But yet it is a greater extreme, when a little good of the feruants, shall carrie things against a great good of the masters. And yet that is the case;

¹¹ Whatsoeuer Affaires. Negotia publica universa, 'all public business.'
12 Pass . . Hands. Expediuntur, 'are despatched by.'
13 Servants. Ministros et Servos, 'officers and servants.'
14 Haue not. Non maculantur, 'are not spotted.'
15 All proportion. Rerum analogia, 'proportion of things.'

perill of the Publique Fortune. But it is a desperate Euill in a Seruant to a Prince, or a Citizen in a Republique. For whatfoeuer Affaires¹¹ passe such a Mans Hands, 12 he crooketh them to his owne Ends: Which must needs be often Eccentrick to the Ends of his Master, or State. Therefore let Princes, or States, choose such Seruants, 18 as haue not 14 this marke, Except they meane their Seruice should be made but the Accessary. That which maketh the Effect more pernicious, is, that all Proportion¹⁵ is loft. were disproportion enough, for the Seruants Good, to be preferred before the Masters; But yet it is a greater Extreme, when a little Good of the Seruant, shall carry Things,16 against a great Good of the Masters. And yet that is

V.

the case of Bad Officers, Treasurers, Ambassadours, Generals, and other False and Corrupt Seruants; which fet a Bias vpon their Bowle, of their owne Petty Ends, and Enuies, 17 to the ouerthrow 18 of their Masters Great and Important Affaires. And for the most part,

¹⁶ Carry things. Antefertur, 'be preferred to.'
17 And Enuies. Omitted in the Latin.
18 Ouerthrow. Quod eum in transversum inclinet utilitatis Domini sui,
'which inclines it contrary to the profit of their master.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

vauntes receive, is after the receive; is after ters Fortune. And certainly it is the nature of extreame Self-lovers. they will fett an howfe on fire, and it were but to rost theire egge. And yet theis Men manie tymes hold creditt with theire Maisters, because theire study is but to please them, and profitt themfelves; And for either respect, they will abandon the good of theire affaires.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

Ffor the good such ser- for the good such servants modell of their owne For- modell of their owne fortune, but the hurt, they tune: but the hurt they fell for that good, is after fell for that good, is after the modell of their Maf- the modell of their Maf-And certers Fortune. tainely it is the nature of extreme felfe-louers. they will fet an house one fire, and it were but to rost their egges; and yet! thefe men many hold credit with masters; because study is but to please. them, and profit themfelues; and for either refpect they will abandon the good of their affaires.





Lovers of themselves without a rival. Cicero. Ad Quint. Fratem. iii. 8.

¹⁹ Sell. Permutent, 'exchange.'
20 Extreme. Omitted in the Latin.
21 House. Domum Proximi, 'the house of their neighbour.'
22 Masters. Viros potentes, 'powerful men.'
23 Affaires. Domini sui, 'of their master.'

²⁴ Rats. Soricum, 'shrews.'

[.] for him. E Domo expellit, quam sibi defodit, non 25 Thrusts out alii, 'thrusts [the Badger] out of the house which he has dug for himself, not for another.

²⁶ Selfe-wisdome. Pulchra illa Sapientia, 'that fine wisdom.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

the Good fuch Seruants receive, is after the Modell of their own Fortune; But the Hurt they fell19 for that Good, is after the Modell of their Mafters Fortune. And certainly, it is the Nature of Extreme²⁰ Selfe-Louers; As they will fet an House²¹ on Fire, and it were but to roast their Egges: And yet hese Men, many times, hold credit with their Masters;22 Because their Study is but to please Them, and profit Themselves: And for either repect, they will abandon he Good of their Affaires. 23

Wisedome for a Mans selse, is in many Branches hereof, a depraued Thing. It is the Wisedome of Rats, 24 that will be sure to leave a House, somewhat refore it fall. It is the Wisedome of the Fox, that hrusts out the Badger, who digged and made Roome or him. 25 It is the Wisedome of Crocodiles, that shed eares, when they would deuoure. But that which is pecially to be noted, is, that those, which (as Cicero ries of Pompey) are, Sui Amantes sine Rivali, a are nany times vnsortunate. And whereas they have all heir time sacrificed to Themselves, they become in the nd themselves Sacrifices to the Inconstancy of Forune; whose Wings they thought, by their Sels-Wisedome, 26 to have Pinnioned.



III. 1607-12. æt. 47·52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

3. Of Robilitye.



T is a reverend thing to fee an auncient Castell. or building not

in decaye; or to fee a faier tymber Tree found, and perfect; how much more to behold an auncient Noble familye, which hath stood against the waves, and weathers of the Act of Tyme. The first Raysers of Fortunes are commonly more vertuous, but lesse innocent, then theire descendentes; For there is rarely ryfing, but by a commixture of good and euill Actes. But it is reason the memorie of theire vertues remaine to theire posterityes, and theire faultes dye with themselves: Nobilitie of higher; and hee that higher: And he

1612. IV. æt. 52.

7. Of Aobility.



T is a reuerend thing to fee an ancient castle or building not

in decay: or to faire timber tree found and perfect: how much more to behold an cient Noble familie, which hath flood against the waues and weathers tyme. For new Nobility time. For new Nobility is but the Act of Power, is but the act of power; but auncient Nobility is but ancient Nobility is the act of time. first raisers of Fortunes are commonly more vertuous, but lesse innocent. then their descendants. For there is rarely rifing. but by a commixture of good and euil Arts. But it is reason the memorie of their vertues remain to their posterities, and die with their faults Nobilitie themselues. Oi Birth commonly abateth Birth commonly abateth Industrie; and hee that is industrie: and hee that is not industrious, envyeth not industrious, enuieth him, that is; Besides Noble | him that is: Besides noble persons cannott goe much | persons, cannot goe much that

7

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

14. Of Asbility.

[Transposed, see below at pp. 193, 195.]

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. standeth at a stay when others rise, can hardlye avoyd mocions of envye. On thother fide, Nobilitye extinguisheth the passive Envie in others towardes them, because they are in

possession of Honor, and Envye is as the Sunbeames, that beate more vponnaryfing ground, then vponn a levell.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. standeth at a stay when others rife, can hardly auoid motions of enuie. On the other fide Nobility extinguisheth the passive enuie in others towards them; because they are in the possession of Honour: and Enuy is as the funne beames, that beate more vpon a rifing ground, then vpon a leuell.

[The paragraph on the opposite page was added in the 1625 edition, at the beginning of the Effay.]

¹ Need it. Proceres non desiderantur: 'peers are not needed.'

They. Status ille Popularis, 'that state of the people.'

Sedition. Factionibus et Turbis, 'factions and disturbances.'

Then where there are. Ubi non sunt, 'where there are not.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

14. Of Aobility.

[Transposed, see below, at pp. 193, 195.]

[These four lines were transposed in 1625 Edition to the Essay Of Enuy, see p. 514.]

E

E will speake of *Nobility*, first as a *Portion* of an *Estate*; Then as a *Condition* of *Particular Persons*. A *Monarchy*, where there is no *Nobility* at all, is ever a pure, and abso-

tte Tyranny; As that of the Turkes. For Nobility ttempers Soueraignty, and drawes the Eyes of the People, somewhat aside from the Line Royall. But or Democracies, they need it not; And they are commonly, more quiet, and lesse subject to Sedition, then there there are Stirps of Nobles. For Mens Eyes are pon the Businesse, and not vpon the Persons: Or if pon the Persons, it is for the Businesse sake, as sittest, and not for Flags and Pedegree. Wee see the witzers last well, not notwithstanding their Diuerstie of teligion, and of Cantons. For Vtility is their Bond, and not Respects. The united Prouinces of the Low countries, in their Gouernment, excell: For where here is an Equality, the Consultations are more indifferent, and the Payments and Tributes more cheerfull.

Pedegree. Imaginum, 'busts.'
Switzers last well. Helvetiorum Rempublicam satis florentem, 'the public of the Swiss, flourishing enough.'
Respects. Dignitas, 'honour.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

A great addeth Maiestie to a Mondiminisheth arch. but power; and putteth life, and spiritt into the people, but presseth theire fortunes. It is well when Nobles are not to great for Souereignty nor for Iustice, and yet mainteyned in that height, as the Infolencye of inferiours may bee broken vponn them, before it come on to fast vponn maiestie of Kings.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

Nobilitye | A great Nobilitie addeth maiesty to a Monarch, but diminisheth power: and putteth life and spirit into the people; but presseth their fortunes. It is well when nobles are not too great for Soueraigntie, nor for Iustice; and yet maintained in that height, as the infollency inferiours of may be broken vpon them, before it come on too fast vpon the maiestie of Kings.

[Originally at the beginning. Transposed here in 1625 Edition; see pp. 188, 190.]

<sup>Life and Spirit. Animos, 'spirit.'
Heigth. Dignitatis gradu, 'height of honour.'</sup>

be blunted by reverence of them, as if by a barrier.'

¹¹ Numerous nobility. Quæ plerunque minus potens est, 'which generally is less powerful.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

Agreat and Potent Nobility addeth Maiestie to Monarch, but diminisheth Power; And putteth Life and Spirit8 into the People, but presseth their Fortune. It is well, when Nobles are not too great for Soueraignty, nor for Iustice; And yet maintained in that heigth, as the Infolencie of Inferiours, may be broken vpon¹⁰ them, before it come on too fast vpon the Maiesty of Kings.

A Numerous Nobility, 11 caufeth Pouerty, and Inconuenience12 in a State: For it is a Surcharge of Expence; And besides, it being of Necessity, that many of the Nobility, fall in time to be weake in Fortune, it maketh a kinde of Disproportion,13 betweene Honour and Meanes.

As for Nobility in particular Persons; It is a Reuerend Thing, to fee an Ancient Castle, or Building not in decay; Or fee a faire¹⁴ Timber Tree, found and perfect: How much more, to behold an Ancient Noble Family, which hath stood against 15 the Waues and

¹² Inconvenience. Omitted in the Latin.
13 Disproportion. Divortium quoddam, sive malum Temperamentum,
'a kind of divorce or bad proportion.'
14 Faire. Annosam et proceram, 'old and tall.'
15 Stood against. Illasam, 'unhurt by.'

2= ...

st,

1607-12. æt. 47-52. | IV. III. 1612. æt. 52.

[Originally at the beginning. Transposed here in 1625 Edition; see pp. 188, 190.]

[See pp. 190, 191, 514.]

¹⁶ Power. Regiæ Potentiæ, 'royal power.'
17 Time. Temporis solius, 'time alone.'
18 To nobility. Ad Nobilitatis Fastigium, 'to the height of nobility.'
19 More vertuous. Virtutum Claritudine . . eminent, 'excel in the esteem of virtue.

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

weathers of Time. new Nobility is but the Act of Power;16 But Ancient Nobility is the Act of Time. 17 Those that are first raised to Nobility, 18 are commonly more Vertuous, 19 but lesse Innocent, then their Descendants: For there is, rarely, any Rifing,20 but by a Commixture, of good and euill Arts. But it is Reason, the Memory of their vertues, remaine to their Posterity; And their Faults die with themselues. Nobility of Birth, commonly abateth Industry: And he that is not industrious, enuieth him. Besides, Noble that is. persons, cannot goe much higher; And he that standeth at a stay, when others rife, can hardly auoid Motions of Enuy. On the other fide, Nobility extinguisheth the passive Enuy, from others towards them;21 Because they are in possession of 22 Honour.

Rising. Ad Honores, 'to honours.'

From others towards them. Omitted in the Latin.

In possession of. In Possessione nati, 'born in possession of.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

Certainly Kinges that have able Men of theire Nobilitve shall finde ease in ymploying them, and a better flyde in theire busines; for People naturally

IV. 1612. , æt. 52.

Certainely Kings that haue able men of their Nobility, shal find ease in imploying them; and a better flid in to their businesse: For people naturally bend to them, as borne in | bend to them, as borne in fome forte to commaunde. fome fort to command.





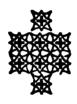
²³ Able. Prudentes et capaces, 'wise and able.'
24 Finde ease. Omitted in the Latin.
25 In imploying them. Si eos potissimum adhibeant. 'if they employ them chiefly.

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

Certainly Kings, that haue Able²³ men of their *Nobility*, shall finde ease²⁴ in imploying them; ²⁵ And a better Slide²⁶ into their. Businesse: For People naturally bend to them, ²⁷ as borne in some fort to Command.



Better Slide, &c. Negotia sua mollius fluere sentient, 'will find their business flow easier.

Them. Hujusmodi Proceres, 'nobles of this kind.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

14. Of Goodnes and Goodnes of Aature.



Take Goodnes in this fence; The affecting of the Weale of Men:

which is that the *Gracians* call Philanthropia; for the word Humanitie, (as it is vfed) it is a litle to light to expresse it; Goodnes I call the habite, and Goodnes of Nature, the Inclinacion; This of all vertues is the greatest, being the Character of the *Deitie*. and without it Man is a busie, mischevous wretched thing, noe better then a kind of Vermyne. Goodnes aunsweares to the *Theo*logicall vertue, Charitie, and admittes not excesse, but errour.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

8. Of Goodnesse, and goodnes of Aature.



Take goodnesse in this sence, the affecting of the Weale of men,

which is, that the Gracians call Philanthropia; for the word humanitie (as it is vsed) it is a little too light to expresse it. Goodnesse I call the habite; and goodnesse of Nature, the inclina-This of all vertues, tion. is the greatest: being the character of the Deitie; and without it, man is a busie, mischieuous, wretched thing: no better then a kind of vermine. Goodnesse answers to the Theologicall vertue Charity, not excesse, and admits but error.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Affecting. Affectus, qui Hominum Commoda studeat, et bene velit affection, which studies and wishes well to the weal of men.'

^{&#}x27;affection, which studies and wishes well to the weal of men.'

Light. Levius atque angustius, 'too light and narrow.'

Habit. Affectum, et Habitum, 'affection and habit.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

13. Of Goodnesse and Goodnesse of Rature.



Take Goodneffe in this Sense, the affecting of the Weale of Men.

which is that the Grecians call Philanthropia; And the word Humanitie (as it is vsed) is a little too light,2 to expresse it. Goodnesse I call the Habit, and Goodneffe of Nature, the Inclination. This of all Vertues, and Dignities of the Minde, is the greatest; being the Character4 of the Deitie: And without it, Man⁵ is a Busie, Mischieuous, Wretched Thing; No better then a Kinde of Vermine. Goodneffe answers to the Theologicall Vertue Charitie, and admits no Excesse, but Errour.

The desire of Power in Excesse, caused the Angels to fall; The defire of Knowledge in Excesse, caused Man to fall; But in Charity, there is no Excesse; Neither can Angell, or Man, come in danger by it. The Inclination to Goodneffe, is imprinted deepely in the

¹ Character. Adumbrata quædem Effigies, et Character: 'a sort of shadowed likeness and character.

Man. Homo Animalis, 'the animal man.'
Caused to fall. Calo deturbavit; 'thrust down from heaven.'
Caused Man to fall. Paradiso expulit; 'drove out of Paradise.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. 1612. æt. 52.

The Italians haue an vngracious proverbe Tanto buon che val niente. So good that he is good for Nothinge, and one of the Doctors of Italy Nicholas Matchiauell had the confidence to putt in writing almost in plaine termes, that the Christian faith had given vp good Men in praye, to those that indeed there was never Lawe, or sect, or opinion did so much magnifie Goodnes as the Christian Religion doth. Therefore to avoyd the Scandall, and

The *Italians*. haue vngracious prouerbe, Tanto buon, che valmiente; So good, that he is for nothing. And of the Doctors of Ftalie, Nicholas Machiauel had the confidence to put in in writing, almost in plaine termes; That the Christian faith had given vp good men in prey, to those that are are tyrannicall, and vniust; tyrannicall and vniust; which he spake because which hee spake, because indeed there was neuer law, nor fect, or opinion, did fomuch magnifie goodnes, as the Christian religion doth. Therefore to auoid the scandall, and the danger both, it is good | the danger both; it is good to take knowledge of the to take knowledge of the

the people.'

12 Waggishnesse. Omitted in the Latin.

⁸ Issue not. Benefaciendi Materia, aut Occasione, destituta, non inveniat, quo se exerceat in Homines, 'having no matter or occasion of doing good, it does not find a means of working upon men.

 ⁹ Cruell. Sæva et fera, 'cruel and savage.'
 ¹⁰ Christian Boy. Aurifex quidam Venetus, 'a Venetian goldsmith.' 11 Stoned. Vix furorem Populi effugerit, 'scarcely escaped the fury of

1625.

æt. 65.

lature of Man: In fo much, that if it issue not8 towards Ien, it will take vnto Other Liuing Creatures: As it feen in the Turks, a Cruell⁹ People, who neuerthesse, are kinde to Beasts, and give Almes to Dogs, and irds: In fo much, as Busbechiusa reporteth; A Chrifan Boy10 in Constantinople, had liked to haue been oned, 11 for gagging, in a waggishnesse, 12 a longe Billed owle. Errours, indeed, in this vertue of Goodneffe, or 'harity, may be committed.

he *Italians* haue ngracious Prouerb: Tanbuon che val niente: o good, that he is good r nothing. And one f the Doctors of Italy, 18 licholas Macciauel, had le confidence to put in riting, almost in plaine ermes: That the Christian aith, had given up Good 14 len, in prey, to those, that eTyrannicall, and vniust.b hich he spake, because deed there was neuer aw, or Sect, or Opinion, dsomuch magnifie Goodfle, as the Christian Region doth. Therfore to ioid the Scandall, and e Danger¹⁵both; it is good take knowledge, of the

Augier de Ghislien, Seigneur de Busbecq. [b. 1522—d. 28 Oct. 1592] Germ ambassador to Turkey, wrote Legationis Turcicæ epistolæ quatuor, it published entire at Paris in 1589. The above circumstance is narrated Letter III. (p. 141. Ed. 1595), dated Constantinople. Calendis Iunij. 1560. Machiavelli. Discorsi sopra la prima Deca di Tuto Livio. ii. 2.

One of the Doctors of Italy. Omitted in the Latin.
Good. Probos et innocentes, 'good and harmless.'
Danger. Periculi Ictum et Minas, 'the stroke and the threats of danger.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. errours of an habite fo

excellent. Seeke the good of other Men, but bee not in bondage to theire faces, or fancies, for that is but facilitye. foftnes and which taketh an honest minde Prisoner. Neither give thou *Æfops* Cock a gemme, who would be better pleased and happier, if he had had a Barley corne. The Example of God teacheth the lesson truly; He fendes his rayne, and maketh his Sun to shine vpon the iust and vniust, but he doth rayne wealth, nor Shynehonours, and vertues vppon Men equallye; Common benefittes are to be communicate with all, but peculiar benefittes with choife. And beware how in makeing the pourtraiture, thou breakest the patterne: For Divinitye maketh the love of ourfelves the patterne, the love of our

:

IV. 1612. æt. 52. errors of an habite for excellent. Seek the good of other men, but be not in bondage to their faces or fancies: for that is but facility, and **foftnesse** which taketh an honest minde prisoner. Neither giue thou Æ sops Cocke 3 gem, who would be better pleased and happier, if he had had a Barly The example of corn. God teacheth the lesson He sendeth his truly. and maketh his raine, funnetoshinevpon the iust and vniust; but hee doth raine wealth, no: not shine honour and vertue vpon men equally. Common benefits are to be communicate with all, but peculiar benefits with choise. And beware how in making the portrature, thou breakest the For Divinita patterne. maketh the loue of our feluci the patterne, the loue of ou Neighbours, but the pour- neighbours but the Ire traiture. Sell all thou haft, traiture. Sell all thou has and give it to the poore and and give it to the poore, and

¹⁶ Errours. Errores, qui nos a recto tam insignis Habitus tramite, trate vorsos agant, 'the errors which drive us from the straight path of so excellent a habit.'

æt. 65.

Errours, 16 of an Habit, fo excellent. Seeke the Good of other Men, but be not in bondage, to their Faces, or Fancies; For that is but Facilitie, or Softnesse; which taketh an honest Minde Prisoner. Neither giue thou Æfops Cocke a Gemme, who would be betterpleased, and happier, if he had had a Barly Corne. The Example of God teacheth the Lesson truly: He fendeth his Raine, and maketh Sunne to shine, vpon the Iust, and Vniust; a But hee doth not raine Wealth, nor hine Honour, and Vertues, vpon Men equally. Common benefits, are to be communicate with all; But peculiar Benefits, choice.17 And beware, how in making the Portraiture, thou breakest the Patterne: For Divinitie maketh the Loue of our Selues the Patterne; The Loue of our Neighbours but the Portraiture. all thou hast, and it to the poore,

^a Matt. xxv. 45.

¹⁷ Choice. Paucis, et cum delectu, 'to a few, and with choice.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

followe me, but fell not all thou hast, except come, and followe me; that is, except thou have a vocacion, wherein thou maiest doe as much good with litle meanes, as with great; For otherwise in feeding the streames, thou dryest the fountaine. Neither is there onely a habite of Goodnes directed by right reason: but there is in some Men, euen in Nature a disposicion towardes it; as on th[e]other fide there is a naturall Malignity; For there bee that in theire nature doe not affect the good of others. The lighter forte of Malignitye tourneth but to a Crosnes, or frowardnes, aptnes or to oppose, or difficilenes, or the like, but the deeper forte to envye and meere mischeif.

1612. IV. æt. 52.

follow me; but fell not all hast, except follow come and that is, except thou have a vocation, wherein thou maiest doe as much good with little meanes, as with great. For otherwise in feeding the stremes, thou driest the fountaine. Neither is there onely a habite of goodnesse, directed by right reason: but there is in fome men, euen in nature, disposition towards it: as on the other fide, there a natural malignity. For there bee that in their nature doe not affect the good of others: the lighter fort of malignitie, turneth but to a crossenesse, or frowardnesse, or aptnelle to oppose, or difficilnesse. or the like: but the deeper fort, to enuie and meere mischief.

There be manie theire practize to bring Men | their practife to bring men

There be mary that make it Mifanthropi, that make it

¹⁸ Nature. Ingenii proprii Instinctu, 'by the instinct of their nature.'

19 Deeper. Gravius . . atque altius, 'The more serious and deeper.

1625.

æt. 65.

follow mee. But fell not all thou hast, except thou come, and follow mee; That is, except thou have a Vocation, wherin thou maist doe as much good, with little meanes, as with great: For otherwise, in seeding the Streames, thou drieft the Fountaine. Neither is there only a Habit of Goodnesse, directed by right Reason; but there is, in fome Men, euen in Nature, a Disposition towards it: As on the other fide, there is a Naturall Malignitie. For there be, that in their Nature, 18 doe not affect the Good of Others. The lighter Sort of Malignitie, turneth but to a Crosnesse, or Frowardnesse, or Aptnesse to oppose, or Difficilnesse, orthe like; but the deeper 19 Sort, to Enuy, and meere

V.

Mischiefe. Such Men, in othermens Calamities, are, as it were, in season, and are euer on the loading Part; Not so good as the Dogs, that licked *Lazarus* Sores; but like Flies, that are still buzzing, vpon any Thing that is raw; 21

Mifanthropi, that make it heir Practife, to bring Men,

⁶ Mark x. 21.

²⁰ On the loading Part. Easque semper aggravant, 'and always increase bem.'

²¹ Raw. Cruda quaque et excoriata, 'what is raw and excoriated.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. to the Boughe, and yet have never a Tree for the pur-

pose in theire Gardens;

Such disposicions are the very errours of humaine Nature, and yet they are the fittest tymber to make great Pollitiques of, like to knee-tymber that is good for Shipps that are ordained to be tossed; but not for building houses, that shall stand firme.

ાં પ



IV. 1612. æt. 52. to the bough, and yet have neuer a tree for the purpofe in their gardens, as Timon had. Such dispositions are the very errors humane nature: and yet they are the fittest timber to make great Politiques of; like to knee-timber that is good for shippes that are ordained to be toffed, but not for building houses that shall stand



firme.

²² Such dispositions. Ingenia ita disposita, non injuria vocare lint.
natures thus disposed may be not unjustly called.'
23 Errours. Vomicas et Carcinomata. 'boils and cancers.'

²⁴ Great Politiques. Mercurii Politicii; 'Mercurial politicians.'
25 Strangers. Hospites et Peregrinos. 'strangers and foreigners.'

1625.

æt. 65.

othe Bough; And yethaue neuer a Tree, for the puroose, in their Gardens, as Timon had. Such Dispositions, 22 are the very Errours²³ of Humane Nature: And yet they are the fittest Timber, o make great Politiques²⁴ of: Like to knee Timber, hat is good for Ships, hat are ordained, to be offed; But not for Buildng houses, that shall stand irme.

V.

The Parts and Signes of Goodneffe are many. Man be Gracious, and Curteous to Strangers, 25: shewes, se is a Citizen of the World; And that his Heart, is 10 Island, cut off from other Lands; but a Continent, hat ioynes to them. If he be Compassionate, towards he Afflictions of others, it shewes²⁶ that his Heart is ike the noble Tree, that is wounded it selfe, when it jues the Balme. If he easily Pardons and Remits Iffences, it shews, that his Minde is planted aboue niuries; So that he cannot be shot.27 If he be Thankull for small Benefits, it shewes, that he weighes Mens Mindes, and not their Trash. But aboue all, if he haue F. Pauls Perfection, that he would wish to be an Inathema from Christ, for the Saluation of his Brethren, thewes much of a Diuine Nature,28 and a kind of Conformity with Christ himselfe.



Shewes. Nobilitat, 'ennobles.'
Be shot. Supra Injuriarum Jactum et Tela, 'above the reach and

he weapons of injury '
28 Divine Nature. Proxime illum accedere ad Naturam divinam, 'that c approaches very near to the Divine nature.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. Harleian MS. 5106.

5. Of Beantie.



Ertue is like a rich stone, best plaine fett. And fuerlie vertue is

best sett in a body that is comelie though not of delicate features, and that hath rather dignitye prefence, then beawtie of Neither is it almost seene, that verie beautifull persons are otherwise of great vertue; as if nature were rather busie not to erre, then in laboure to produce excellencye; And therefore they prove accomplished, but not of great spiritt; And not of great spirit; and studie rather behauiour, study rather behauiour then vertue.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

24. Of Beanty.



rich stone, best plain fet: and furely vertue is

best fet in a body that is comely though not of delicate features; and that hath rather dignity presence, then beauty of aspect. Neither is it almost seene, that beautiful persons otherwise of great vertue: as if nature were rather busie not to erre, then in labour to produce excellency. And therefore they proue accomplished, but then vertue.

In beautie that of favour In Beautie, that of fauour is more then that of colour; and that of decent and and that of decent and

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1688.

Of Delicate Features. Delicato, 'delicate.'
 Presence. Aspectus, 'of aspect.'
 Aspect. Omitted in the Latin.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

43. Of Beauty.



Ertue is like a
Rich Stone, best
plaine set: And
furely Vertue is

best in a Body, that is comely, though not of Delicate Features: And that hath rather dignity of Presence,² then *Beauty* of Aspect.³ Neither is it almost feene, that very Beautifull Persons, otherwise of great Vertue; As if Nature, were rather Busie not to erre, then in labour,4 to produce Excellency. And therefore, they proue Accomplished,5 but not of great Spirit; And Study rather Behauiour, then Vertue; But this

holds not alwaies; For Augustus Cæsar, Titus Vespasianus, Philip le Belle of France, Edward the Fourth of England, Alcibiades of Athens, Ismael the Sophy⁶ of Persia, were all High and Great Spirits; And yet the most Beautifull Men of their Times.⁸

In *Beauty*, that of Fauour,⁹ is more then that of Colour.

And that of Decent and

⁴ Labour. Omitted in the Latin.

Accomplished. Conversationibus apti, 'fit for intercourse.'

[•] Sophy. Omitted in the Latin.

⁷ High and Great Spirits. Viri prorsus magni, 'very great men.'

[•] Of their Times. Omitted in the Latin. • Fauour. Venustas, 'comeliness.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

gracious mocion, more then that of favour. That is the best part of beauty which a picture cannott expresse, noe nor the first fight of the life; and there is noe excellent Beautie, that hath not fome strangenes in the proporcions. A man cannot tell whether Appelles or Albert Durere were the more trifler: Whereof the one would make a Parsonage bv | Geometricall proporcions, the other by takeing the best partes out of divers faces to make one excel-Such parfonages I lent. thinke would please noe bodye, but the painter, Not but that made them. I thinke a Painter may make a better face then ever was; But he must doe it by a kinde of felicity (as a Musition, that maketh an excellent ayre in Mufick) and not by rule.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

motion. gratious more then that of fauour. That is the best part of beauty which a picture cannot expresse: no nor the first fight of the life: and there is no excellent beauty. that hath not fome strangenesse in the proportions. Λ man cannot tell whether Apelles or Albert Durere were the more Whereof one the would make personage a Geometrical proportions. the other by taking the best parts out of divers faces, to make one excel-Such personages I lent. thinke would please no body, but the Painter that made them. Not but I thinke a Painter may make a better face then euer was: But heemust doe it by a kinde of felicity. (as a Musitian that maketh an excellent aire in Mufick) and not by rule.

¹⁰ Motion. Oris et Corporis motus, 'motion of the face and body.
11 Personages. Effigies, 'images.'
12 That made them. Omitted in the Latin.
13 Was. In vivis fuit, 'was in life.'
14 Folicies. Volicitate and body.

¹⁴ Felicity. Felicitate quadam, et casu, 'by a kind of felicity and chance'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

Gracious Motion, 10 more then that of Fauour. That is the best Part of Beauty, which a Picture cannot expresse; No nor the first Sight of the Life. There is no Excellent Beauty, that hath not some Strangenesse in the Proportion. A Man cannot tell, whether Apelles, or Albert Durer, were the more Trifler: Whereof the one would Personage by make a Geometricall Proportions: The other, by taking the best Parts out of divers Faces, to make one Excellent. Such Personages, 11 I thinke, would please no Body, but the Painter, that made them.12 Not but I thinke a Painter, may make a better Face, then euerwas;13 But hemust doe it, by a kinde of Felicity,14 (As a Musician that maketh an excellent Ayre in Muficke)15 And not by Rule.16

A Man shall see Faces, that if you examine them, Part by Part, you shall finde neuer a good; And yet all together doe well.

15 Excellent Ayre in Musicke. Cantus, 'melody.'

¹⁶ Rule. Regulis Artis, 'rules of art.'
17 Finde neuer a good. Vix unam reperies quam separatim probes, 'you shall scarcely find one that you will approve of separately.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Yf it be true that the principall part of Beautie is in decent mocion, Certainly it is no mervaile, though persons in yeeres seeme manie tymes more ami-Pulchrorum Auable. tumnus pulcher. For noe youth can be comely, but by pardon and by considering the youth, as to make vpp the comelynes. Beautie is as fommer fruites which are easie to corrupt, and cannott last; and for the most part it makes a dissolute youth, and an age a litle out of countenance; But yet certainlie againe if it light well, it maketh vertues shyne, and vices blushe.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

If it bee true that the principall part of beautie is in decent motion; certainely it is no maruell, though persons in yeeres seeme many times more Pulchrorum able tumnus pulcher. For no youth can be comely, but by pardon, and confi dering the youth, as to make vp the comlinesse Beauty is as fomme fruits, which are easie w corrupt, and cannot last and for the most part, it makes a diffolute youth and an age a little out of countenance: But yet certainly againe, if it light well it maketh vertues shine, and vices blush.





¹⁸ More Amiable. Junioribus amabiliores, 'more amiable than younger persons.'

19 Before Pulchrorum. Secundum illud Euripidis, 'according to the saying of Euripides.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

If it be true, that the Principall Part of Beauty, is in decent Motion, certainly it is no maruaile, though Persons in Yeares, seeme many times more Amiable;18 19 Pulchrorum Autumnus pulcher: 4 For no Youth can be comely,20 but by Pardon, and confidering the Youth, as to make vp the comelinesse. Beauty is as Summer-Fruits, which are easie to corrupt, and cannot last: And, for the most part, it makes a dissolute Youth, and an Age a little out of countenance:21 But yet certainly againe, if it light well, it maketh Vertues shine, and Vices blush.



The autumn of beautiful persons is beautiful. A saying of Euripides, preserved in Plutarch's Alcibiades. i. 5.

"Euripides would say of persons that were beautifull, and yet in some yeeres; In faire bodies, not onely the Spring is pleasant, but also the Autumne." Lord Bacon's Apophth. No. 145. Ed. 1625.

²⁰ After comely. Per omnia, 'in everything.'

out of countenance. Sero panitentem, 'repenting too late.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106.

6. Of seeminge wise.



T hath beene an opinion, that the French are wifer then they

feeme, and the Spaniards feeme wifer then they are. But howfoever it bee betwene Nacions, Certainly it is foe betweene Man. and Man. For as Appostle faieth of Godli-Hauing a shew of Godlines, but denying the power thereof Soe certainly there are in pointe of wisedome, and sufficiency, that doe nothing, folemlye. or litle verie Magno conatu nugas. is a ridiculous thing, and fitt for a Satyre to persons of Iudgement, to fee what theis **shiftes** Formalists. have, and what perspectiues to make superficies, to feeme body, that hath depth and bulk. Some are fo close, and reserved, as they will not shewe theire IV. 1612. æt. 52.

20. Of Seeming wise.



T hath beene an opinion, the French are wifer then they

feeme, and the Spaniards feem wifer than they are: But howfoeuer it be between Nations, certainely it is so between and Man. For as the of Apostle faith nesse: Having a shew of godlinesse, but denying the power thereof; So tainlie there are in point wisdome and of ciencie, that doe nothing or little verie folemnly: Magno conatu nugas. is a ridiculous thing, and fit for a Satyre to persons of iudgement, to see what thefe **shifts** formalifts. haue, and what perspectiues to make Superficies to feeme body, that hath depth and bulke. Some are so close, and reserved. as they will not shew their

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ TITLE. De Prudentia Apparente, 'of seeming wisdom.'
² In Points of Wisedome, and Sufficiency. Cum Prudentes minime, 'thoug' they are not at all wise.'

V.

1625.

T hath been an

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

26. Gt Seeming wise.1

Opinion, the French are wifer then they ieeme; And the Spaniards eeme wiser then they are. But howfoeuer it be between Nations, Certainly it is fo between Man and Man. For as the Apostle faith of Godlinesse; Hauing a shew of Godlinesse, but denying the Power thereof; So certainly, there are in Points of Wisedome, and Sufficiency,2 that doe Nothing or Little, very folemnly; Magno conatu Nugas.b It is a Ridiculous Thing, and fit for a Satyre, to Persons of Iudgement, to see what shifts³ these Formalists haue, and what Prospectiues, to make Superficies to feeme Body, that hath Depth and Bulke.4 Some are so Close and Reserved,5 as they will not shew their

^a 2 Tim. iii. 5. ^b Magno conatu magnas nugas dixerit, 'with great effort she uttered great trifles.' Terence. Heauton. iv. 1.

³ Shifts. In quot Formas se vertant, 'into how many forms they turn themselves.'

Bulke. Dimensionem Solui, 'the bulk of a solid body.
Reserved. In se declarando parci, 'reserved in declaring themselves.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

wares, but by a darke light, and seeme alwaies to keepe back fomewhat, and when they knowe within themfelves, they fpeake of that they doe not well knowe, would nevertheles feeme to others to knowe of that which they may not well fpeake. Some helpe themfelves with countenance. and gesture, and are wife by fignes, as Cicero faieth of *Pifo*, that when he aunfweared him, hee fetched one of his browes vp to his forehead, and bent the other downeto his Chinne: respondes altera ad frontemfublato, altero ad mendepresso supercilio, crudelitatem tibi non placere. Some thinke to beare it by fpeaking a great word, and being peremptorye, and will goe on, and take by admittance that which they cannot make Some whatfoever good. is beyond theire reach they will feeme to dispife, or make light of, as impertinent or curious, and fo IV. 1612. æt. 52.

wares, but by a darke light; and feeme alwaies to keepe back fomewhat; and when they know within themfelues, they speake of that they doe not well know; would neuertheleffe feeme to others, to know of that which they may not well fpeake: Some helpe themfelues with countenance and gesture, and are wife by fignes, as Cicero faith of Pifo, that when he anfwered him, he fetched one of his brows vp to his forehead, and bent the other downe to his chinne: Respondes altero ad frontem fublato, altero ad mendepresso supercilio, crudelitatem tibi non placere. Some thinke to beare it by fpeaking a great word, and being peremptory, and will goe on and take by admittance that which they cannot make good. Some, whatfoeuer is beyond their reach, they will feeme to despife or make light of, as impertinent or curious; and fo

^{*} A clerical error for mentum.

⁶ Keepe backe. Videri volunt, plus significare, quam loqui, 'wish to seem to mean more than they say.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

Wares, but by a darke Light: And feeme alwaies to keepe backe6fomewhat:Andwhen they know within themselues, they speake of that they doe not well know, would neuerthelesse seeme to others, to know of that which they may not well⁷ speake. Some helpe themfelues with Countenance. and Gesture, and are wife by Signes; As Cicero faith of Piso, that when he answered him, he setched one of his Browes, vp to his Forehead, and bent the other downe to his Chin: Respondes, altero ad Frontem fublato, altero ad Mendepresso Supercilio; Crudelitatem tibi non placere.a Some thinke to beare it, by Speaking a great Word, and being peremptory; And goe on, and take by admittance that, which they cannot make good. Some, whatfoeuer is beyond their reach. will feeme to despise or make light of it, as Impertinent or Curious; And fo

[&]quot;You answer—with one eyebrow lifted to the forehead, and the other lowered to the chin—that cruelty does not please you. Cicero. In L. C. Pisone. vi.

Well. Tuto, 'safely.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

would have theire Ignorance feeme Iudgement. Some are never without a difference, and commonly by amuzing Men with a fubtiltye, blaunch the matter; of whom Gellius faieth. Hominem delirum qui verborum minutiis. rerum frangit pondera, of which kind also *Plato* in his *Pro*tagoras bringeth in Prodicus in scorne, and maketh him make a speach that confisteth of distinctions from the begininge to the end; But generally fuch Men in all deliberacions find ease to be of the Nagative fide, and affect a creditt to obiect, and foretell difficultnes; Ffor when proposicions are denied, there is an end of them; but if they be allowed, it requireth a new worke; which false pointe of wisedome is the bane of Busi-To conclude there noe decaying Merchaunt, or inward Begger, hath fo manie trickes to hath fo many tricks to

IV. 1612. æt. 52. would have their Ignorance feeme iudgement. Some are neuer without a difference, and commonly by amusing men with a subtilty, blanch the matter. Of whom Gelius Hominem delirum, qui verborom minutijs frangit pondera. Of which kinde also, Plato in his Protagoras bringeth in Prodicus in scorne, and maketh him a speech that fifteth of distinctions from the beginning to the end. Generally, fuch men in all deliberations. finde ease to be of the Negative fide, and affect a credit to object and foretell difficulties. For when propositions are denied. there is an end of them. but if they bee allowed, it requireth a new worke: which false point of wisedome, is the bane of buli-To conclude, there nesse. decaying is no chant, or inward begger.

⁸ Would haue. Inscitiam suam obtendunt, 'conceal their ignorance.'
9 Iudgement. Judicio limato, 'with a show of refined judgment.'
10 Men. Hominum Ingenia, 'men's minds.'

¹¹ Blanch the matter. Rem prætervehuntur, 'slip the matter by.'
12 Speech. Sermonem integrum, 'entire speech.'
13 Finde ease. Libenter se applicant, 'willingly apply themselves to.'
14 Difficulties. Scrupulis et Difficultatibus, 'scruples and difficulties.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

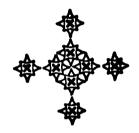
would haue8their Ignorance feeme Iudgement. are neuer without a difference, and commonly by Amusing Men¹⁰ with a Subtilty, blanch the matter;11 Of whom A. Gellius a saith; Hominem delirum, qui Verborum Minutijs Rerum frangit Pondera. 4 Of which kinde also, Plato in his Protagoras bringeth in Prodicus, in Scorne, and maketh him make a Speech,12 that confisteth of distinctions from the Beginning to the Generally, Such Men in all Deliberations. finde ease¹³ to be of the Negatiue Side; and affect a Credit, to object and foretell Difficulties:14 For when propositions are denied, there is an End of them; But if they be allowed, it requireth a New Worke: which false Point of Wisedome, is the Bane of Businesse. To conclude, there decaying no chant, or Inward Beggar,15 hath fo many Tricks, to

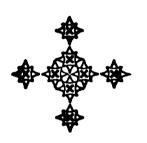
^a [Lit. An insane man who breaks the weight of things with fineness of words.] A mistaken quotation as to the Author. It is from Quintillian, who, referring to Seneca, says; Sirerum pondera minutissimæ sententis non fregisset, consensu potius eruditorum quam puerorum amore comprobaretur, 'If he had not broken the weight of things with most minute sentences, he would have been honoured rather by the unanimous approval of the learned, than by the admiration of boys.' Inst. x. 1.

¹⁵ Inward Beggar. Decoctor Rei familiaris occultus, 'hidden spendthrift of his family property.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. ciencye.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. vphold the creditt of their | vphold the credit of their Wealth, as these empty wealth, as these emptie persons have to mainteine persons have to maintaine the Creditt of theire sufficiency.





16 Empty. Vera Prudentia destituti 'destitute of true wisdom.'
17 Sufficiency. Prudentia, 'wisdom.'

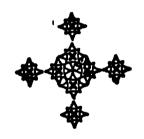
V.

1625.

æt. 65.

vphold the Credit of their wealth, as these Empty¹⁶ persons haue, to maintaine the Credit of their Suffi-

ciency.¹⁷ Seeming Wife¹⁸-men may make shift to get Opinion: But let no Man choose them for Employment; ¹⁹ For certainly, you were better take for Businesse, a Man somewhat Absurd, then ouer Formall.



¹⁸ Seeming Wise. Hac prudentia praditi, 'endowed with this wisdom.'
19 Employment. Ad Negotia gravi z tractanda, 'to manage important business.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106.

9. Of Ambition.



like M bition is Choler which is an humour that maketh

active, earnest, full of alacrity, and stirringe, if it be not stopped. But if it be stopped, and cannott have way, it becometh Adust, and thereby maligne and venemous. ambitious Men if they find the way open of theire rysinge and still gett forward, they are rather busie then daungerous; but if they be checked in theire they become defieres, fecretly discontent, looke vpponn Men and matters with an evill Eye, and are best pleased when goe backward; thinges which is the worst property that can bee in a feruante of a Prince, or State. There fore it is good for Princes, if they vse ambitious Men, to handle it foe, as they be still progressive, and not

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

22. Of Ambition.



Mbition is like choler; which is an humor that maketh

active, earnest, full of alacrity and stirring, if it be not stopped. But if it be stopped, and cannot have his way, it becommeth a dust, and thereby maligne and venemous. ambitious men if they finde the way open for their rifing, and still get forward; they are rather busie then dangerous: they be checked in their desires, they become fecretly discontent, and looke vpon men. matters with an euill eie. and are best pleased when goe backward: things which is the worst propertie that can be in a feruant of a Prince, or State. fore it is good for Princes, if they vse ambitious men to handle it so, as they be stil progressiue, and not

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

Adust. Adusta, 'inflamed.'
 Way Open. Repulsas non patiantur, 'do not suffer repulses.'
 Rising. Ambitu et Petitione, 'rising and desire.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

36. Of Ambition.

Mbition is Choler; Which is an Humour, that maketh MenAc-

tiue, Earnest, Full of Alacritie, and Stirring, if it be not stopped. But if it be stopped, and cannot have his Way, it becommeth Adust,1 and thereby Maligne and Venomous. Ambitious Men, if they finde the way Open² for their Rifing,3 and still get forward, they are rather Busie then Dangerous; But if they be check't in their defires,4 they become fecretly discontent,5 and looke vpon Men matters, with an Euill Eye: And are best pleased, when Things goe backward; Which is the worst Propertie, in a Seruant of a Prince or State. Therefore it is good for Princes, if they vse Ambitious Men, to handle it so, as they be still Progressiue, and not

⁴ After desires. Et subinde frustrentur, 'and are frequently frustrated.'
5 Become secretly discontent. Malevolentiam et Invidiam in Corde fovent, 'they cherish ill-will and envy in their heart.'
6 Best pleased. In sinu latantur, 'pleased in their heart.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

retrograde; which because it cannott bee without inconvenience, it is good not to vse fuch Natures at all. Ffor if they rife not with theire fervice, they will take order to make theire fervice fall with them.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. retrograde: which because

it cannot bee without inconvenience; it is good not to vie fuch natures at all. For if they rife not with their feruice, they will take order to make their feruice fal with them.

10 Brideled. Franandi et coercendi, 'bridled and restrained.'

⁷ Commanders. Imperatores et Duces, 'commanders and leaders.'
8 Dispenseth. Compensat, 'equalizes.'
9 Pulling downe, &c. Ut pragrandibus alas amputent, et eorum potentiam labefactent, 'to cut the wings of persons who are too great, and to diminish their power.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

Retrograde: Which because it cannot be without Inconuenience, it is good not to vse fuch Natures at all. For if they rife not with their Seruice, they will take Order to make their Seruice fall with

them. But since we have said, it were good not to vse Men of Ambitious Natures, except it be vpon necessitie, it is fit we speake, in what Cases, they are of necessitie. Good Commanders in the Warres, must be taken, be they neuer so Ambitious: For the Vse of their Seruice dispenseth8 with the rest; And to take a Soldier without Ambition, is to pull off his Spurres. There is also great vse of Ambitious Men, in being Skreenes to Princes, in Matters of Danger and Enuie: For no Man will take that Part, except he be like a Seel'd Doue, that mounts and mounts, because he cannot fee about him. There is Vse also of Ambitious Men, in Pulling downe the Greatnesse, of any Subject that ouer-tops: As Tiberius vsed Macro in the Pulling down of Seianus. Since therefore they must be vsed, in fuch Cases, there resteth to speake, how they are to be brideled, 10 that they may be lesse dangerous. 11 There is lesse danger of them, if they be of Meane Birth, then if they be Noble: And if they be rather Harsh¹² of Nature, then Gracious and Popular: And if they be rather New Raifed,13 then growne Cunning, and Fortified in their Greatnesse. It is counted by some, a weaknesse¹⁴ in Princes, to have Fauorites: ¹⁵ But it is, of

Dangerous. Ut minus ab illis impendeat Periculi, 'that less danger may impend from them.'

Harsh. Truciores et asperiores, 'more stern and harsh.'
Raised. Honoribus admoti, 'raised to honours.'
Weaknesse. Signum infirmi Animi, 'sign of a weak mind.'
Fauorites. Gratiosos et Intimos, 'favourites and intimates.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

1612. IV. æt. 52.

Of Ambitions it is the lesse | Of Ambitions, it is the lesse harmefull, the ambition to harmefull, the Ambition to prevaile in great thinges, then that other to appeare then that other to appeare in every thinge. For that breedes confusion, and marres businesse.

preuaile in great things; in euery thing: For that breedes confusion, marres businesse.

Hee that feeketh to be He that feeketh to be eminent amongest able eminent amongst

able

¹⁶ Ambitious Great-Ones. Potentiam nimiam Procerum, aut Magistra-

tuum, 'too great power of nobles or magistrates.'

17 Any Other. Alius aliquis ex Proceribus, 'any other of the nobles.'

18 Proud. Ambitiosos, et protervos, 'ambitious and proud.'

19 Keep Things steady. Qui Partes medias teneant, ne Factiones omnia pessundent: 'to hold a middle course, lest factions ruin everything.'

20 Hauing of them Obnoxious to Ruine. Quantum ad ingenerandam illam in Ambitiosis opinionem, ut se ruinæ proximos putent, atque eo mode contineantur; 'as to creating an opinion in ambitious persons that they are near ruin, and thus restraining them' near ruin, and thus restraining them.'.

æt. 65.

V.

1625.

all others, the best Remedy against Ambitious Great-Ones.16 For when the Way of Pleasuring and Displeasuring, lieth by the Fauourite, it is Impossible, Any Other¹⁷ should be Ouer-great. Another meanes to curbe them, is to Ballance them by others, as Proud¹⁸ as they. But then, there must be some Middle Counfellours, to keep Things steady:19 For without that Ballast, the Ship will roule too much. At the least, a Prince may animate and inure fome Meaner Persons, to be, as it were, Scourges to Ambitious Men. As for the hauing of them Obnoxious to Ruine,20 if they be of fearefull Natures, it may doe well: But if they bee Stout, and Daring, it may precipitate their Designes,²¹ and proue dangerous. As for the pulling of them downe, if the Affaires require it, and that it may not be done with fafety fuddainly, the onely Way is, the Enterchange continually of Fa-uours, and Difgraces; whereby they may not know, what to expect;²² And be,²³ as it were, in a Wood. Of Ambitions, it is lesse harmefull, the Ambition to

harmefull, the Ambition to preuaile in great Things, then that other, to appeare in euery thing; For that breeds Confusion,²⁴ and

marres Businesse. But yet, it is lesse danger, to have an Ambitious Man, stirring in Businesse, then Great in Dependances.²⁵

He that feeketh to be Eminent amongst Able

²¹ Designes. Conatus et Machinationes, 'endeavours and designs.'
²² What to expect. Unde attoniti et confusi hæreant, nescientes quid expectent, 'whereby they may remain astonished and confused, not knowing what to expect.'

Be. Ambulent, 'walk.'
 Confusion. Confusionem Consiliorum, 'confusion of councils.'
 Dependances. Gratia et Clientelis, 'favour and following.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Men, hathe a great Taske, but that is ever good for the publique. But hee that plotteth to be the onely figure amongst Ciphers, is the decay of an Honor hath whole age. three thinges in it. The Vantage ground to doe good. The Approache to Kinges, and principall per-· fons, And the Rayling of Mans owne Fortune. Hee that hath the best of theis intencions when he aspireth is an honest Man, and that Prince that can difcerne of theis intencions in another that aspireth is a wife Prince. Generally States lett Princes, and chuse such Ministers, as are more fenfible of dewty, then of Rysing, and such love busines rather conscience. then vponn vponn bravery, and lett them discerne a busie nature, from a willing mind.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

men, hath a great taske: but that is euer good for publike. But the that plots to bee the figure amongst Ciphers, is the decay of an whole age. Honour hath three things in it; The vantage ground to doe good; The approach to Kings and principall perfons; And the raising of a mans owne Fortunes. He that hath the best of these intentions when hee aspireth, as an honest man; and that Prince that can discerne of these intentions in another that aspireth, is a wife Prince. Generally, let Princes and chuse such ministers, as are more fenfible of duty, then of rising; and such as loue businesse rather conscience, vpon brauery: and vpon them discerne a busie nature, from a willing minde.





26 Able Men. Strenuos, et Negotiis pares, 'active men and men fit for business. Machinatur, ut Viros cordatos deprimat, et, 'plots to depres 27 Plots. wise men, and.'

Decay. Lues et calamitas, 'decay and misfortune.'
 Kings. Omitted in the Latin.

Discerne. Dignoscere et distinguere, 'discern and distinguish.'
That aspireth. In Servis suis, 'in his servants.'

٧.

1625.

æt. 65.

Men,²⁶ hath a great Taske; but that is euer good for the Publique. But he that plots, 27 to be the onely Figure amongst Ciphars, is the decay28 of an whole Age. Honour hath three Things in it: The Vantage Ground to doe good: The Approach to Kings,²⁹ and principall Perfons: And the Raising of a Mans owne Fortunes. He that hath the best of these Intentions, when he aspireth, is an Honest Man: And that Prince, that can discerneso of these Intentions, in Another that aspireth,31 is a wife Prince. Generally, let Princes and States, 32 choose such Ministers, as are more fensible of Duty, then of Rising; And such as loue³³ Businesse rather vpon Conscience;34 then vpon Brauery: And them Difcerne³⁵ aBusie³⁶ Nature, from a Willing³⁷ Minde.



States. Omitted in the Latin.

Loue. Amplectantur et ament, 'embrace and love.'

Conscience. Conscientia bona, 'good conscience.'

Discerne. Distinguant Principes cum judicio, 'let princes discern with

judgment.'

36 Busie. Quæ sese omnibus Negotiis ingerunt, 'which obtrude themselves into every business.

³⁷ Willing. Promptum seu alacrem, 'ready or alert.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

18. Of Riches.



Cannott call Riches better then the baggage of Vertue

word is Romaine better, Impedimenta) For as the Baggage is to an Army, fo is Riches to vertue. It cannott bee spared, nor left behinde; but it hindereth the Marche, yea and the care of it sometymes leeseth, or disturbeth the victorye. Of great Riches there is noe Reall vse, except it bee in the distribucion, the rest is but conceipt. So faieth Solomon; where much is, there are manie to confume it, and what hath the owner but the fight of it with his eyes! The perfonall good of anie Man cannot reach to feele them. There is a custody of great Riches, or a power of Dole, and Donatiue; or fame of them. but folid vſe noe

IV.

1612. æt. 52.

21. Of Riches.



Cannot call Riches better then the baggage of Vertue;

Romane better, Impedimenta; For as the baggage is to an Armie, fo is riches to vertue: It cannot be spared, nor left behinde; but it hindreth the March, yea and the care of it sometimes lofeth or disturbeth the victory. Of great Riches there is no reall vse, except it bee in the distribution: the rest is So faith but conceit. Salomon; Where much is, there are many to confume it, and what hath owner but the fight of it with his eies? The perfonall fruition in any man cannot reach to feele great riches; there is a custody of them; or a power of donatiue Dole and them; or a fame of them; the but no solide vse to the

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Better. Cognomine magis proprio, 'by a more proper name.'
2 It cannot . . March, 'Necessariæ siquidem sunt, sed graves, 'it is necessary but heavy.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

34. Of Riches.



call Cannot Riches better,1 then the Baggage of Vertue.

The Roman Word better, Impedimenta. For as the Baggage is to an Army, so is Riches to Vertue. It cannot be spared, nor left behinde, but it hindreth the March; Yea, and the care of it, sometimes, lofeth3 or disturbeth the Victory: Of great Riches, there is no Reall Vie, except it be in the Distribution; The rest is So faith but Conceit. Salomon; Where much is, there are Many to confume it; And what hath the Owner, but the Sight of it, with his Eyes?a The Perfonall Fruition in any Man, cannot reach to feele Great Riches . 4 There is a Custody of them; Or a Power of Dole and Donatiue them; Or a Fame⁵ of them; But no Solid Vse to the

^a Eccles. v. 11.

² Loseth. Omitted in the Latin. Personall Fruition. Riches. Possessio Divitiarum nulla voluptate Dominum perfundit, quantum ad Sensum: 'the possession of riches does not fill the owner with any pleasure as to sensation.'

Fame. Fama, et Inflatio, 'fame and puffing up.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Doe you not fee Owner. fayned prices are fett vpponn litle stones, and rarityes, and what workes of oftentacion are vndertaken, because there mought feeme to be fome vse of great Riches? But they may be of vse to buy Men out of Daungers, or troubles; as Salomon fayeth; Riches are as a stronge-houlde, in the imaginacion, of the riche Man. But this is excellently expressed, that it is in imaginacion, and not alwaies in fact. Ffor certainely great Riches have fould more men, then they have bought out. not proud Riches, but fuch as thou mayest gett iustly, foberly, distribute chearefully and leave contentedlye; yet have no abstract, nor Frierly contempt of them, but distinguishe as Cicero saieth well of Rabirius Posthumus; In studio rei amplificandæ, apparebat non auaritiæ præinstrumentum dam, fed

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

Doe you not fee owner. prifes are fained what fet vpon little stones, rarities, and works of oftentation are vndertaken, because there might seeme to bee some vse of great riches? they may be of vse to buy men out of dangers or troubles: as Salomon saith; Riches are as a strong hold in the imagination of the rich man. But this is excellently expressed, that it is in Imagination; and not alwaies in fact. For certainly, great riches haue fold more men then they haue bought out. not proud Riches; but fuch as thou maiest get iustly; soberlie, distribute vſe cheerefully, and leaue con-Yet haue no tentedly. abstract, nor frierly contempt of them. But distinguish, as Cicero saith well of Rabirius Posthumus: 7" studio rei amplificandæ, ap parebat non auaritiæ præinstrumentum dam fed

⁶ Works of Ostentation. Inania Opera, ad ostentationem meram, 'vain works, merely for ostentation.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

Owner. Doe you not see, what fained Prices, are let vpon little Stones, and Rarities ? And Works of Ostentation,6 are indertaken, because there night seeme to be, some Vie of great Riches? But hen you will fay, they may De of vie, to buy Men out of Dangers or Troubles. As Salomon faith; Riches we as a strong Hold, in the Imagination of the Rich Man.^a But this is excellently expressed, that it is in Imagination, and not alwaies in Fast. For certainly Great Riches, haue fold more Men, than they haue bought out. Seeke not Proud Riches, but such is thou maist get iustly, Vie foberly, Distribute cheerefully, and leaue con-Yet haue no entedly. Abstract⁸ or Friarly⁹ Contempt of them. But distinguish, as Cicero saith well of Rabirius Posthumus; In ^ludio rei amplificandæ, apbarebat, non Auaritæ Prædam, fed Instrumentum

^a Prov. xviiii. 11.

Proud. Magnas, 'great.'
 Abstract. A Seculo abstracti, 'or a man removed from the world.'
 Friarly. Instar Monachi, 'like a monk.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. 1612. æt. 52. III. bonitati quæri. bonitati quæri.

¹⁰ Beware. Nec inhia, 'nor gape after.'
11 Vniust Meanes. Injustitiam et Scelera, 'injustice and crimes.'
12 Husbandry. Agriculturam, et Lucra Rustica, 'husbandry and the profits of the country.'
18 Greatest Audits. Maximi Reditus, e Re Rustica, 'the greatest revenues from husbandry.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

Bonitati, quæri. Hearken also to Salomon, and beware 10 of Hasty Gathering of Riches: Qui festinat ad Diuitias, non erit infons.b The Poets faigne that when Plutus, (which is Riches,) is fent from Iupiter, he limps, and goes flowly; But when he is sent from Pluto, he runnes, and is Swift of Foot. Meaning, that Riches gotten by Good Meanes, and Iust Labour, pace slowly; But when they come by the death of Others, (As by the Course of Inheritance, Testaments, and the like,) they ome tumbling vpon a Man. But it mought be applied ikewise to Pluto, taking him for the Deuill. For when Riches come from the Deuill, (as by Fraud, and Oppression, and vniust Meanes, 11) they come vpon Speed. The Waies to enrich are many, and most of them Foule. Parsimony is one of the best, and yet is not Innocent: For it with-holdeth Men, from Workes of Liberality, and Charity. The Improvement of the Ground, is the nost Naturall Obtaining of Riches; For it is our Great Mothers Blessing, the Earths; But it is slow. ret, where Men of great wealth, doe stoope to husandry,12 it multiplieth Riches exceedingly. I knew a Nobleman in England, that had the greatest Audits, 13 of my Man in my Time: A Great Grasier, A Great sheepe-Master, A Great Timber 14 Man, A Great Colliar, I Great Corne-Master, A Great Lead-Man. and se of ron, and a Number of the like Points of Husbandry. is as the Earth seemed a Sea to him, in respect of the Perpetuall Importation. It was truly observed by One, hat Himselse came very hardly to a Little Riches, and very easily to Great Riches. For when a Mans Stocke s come to that, that he can expect the Prime of

This is spoken by Cicero of Caius Curius, the father of Rabirius Postuaus. The passage [Pro C. R. Postumo. 2.] runs thus, Ut in augenda re
ion avaritiæ prædam, sed instrumentum bonitati quærere videtur, 'that
le seemed in the increase of his property, not to seek a prey for his
ivarice but a means of doing good.'

Prov. xxviii. 20.

¹⁴ Timber. Silvis, tam cæduis quam grandioribus, 'both underwood und timber.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. 1612. æt. 52.

15 Prime of Markets. Nundinarum et Mercatuum Opportunitates, the opportunities of fairs and markets.'
¹⁶ Few Mens Money. Quibus.

. perpauci admodum Homines ap:

sunt, 'for which few men are ready.'

17 Younger. Qui minus Pecunia abundant, 'who have less money.'

18 Ordinary Trades and Vocations. Professionibus, 'businesses.'

19 Good and faire dealing. Probitatem in Negotiando, 'honesty in dealing.'

20 Bargaines. Contractibus majoribus, 'greater bargains.'

21 Necessity. Necessitates et Angustias, 'necessities and straits.'

22 Broake by ... to draw them on. In Damnum Dominorum corrumpat, 'corrupt, to the injury of their masters.'

23 Cunningly. Artificiose et vafre, 'by artifices and cunning.'

24 Crafty and Naught. Merito damnanda, 'deservedly to be condemned.'

demned.'

1625.

æt. 65.

farkets,15 and ouercome those Bargaines, which for ieir greatnesse are sew Mens Money, 16 and be Partner the Industries of Younger¹⁷ Men, he cannot but icrease mainely. The Gaines of Ordinary Trades nd *Vocations*, 18 are honest; And furthered by two hings, chiefly: By Diligence; And By a good Name, good and faire dealing.19 But the Gaines of Baruines,20 are of a more doubtfull Nature; When Men all waite vpon Others Necessity,21 broake by Seruants 1d Instruments to draw them on, 22 Put off Others cunngly²³ that would be better Chapmen, and the like ractifes, which are Crafty and Naught.24 As for the hopping of Bargaines,25 when a Man Buies, not to iold, but to Sell ouer againe, that commonly Grindeth ouble, both vpon the Seller, and vpon the Buyer. harings, doe greatly Enrich, if the Hands²⁶ be well 10sen, that are trusted. Vfury is the certainest leanes of Gaine, though one of the worst; As that, hereby a Man doth eate his Bread; In fudore vultûs lieni. And besides, doth Plough 27 vpon Sundaies. 28 But the Certaine though it be, it hath Flawes;29 For that le Scriueners and Broakers, doe valew unfound Men, serue their owne Turne. The Fortune, 30 in being the irst in an Invention, or in a Priviledge, doth cause metimes a wonderfull³¹ Ouergrowth³² in Riches; As it as with the first Sugar Man, 33 in the Canaries: Therere, if a Man can play the true Logician, to have as

^a In the sweat of another's brow.

²⁵ Chopping of Bargaines. *Emptiones*, 'purchases.'

²⁶ Hands. *Quibuscum Societas initur*, 'those with whom the partnership entered into.

Plough. Operari non cessat, 'does not cease to work.'
Sundaies. Sabbatho, 'the Sabbath.' [This is an early (1625) instance the Sunday being called the 'Sabbath.' Dies Sabbati being our

Flawes. Rimis secretis, 'secret flaws.' The Fortune. Omitted in the Latin.
Wonderfull. Omitted in the Latin.
Ouergrowth. Inundationem, 'overflow.'
Source Man Section of Sugar 1

Sugar Man. Sacchari excoctori, 'sugar baker.'

III. 1607-12. &t. 47-52. IV.

1612. æt. 52.

others, that seeme to despise others, that seeme to despise them, For they despise them: For they despise them, that despaire of them that none worse them, and them, and when they come to them. when they come to them-Be not penny-wife; Riches | Be not penny-wife; Riches have winges, and some- haue wings; and sometymes they fly away of them- times they fly away of themfelves, fometymes must be sett flying to bring | must bee set flying, to brin;

Neither trust thou much Neither trust thou much dispaire none work. they selues; sometimes

often times:.. Pouerty. Vix Fortunarum Dispendia vitabit, 'w's scarcely avoid the waste of his fortune.'

Not restrained. Lege nulla prohibentur, 'forbidden by no law.'

Great Meanes. Viam sternunt facilem, 'have an easy road.'

Seruice. Servitium Regum, aut Magnatum, 'services of king.''

great persons.'

Ba Though it be of the best Rise. Dignitatem quandam habet, 'has w'dignity.'

dignity.

1625.

æt. 65.

vell Iudgement, as Inuention, he may do great Maters; especially if the Times be fit. He that resteth pon Gaines Certaine, shall hardly grow to great Riches: And he that puts all upon Adventures, doth ften times breake, and come to Pouerty:34 It is good herefore, to guard Aduentures with Certainties, that nay vphold losses. Monopolies, and Coemption of Wares for Refale, where they are not restrained, 35 are reat Meanes³⁶ to enrich; especially, if the Partie haue ntelligence, what Things are like to come into Reuest, and so store Himselse before hand. Riches otten by Service, 37 though it be of the best Rise, 38 yet then they are gotten by Flattery, Feeding³⁹ Humours, nd other Seruile Conditions, they may be placed mongst the Worst. As for Fishing for Testaments and Executorships (as Tacitus saith of Seneca; Testamenta et Orbos, tanquam Indagine capi; a) It is yet worse; By ow much Men submit themselues, to Meaner Persons. hen in Service. Beleeue not much them,

hat feeme to despise Riches: For they despise hem, that despaire of nem; And none Worfe,40 then they come to them.41 Benot Penny-wife;42 Riches aue Wings, and fometimes ney Fly away of themelues, fometimes they must e fet Flying to bring

He took testaments and wardships as with a net. Tacitus. Annales.

Feeding. Sese flectendo, 'bending one's self to.'
Worse. Tenaciores, 'more grasping.'
Come to them. Ubi incipient ditescere, 'when they begin to growich.'
Penny-wise. In Minutiis tenax, 'stingy in small things.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

Men leave theire in more. either to their riches. or to the pubkinred. lique, and moderate porcions prosper best in both. Agreat State left to an heire, is as a lure to all the Birdes of pray rounde about, to seize on him, if he bee not the better established in yeares and Iudgement. Likewife glorious guiftes and foundacions are

but the painted Sepulchres of Almes, which soone will putrifie, and corrupt.

Therefore meathie advauncefure not mentes by quantity, but frame them by measure; and deferre not Charities till Death; For certainely if a Man weight it rightly, he that doth foe, is rather liberall of another mans, then of his owne.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

in more. Men leaue their riches, either to their kindred, or to the publike: and moderate portions prosper best in both. A great state left to an heire, is as a lure to al the birds prey round about, to feise on him, if he bee not the better stablished in yeeres and iudgement. Likewise glorious gifts, and foundations, are

but the painted Sepulchres of Almes, which soone wil putrifie and comust inwardly. Therefore meathy aduancenot ments by quantity, but frame them by measure: and deferre not charities till death: for certainly. if a man weigh it rightly. he that doth fo is rather liberall of another mans. then of his owne.





Men. Moribundi, 'men about to die.'

Kindred. Liberis, Cognatis, et Amicis, 'children, relatives and friends

Glorious. Gloriosæ et splendidæ, 'glorious and splendid.'

Gifts. Omitted in the Latin.

Foundations. Fundationes . . in usus publicos, 'foundations is Fundationes . , in usus publicos, 'foundations != the public good.'

1625.

æt. 65.

ion. 12 So that, vpon the matter, in a great Wit, Deformity is an Aduantage o Rising. Kings in Anient Times, (And at this resent in some Countries,) rere wont to put Great rust in Eunuchs; ause they, that are En-All, are ious towards 10re Obnoxious 13 and Ofcious towards One. et their Trust towards hem, hath rather beene s to good Spialls, and ood Whisperers; then ood Magistrates, and Offiers. And much like is he Reason of Desormed Persons. Still the Ground¹⁴ s, they will, if they be of pirit, feeke to free themelues from Scorne; 15 Which aust be, either by Vertue, Malice: And therefore, et it not be Maruelled, if

٧.

Independent of Peru; And Socrates may goe likewife mongst them; with Others.



¹⁵ Scorne. Derisu et Ignominia, 'scorn and ignominy."

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106.

19. Of Poung Men and Age.



Man that is yong in yeares maie old be in he howers. if

have lost noe tyme; but happeneth rarely. Generally youth is like the first Cogitacions not so wise, as the fecond; For there is a youth in thoughtes as well as in Ages.

Natures that have much heate, and great and violent desiers, and perturbacions, are not ripe for accion, till they have passed the Meridian of their yeares;

but reposed Natures may doe well in youth,

and vivacity in age is an | and viuacity in age is an

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

23. Of Poung Men and Age.



Man that is young in yeeres, may old bee houres: if he

haue lost no time. happeneth Generally youth is like the first cogitations, not so wife as the fecond: For there is a youth in thoughts, afwell as in ages.

Natures that have much heat, and great and violent defires and perturbations. are not ripe for action, till they have passed the meridian of their yeeres;

but reposed natures may doe well in youth:

as on thother fide heate as on the other fide heate

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ TITLE. De luventute et Senectute, 'of youth and age.'

² Great. Omitted in the Latin.
⁸ Perturbations. Perturbationibus, huc illuc impelluntur, 'are drives hither and thither by perturbations.'

V. ·

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

25. Of Bispatch.1



Ffected Dispatch,2 is one of the dangerous most things to Busi-

nesse that can be. It is like that, which the Physicians call Predigestion, or Hasty Digestion; which is fure to fill the Body, full of Crudities,3 and fecret Seeds of Diseases. Therefore, meafure not Difpatch,4 by the Times of Sitting, but by the Aduancement of the

Businesse. And as in Races, it is not the large Stride, or High Lift, that makes the Speed: 5 So in Businesse, the Keeping close to the matter, and not Taking of it too much at once, procureth Difpatch.6

It is the Care of Some, onely to come off7 speedily, for the time; Or to contriue some false Periods of Businesse, because they may feeme Men of Difpatch.8 But it is one Thing, to Abbreuiate9 by Contracting, 10 Another by Cutting off: And Businesse handled at feuerall Sittings

⁵ After Speed. Sed in Motu eorundem humiliore, et æquabili; 'but a lower and more even movement of the feet.'

Dispatch. Celeritatem in conficiendo, 'speed in completion.'
Come off. Multum confecisse videantur; 'to seem to have done much.'
Of dispatch. Acres in Negotiis, 'quick in business.'
Abbreuiate. Tempori parcere, 'to spare time.'
Contracting. Negotium contrahendo, 'contracting the business.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. whole.

I knewe a Wife Man had it for a bye-word when he sawe Men hasten to a Conclusion; Stay a little that wee Maie make an end the fooner.

On the either side true dispatch is a rich thing: For tyme is the measure of businesse, as money is And busines of wares. is bought at a deare hand, where there is smale dispatch.

Give good hearing to those, that give the first informacion in busines, and rather direct them in the beginning, then interrupt them in the contynuaunce of theire speaches, For he that is putt out of his owne order, will goe forwarde, and backwardes, and be more tedious by parcells,

IV. 1612. æt. 52. monly protracted in the monly protracted in the whole.

> I knew a wife man had it for a bie=word, when hee faw men hasten to a conclusion; Stay a little that wee may make an end the fooner.

> On the other fide, true dispatch is a rich thing: For time is the measure of businesse, as money is of wares: and businesse is bought at a deare hand when there is small dispatch.

> Giue good hearing to those that give the first information in businesse; and rather direct them in the beginning, then interrupt them in the continuance of their speeches: For he that is put out of his owne order, will goe forward, and backwards, and be more tedious by parcels,

in despatching business.'

18 Small dispatch. Nimia protractio, 'too much time spent.'

¹¹ Men hasten to a conclusion. Festinationem nimiam, 'too much haste.'
12 True Dispatch. Vera Celeritas, in expediendis Negotiis, 'true swifmess

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

or Meetings, goeth commonly backward forward, in an vnsteady Manner.

I knew a Wife Man, that had it for a By-word, when he saw Men hasten to a conclusion; 11 Stay a little. that we may make an End

the fooner.

On the other fide, True $Difpatch^{12}$ is a rich Thing. For Time is the measure of Businesse, as Money is of Wares: And Businesse is bought at a deare Hand, where there is small dif-

patch. 13 The Spartans, and Spaniards, haue been to be noted of Small difpatch;14 Mi venga la Muerte de Spagna; Let my Death come from Spaine; For then it will be fure to be long in comming.

Giue good Hearing to those that give the first Information in Businesse¹⁵; And rather direct them in the beginning, then interrupt them in the continuance of their Speeches: for he that is put out of his owne16 Order, will goe forward and backward, and be

more tedious while he waits vpon his Memory, then

16 His owne. Quem sibi præstituit, 'which he fixed for himself.'

¹⁴ Small dispatch. Tarditatis, 'slowness.'
15 Those that give . . . in Businesse. Quibus prima in Informations Negotii, partes demandata sunt: 'to whom the first part in giving information about business is intrusted.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

then he could have bene at once. But fometymes it is seene that the Moderatour, is more troublesome, then the Actor.

Iteracions are commonly losse of tyme; but there is no fuch gaine of tyme, as to iterate often the state of the question; for it chaseth away manie a frivolous speach, as it is Commeing foorth. Long and curious speaches are fitt for dispatche, as a Robe or Mantell with a long trayne, is for race. faces and passages, and excufacions, and other fpeaches of reference to the person, are great wastes of tyme, and thoughe they feeme to proceede of modestie, they are bravery. Yet beware of being to materiall, when there is any impediment, or obstruccion in Mens wills; For preoccupacion requireth preface; a fomentacion to make the vnguent enter. make the vnguent enter.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

then he could have bin at once. But fometimes it is feene, that the moderator is more troublesome. then the Actor.

Iterations are commonly losse of time; but there is no fuch gaine of time, as to iterate often the state of the question: For it chafeth away many a friuolous speech, as it is comming forth. Long curious speeches are fit for dispatch; as a Robe or Mantle with **a**. traine, is for race. faces, and passages, and excusations, and fpeeches of reference to the person, are great wastes of time, and though they feeme to proceede of modefty, they are brauery. Yet beware of being too materiall, when there is any impediment, or struction in mens For preoccupation requireth euer preface: like fomentation a

¹⁷ Actor. Oratorem, 'speaker.'
18 Friuolous. Prorsus abs re, 'altogether away from the subject.'
19 Robe or Mantle, &c. Toga prælonga, Terram verrens, 'a robe too long, sweeping the ground.'
20 Passages. Transitiones bellæ, 'pretty transitions.'

1625.

V.

æt. 65.

he could have been, if he had gone on, in his owne courfe. But fometimes it is seene, that the Moderator is more troublesome, then the Actor. 17

Iterations are commonly losse of Time: But there is no fuch Gaine of Time, as to iterate often the State of the Question: For it. chaseth away many a Friuolous¹⁸Speech, asit is comming forth. Long and Curious Speeches, are as fit for Difpatch, as a Robe or Mantle¹⁹ with a long Traine, is for Race. faces, and Passages,20 and Excusations, and other Speeches of Reference to the Person, 21 are great wasts of Time; And though they seeme to proceed of Modesty, they are Brauery.22 Yet beware of being too Materiall,23 when there is any Impediment or Obstruction in Mens Wils; For Pre-occupation of Minde, euer requireth preface of Speech; Like a Fomentation²⁴ to make the vnguent enter.

Person. Personam loquentis, 'the person of the speaker.'
Brauery. Gloriolæ captatrices, 'to catch a little glory.'

²⁸ Too materiall. Ne in rem ipsam, ab initio, descendas, 'of going too deep into the matter, from the beginning.'
24 Fomentation. Fomentationis ante unguentum, 'fomentation before an

unguent.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Above all thinges order, and distribucion is the life of dispatche, so as the distribucion be not too Ffor he that doth fubtile. not devide, will never enter well into businesse: and he that devideth to much. will never come out of it clearelye. To chuse tyme is to fave tyme, and an vnseasonable mocion is out beating the ayre. There be partes 3 businesse, the preparacion; the debate, or examinacion; and the perfeccion; Whereof, yf you lookefordispatche, lett the midle onely be the worke of Many, and the first and last the worke of few. The proceeding vponn somewhat conceived in writing doth for the most part facilitate dispatch; For thoughe it should be whollie reiected, yet that Negative is more pregnant of a direccion, then an indefinite, as ashes are more genertive then dust.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

Aboue all things, order and distribution is the life of dispatch: so as the distribution beenot too fubtill: For he that doth not diuide, will neuer enter well into businesse; he that divideth too much will neuer come out of it clearely. To chuse time, is to faue time, and an motion vnfeafonable but beating the There bee three parts of businesse; the preparation, the debate, or examination, and the fection. Whereof if you looke for dispatch, let the midle onely be the worke of many, and the first and last the worke of few. The proceeding vpon fomewhat conceived in writing. doth for the most part facilitate dispatch: For though it should bee wholly reiected, yet that Negative is more pregnant of a direction, then an indefinite; as ashes are more generative then dust.

25 Neuer . . . clearely. Vix, 'hardly.'

²⁶ After Beating the Ayre. Et tempore abuti, 'and wasting time.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

Aboue all things, Order, and Distribution, and Singling out of Parts, is the life of Dispatch; Soas the Distribution be not too fubtill: For he that doth not diuide, will neuer enter well into Businesse; And he that divideth too much, will neuer come out of it clearely.25 To chooseTime, is to faue Time; And an Vnseafonable Motion is but Beating the Ayre.²⁶ There be three Parts of Businesse: The Preparation; The Debate, or Examination; And the Perfellion. Whereof, if you looke for Dispatch, let the Middle onely be the Worke of Many, and the First and Last the Worke of Few. The Proceeding²⁷ vpon fomewhat conceived in Writing, doth for the most part facilitate Dispatch: For though it should be wholly reiected, yet that Negatiue is more pregnant of Direction,28then an Indefinite; As Ashes are more Generatiue then Dust.

+{ **24** }++--

28 Direction. Ad Consilia educenda, 'in bringing out counsel.'

²⁷ Proceeding. Procedendi in Negotiis, initium sumere, 'to commence the proceedings in business.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian M.S. 5106.

18. Of Beformity.



Eformed persons commonly are with even ture. For as Na-

ture hath done ill by them, fo doe they by nature, being for the most part, (as the Scripture faieth) voyd of naturall affection, and so they have theire revenge of nature; Certainely there is a confent betweene the body, and the minde, and wher ture erreth in the one. she th'other: ventureth in Vbi peccat in vno, periclitatur in altero. But because there is in Man an eleccion touching the frame of his Minde, and a necessity in the frame of his body the Starres of nainclinacions, are | fometymes obscured by the discipline of and Therefore it is vertue; good to confider of denot as a figne which is more deceiveable, which is more deceiveable;

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

25. Of Beformity.



Eformed persons commonly are with euen ture; for as Na-

ture hath done ill by them, fo doe they by nature, being for the most part (as the Scripture faith) void of naturall affection; and so they have their reuenge of nature. tainlie, there is a confent betweene the body and the minde, and where Nature erreth in the one; she ventureth in the other. Vbi peccat iu vno periclitatur in altero. But because there is in man an election touching the frame of his minde, and a necessitie in the frame of his body; the starres of naturall inclination. are fometimes obscured by the funne of discipline and vertue. Therefore it is good to confider of deformity, not as a figne,

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Are euen with. *Ulciscuntur*, 'revenge themselves upon.'
² Done ill. *Minus propitia fuit*, 'was less favourable to.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

44. Of Beformity.

Eformed Perfons commonly are with¹ Naeuen ture: For as Na-

ture hath done ill2 by them; So doe they by 3 Nature: Being for the most part, (as the Scripture faith) void of Naturall Affection;a And fo they have their Reuenge of Nature.4 Certainly there is a Confent between the Body and the Minde; And where Nature erreth in the One, she ventureth in the Other. Vbi peccat in vno, periclita*tur in altero*. But because, there is in Man, an Election touching the Frame of his Minde, and a Necessity in the Frame of his Body, the Starres of Naturall Inclination, fometimes obscured, by the Sun of Discipline, and Therefore, it is Vertue. good to confider of Deformity, not as a Signe, which is more Deceivable;

^a Rom. i. 31.

Doe . . by. Adversi, 'are opposed to.'
And so they have their Revenge of Nature. Omitted in the Latin.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. III.

but as a cause which seldome faileth of th'effect. Whofoever hath anie thing fixed in his person, that induce contempt. doth hath alfo perpetuall a fourre in himself to rescue, and deliver himself from scorne. Therefore all deformed persons are extreame bold, First as in theire owne defence, as being exposed to scorne, but in processe of tyme, generall habitt. bv Also it stirreth in them Industrie, and specially of this kind to watch, and observe the weakenesses of others, that they may have fomewhattorepay. Againe Superiours it their quencheth Iealousie wardes them, as persons that they thinke they may at pleasure despise, and it layeth theire Competitours and æmulatours afleepe, as never beleeving they should be in possibility of advauncement, till they see them in posses- they see them in posses-

1612. æt. 52.

but as a cause, which seldome faileth of the effect. Whofoeuer hath any thing fixed in his person, that doth induce contempt; hath alfo perpetuall a spurre in himselfe, to rescue and deliuer himself from scorne. Therefore all deformed persons are extreme bold: in their owne defence, as being exposed to scorne; but in processe of time, generall by habite. a Also, it stirreth in them industrie, and specially of this kinde, to watch and observe the weaknesse of others, that they may have somewhat to repay. Againe fuperiours, their quencheth ielousie wards them, as persons that they thinke they may at pleasure despise; and it layeth their competiand emulators aftors leepe: as neuer beleeuing they should bee in possibility of advancement, till

<sup>Rescue. Omitted in the Latin.
Generall. Acquisitio, 'acquired.'
Obserue. Omitted in the Latin.</sup>

1625.

æt. 65.

lut as a Cause, which selome faileth of the Effect. Vhosoeuer hath any Thing xed in his Person, that oth enduce Contempt, also a perpetuall ath purre in himselfe, to resue⁵ and deliuer himselfe om Scorne: Therefore 1 Deformed Persons are streme Bold. First. as their own Defence, as eing exposed to Scorn; ut in Processe of Time, y a Generall⁶ Habit. do it stirreth in them Inustry, and especially of his kinde, to watch and bserue7 the Weaknesse8 of)thers, that they may haue mewhattorepay. Againe, 1 their Superiours, it uencheth Iealousie9 ards them, as Persons hat they think they may t pleasure despise: And : layeth their Competiours and Emulatours afepe; As neuer beleeuing, 10 hey should be in possiility of aduancement, 11 till hey see them in Posses-

Weaknesse. Defectus et Infirmitates, 'desects and weaknesses.'

Jealousie. Suspiciones et Zelotypiam, 'suspicions and jealousy.'

Beleeuing. Suspicantes, 'suspecting.'

After aduancement. Ad honores, 'to honours.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

fion. Soe that vponn the whole matter in a great Witt deformitye is an advantage to ryfing. Kinges in auncient tymes, and at this present in some Countryes, were wont to putt great trust in Eunuches. cause they that are vyous towardes all, are more obnoxious and officious towardes one. But vet theire trust towardes them hath rather beene as to good fpyalls, and good Whisperers, then good Magistrates and officers. And much like is the reason of desormed perfons. Still the grounde is, they will if they be of spiritt seeke to free themfelves from skorne, which must be either by vertue, or malice; and therefore they prove either the best of Men, or the worst, or strangely mixed.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. fion. So that vpon the whole matter, in a great wit.

deformity is an aduantage to rising. Kings in ancient times, and at this present in some Countries were wont to put great trust in Eunuches; because they that are enuious towards all. more obnoxious and officious towards one. But yet their trust towards them, hath rather beene as to good spials, and good whifperers; then good Magistrates, and officers. And much like is the reason of desormed persons. Still the ground is, they will, if they bee of spirit, seeke to free themfelues from fcorne: which must bee either by vertue. or malice; and therefore they prooue either the best of men, or the worst, or strangely mixed.





¹⁹ After Possession. Honorum, of honours.

¹⁸ Obnoxious. Obnoxii, 'submissive.' 14 Ground. Regula, quam antea posuimus, 'the rule, which we have before laid down.

V.

1625.

et. 65.

in more. Men⁴³ leaue their Riches, either to their Kindred;44 Or to the Publique: And moderate 'Portions prosper best in both. Agreat State left to an Heire, is as a Lure to all the Birds round about, of Prey, to feize on him, if he be not the better stablished in Yeares and Iudgement. Likewife Glorious⁴⁵ Gifts⁴⁶

and Foundations, 47 are like Sacrifices without Salt; And

but the Painted48 Sepulchres of Almes, which foone will putrifie, and corrupt inwardly. Therefore, Meafure not thine Advancements49 by Quantity,50 but Frame⁵¹ them by Measure; And Deferre not Charities⁵² till Death: For certainly, if a Man weigh it rightly, he that doth so, is rather Liberall of 53 an Other Mans, then of his Owne.



⁴⁸ Painted. Dealbata, 'whitened.' 49 Aduancements. Dona, 'gifts.'

⁶⁰ Quantity. Magnitudine sed Commoditate, 'by their size, but by their use.

bi But frame. Et ad debitam Mensuram redigas, 'and reduce them to proper measure.'
Charities. Opera Charitatis, 'works of charity.'
Liberall of. Donat, 'presents.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

Harleian MS. 5106.

17. Of Bispatch.



difpatch Ffected of the is one most dangerous thinges to bufi-

nesse that can be. It is like that which the Phisitians call pre-digestion, or hastie digestion, which is sure to fill the body full of Crudities, and fecrett feedes of diseases. Therefore meafure not dispatch by the tymes of fitting, but by the advauncement of the busines.

It is the care of fome onely to Come of speedily for the tyme, or to contrive some false periodes of businesse, because they may feeme men of dispatch. thing to But it is one make shorte by contracting, another by cutting busines And handled by peeces is com- handled by peeces, is com-

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

11. Of Bispatch.



dispatch Ffected is one of the most dangerous to busithings

nesse that can bee. It is like that which the Physitians call pre-digeftion, or hafly digestion, which is sure to fill the bodie full of crudities and fecret feedes of diseases. Therefore meafure not dispatch by the times of fitting, but by the advancement of the businesse.

It is the care of fome onely to come of speedily for the time, or to contriue some false periods of businesse, because they may feeme men of dispatch. But it is one thinge to make short by contracting; an other by cutting businesse off: and

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ TITLE. De Expediendis Negotiis, 'of the despatch of business.'
² Affected Dispatch. Celeritas nimia et affectata, 'excessive and affected speed.'

⁸ Crudities. Humoribus crudis, 'crude humours.' 4 Dispatch Negotiorum Expeditionem, 'the despatch of business.' ٧.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

Of Youth and Age.1

Man that is Young in yeares, may be Old Houres, if he

haue lost no Time. But that .happeneth rarely. Generally, youth is like the first Cogitations, not so Wise is the Second. For there is a youth in thoughts as

well as in Ages. And yet the Invention of Young Men, is more lively, then that of Old: And Imaginations streame into their Mindes better, and, as it were, more Diuinely.

Natures that have much Heat, and great² and violent defires and Perturbations,3 are not ripe for Action, till they have passed the Meri-

dian of their yeares: As it was with Iulius Cæfar, and Septimius Seuerus. Of the latter of whom, it is said; Iuuentutem egit, Erroribus, imo Furoribus, plenam.a And yet he was the Ablest Emperour, almost, of all the List. But Repofed⁵ Natures may

doe well6 in Youth. As it is feene, in Augustus Cæsar, Cosmus Duke of Florence, Gaston de Fois, and others.

On the other side, Heate and Viuacity in Age, is an

^a He spent a youth full of errors, and even of furies. Æ. Spartianus, Vita Septimi Severi. 2.

⁴ Ablest. Celeberrimus, 'most famous.'
⁵ Reposed. Sedata et composita, 'settled and composed.'
⁶ Doe well. Florere, 'flourish.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

excellent Composicion for Yonge Men are fitter to invent, then to iudge, fitter for execucion, then for Councell. and fitter for new proiectes, then for fetled businesse, for the experience of Age in thinges that fall within the Compasse of it, directeth them, but in thinges meerely new abufeth them. The errors of yong Men are the ruyne of busines, but the errors of aged Men amount but to this, that more mought have beene done. or fooner. Yonge men in the Conduct and manage of accions embrace more then they can hold; stirre more then they can quiett; fflye to th'end without consideracion of the meanes, and degrees; pursue some few Principles, which they have chaunced vponn abfurdly; Care not to innovate, which drawes inconveniences; vie extreame remedyes at and that which dowbleth all errors,

IV. 1612. æt. 52. excellent composition for Young men are businesse. fitter to invent then to iudge; fitter for execufor Counfell; tion then and fitter for new proiects, then for fetled busineffe. For the experience of age in things that fall within the compasse of it, directeth them: but in things meerly new abufeth them. The errors of voung men are the ruine of businesse: But the errors of aged men, amount but to this; that more bin might haue Young men in or fooner. the conduct and mannage of Actions, embrace more then they can hold, stirre more then they can quiet, flie to the end without confideration of the meanes. and degrees, purfue fome fewe principles, which they haue chanced vpon furdly, care not to innouate, which drawes inconveniences; knowne vse extreme remedies at first: and that will doubleth all errors.

<sup>Pursue. Absurde persequentur, 'pursue absurdly.'
Absurdly. Omitted in the Latin.</sup>

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

Excellent Composition for Businesse. Young Men, are Fitter to Inuent, then to Iudge; Fitter for Execution, then for Counfell: And Fitter for New Proiects, then for Setled Businesse. For the Experience of Age, in Things that fall within the compasse of it, directeth them; But in New Things, abuseth The Errours of Young Men are the Ruine of Businesse; But the Errours of Aged Men amount but to this; That more might haue beene done, Young Men, in or fooner. theConduct, and Mannage of Actions, Embrace more then they can Hold, Stirre more then they can Quiet; Flytothe End, without Consideration of the Meanes, and Degrees; Pursue⁷ some few Principles, which they haue chanced vpon abfurdly;8 Care not to Innowhich draws knowne Inconueniences;9 Vse extreme Remedies at first; And, that which doubleth all Errours, will

⁹ Care not to Innouate, which draws vnknowne Inconveniences. Omitted in the Latin. This is evidently misplaced, and is an error of Age.]

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

not acknowledge nor retract them, like an vnready horse that will neither Men of stopp nor tourne. obiect to much. long, confult to adventure to litle, repent to foone, and feldome drive businesse home to the full period, but content themfelves with a mediocrity of Certainly, it is fucceile. good to compound imploymentes of both. For that will bee good for the present, because the vertues of either age may correct the defectes of both, and good for fuccession, that yong Men may be Learners, while Men in are Actours; and lastly in respect of externe accidentes, because authoritye followeth old Men, and favour, and popularity youth. But for the morall part, perhapps youth will have the preheminence, as Age hath for the politique. A certaine Rab- | politike. A certaine Rab-

IV. 1612. æt. 52. not acknowledge nor retract them: like an vnready horse, that wil neither stop nor turne. Men of age obiect too confulte too long, aduenture too little, repent too foone, and feldome drive businesse home to the full period; but content themfelues with a mediocrity of Certainly it is fuccesse. good to compound imploiments of both: for that will bee good for the present; because the vertues of either age may correct the defects of both: and good for fuccession, that young men may bee learners, while men in Actors: age are and lastly, in respect of externe accidents, because authority followeth old and and fauour popularity youth. But for the morall part: perhaps youth will haue the preheminence, as age hath for the

dangers more than is expedient.'
11 Repent too soone. Panitentia prapropera vacillant, 'waver with too

hasty repentance.'
¹² Good. Bonum in Negotiis, 'good in business.'

¹⁰ Aduenture too little. Pericula plusquam expedit reformidant, 'sex

γ.

1625.

æt. 65.

them; Like an vnready Horse, that will neither Stop, nor Turne. Men of Age, Obiect too much, Confult too long, Aduenture too little, 10 Repent too soone,11 and seldome driue Businesse home to the full Period; But content themselues with a Mediocrity of Successe. Certainly, it is good to compound Employments of both; For that will be Good¹² for the Prefent, because the Vertues of either Age, may correct the desects of both:18 And good for Succession,14 that Young Men may be Learners, while Men in Age are Actours:15 lastly, Good for Externe Accidents, because Authority followeth¹⁶ Old Men, And Fauour and Popularity Youth. But for the Morall Part, perhaps Youth will haue the preheminence, as Age hath for the Politique. A certaine Rab-

not acknowledge or retract

¹³ Both. Et Senum, et Juvenum, 'both of old and young men.'
14 Succession. Futuro, 'for the future.'
15 Are Actours. Moderentur, 'govern.'
16 Followeth. Senes Auctoritate, Juvenes Gratia et Popularitate, pollent, 'old men are strong in authority young men in favour and popularity.'

Ш. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

by vponn the Text, your young Men shall fee visions, and your old Men shall dreame Dreames, inferreth that young Men are admitted nearer to God, then Old, because a Vision is a clearer revelation, then a And certainely dreame. the more a Man drinketh of the world, the more it intoxicateth, and age doth profitt rather in the powers of the vnderstanding, then in the vertues of the will. and affections.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

by vpon the Text, Your Young men shall fee visions, and your Old men shall dreame Dreames: inferreth. that young men are admitted neerer to God then old, because vision is a cleerer reuelation, then a And certainlie, dreame. the more a man drinketh of the world, the more it intoxicateth; and age doth profit rather in the powers of vnderstanding, in the vertues of the will and affections.





¹⁷ Clearer. Clarior et manifestior, 'clearer and more manifest.'
18 Yeares. Juventute, 'youth.'
19 Fadeth betimes. Sed currentibus annis cito marcescunt; et deveniunt

evanidi, 'but as years pass on, soon wither and become weak.'

20 Becomes. In Juvene laudatur, 'is praised in a young man.'

21 Tract of yeares. Ætas provectior, 'more advanced age.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

bine, vpon the Text; Your Young Men shall fee visions, and your Old Men shall dreame dreames; a Inferreth, that Young Men are admitted nearer to God then Old; Because Vision is a clearer17 Reuelation, then a And certainly. Dreame. the more a Man drinketh of the World, the more it intoxicateth; And Agedoth profit rather in the Powers of Vnderstanding, then in the Vertues of the Will

and Affections. There be some haue an Ouer-early Ripenesse in their yeares,18 which fadeth betimes:19 These are first, Such as have Brittle Wits, the Edge whereof is foone turned; Such as was Hermogenes the Rhetorician, whose Books are exceeding Subtill; Who afterwards waxed Stupid. A Second Sort is of those, that have some naturall dispositions, which have better Grace in Youth, then in Age: Such as is a fluent and Luxuriant Speech; which becomes²⁰ Youth well, but not Age: So Tully faith of Hortentius; Idem manebat, neque idem decebat.b The third is of fuch, as take too high a Straine at the First; And are Magnanimous, more then Tract of yeares²¹ can vphold. As was Scipio Affricanus, of whom Liuy faith in effect; Vltima primis cedebant.d



He remained the same, but it did not equally become him. Cic. Brutus. 95.

^o Livy. xxxviii. 53.
^d The last things fell short of the first. Ovid. Heroides. ix. 23. 24.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. 1II. Harleian MS. 5106.

22. Of Marriage and Single Life.



E that hath wife, children, and hath given hoftages to fortune;

for they are impedimentes to great enterprizes, either of vertue, or of mischeif. Certainly the best workes, and of greatest meritt for the publique, haue proceefrom vnmarryed, or childlesse Men which fought eternity Memory and not in and Posteritye, which affection both in and meanes have marryed, and endowed the publique.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

5. Of Marriage and single life.



EE that hath wife children, and hath giuen hostages to fortune.

For they are impediments to great enterprises, either mischief. vertue or Certainly the best works, and of greatest merit; for the publike haue proceeded from the vnmarried, or childlesse men; which eternity haue fought memory, and not in in posterity; and which affection both in means, haue married and publike. endowed the

leade a fingle whose thoughtes life life doe end with themselves, doe ende with themselves,

Yet some there are that Yet some there are, that lead a fingle whose thoughts

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

1 Either of Vertue. Sive ad Virtutem tendat quis, 'whether a man inclines to virtue.

Best workes. (Ut alibi diximus) 'as we have said elsewhere.' [This clause was added to the Latin version in 1625. It probably refers to the passage added in the last English edition of the next Essay, see p. 273. Mr W. A. Wright quotes also the following like passage from In felicem memoriam Elizabetha, translated in the Resuscitatio, p. 186, Ed. 1657. "Childlesse she was, and left no Issue behind Her; which was the Case of many, of the most fortunate Princes: Alexander the Great Sulices Cases Tonian, and most fortunate Princes; Alexander the Great, Julius Casar, Trajan, and

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

8. Of Marriage and Single Life.

E that hath Wife and Children, hath giuen Hoftages to Fortune;

For they are Impediments, to great Enterprises, either of Vertue,1 or Mischiefe. Certainly, the best workes,2 and of greatest Merit for the Publike, haue proceeded from the *vnmarried*,3 or Childlesse Men; which,

both in Affection, and Meanes, haue married and the endowed Publike.

Yet it were great Reason, that those that have Children, should have greatest care of future times; vnto which, they know, they must transmit, their dearest pledges.

Some there are, who though they lead a Single Life, 4 yet their Thoughts doe end with themselues.

others. And this is a Case, that hath been often controverted, and argued, on both sides; Whilest some hold, the want of Children, to be a Diminution, of our Happinesse; As if it should be an Estate, more then Human, to be happy, both in our own Persons, and in our Descendants: But others, do account, the want of Children, as an Addition to Earthly Happinesse; In as much, as that *Happinesse*, may be said, to be compleat, over which Fortune hath no Power, when we are gone: Which, if we leaue Children, can-

Numeried. Omitted in the Latin.
After Single Life. Tamen Memor Tamen Memoriæ suæ incuriosi sunt, 'yet are careless of their memory.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. and doe accompt future tymes impertinencyes, Nay there are some other that esteeme wife, and children but as Bills of Charges;

IV. 1612. æt. 52. and doe account future times, impertinences. Nay there are some others, that esteeme wife and children, but as bils of charges.

but the most ordinary cause of a fingle life is libertye, specially in certaine self pleasing, and humorous mindes. which are fensible of every restriccion, as they will goe neere to thinke theire Girdles, and garters to be bondes and shackles. Vnmarryed Men are best Frendes, best Maisters, best Seruauntes, not alwaies best Subiectes. for they are light to run away, and almost all Fugitives are of that condicion. A fingle life is proper for Church Men; For Charity hardlie water grounde where it must first fill a Poole; it is indifferent for Iudges, and Magif- ent for Iudges and Magif-

But the most ordinarie cause of a fingle life, is liberty; specially in certain selfpleasing and humorous minds. which are fensible of euery restriction, as they wil go neere to thinke their girdles and garters to be bonds and shakles. Vnmarried men friends; best are best masters; best feruants; not alwaies best subjects; for they are light to run away; and almost all fugitiues are of that condition. A fingle life is proper for Churchmen. For charity wil hardly water ground, where it must first It is indifferfill a poole.

<sup>Rich couetous. Avari, 'avaricious.'
Humorous. Phantasticis, 'fantastic.'
Light. Expediti, 'unencumbered.'</sup>

1625.

æt. 65.

and account future Times, Impertinences. Nay there are fome other, that account *Wife* and *Children*, but as Bills of Charges.

V.

Nay more, there are some soolish rich couetous⁵ Men, that take a pride in hauing no *Children*, because they may be thought, so much the richer. For perhaps, they have heard some talke; Such an one is a great rich Man; And another except to it; Yea, but he hath a great charge of Children: As if it were an

Abatement to his Riches. But the most ordinary cause of a Single Life, is Liberty; especially, in certaine Selfepleasing, and humorous6 Mindes, which are fensible of euery restraint, as they will goe neare, to thinke their Girdles, and Garters, to be Bonds and Shackles. Vnmarried Men are best Friends; best Masters; best Seruants; but > not alwayes best Subjects; For they are light⁷ to runne away; And almost all Fugitiues are of that Condition. A Single Life doth well with Church men:8 For Charity9 will hardly water Ground, where it must first fill a Poole.10 It is indifferent for Iudges and Magif-

Church men. Ecclesiasticis, 'clergymen.'

Charity. Quis, 'any one.'
Poole. Si prius Stagni alicujus Receptaculum interveniat, 'if a reservoir of water is interposed.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

trates; for if they be facile, and corrupt, you shall have a Seruaunte five tyme[s worse then a Wife, For Souldiours the Ι finde [genera]lls commonlye in theire hortatives putt Men in [minde] of theire wives, and Children, and I thinke the [despisin]g of Marriage amongest the Turkes maketh [the vulg]ar Souldior Certainely more base. wife, [and chi]ldren are a kind of discipline of humanity [and fi]ngle men

are more cruell, and hard hearted [go]od to make seuere Inquisitours.

Grave Natures led by Cuftome, and therefore constant are commonly loving husbandes, as was saied of Vlisses, vetulam prætulit immortalitati. Chaste Women are often proud, and froward as prefuming vponn the meritt of theire Chastitye. It is one of the best bandes both of Chastitye bonds both of chastity

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

trates. For if they be facile and corrupt, you shall have fiue times **feruant** worfe then a wife. For Souldiers, the I find Generals commonly their hortatiues, put men in minde of their wives, and children: and I thinke the despising of marriage, amongst the Turkes, maketh the vulgar Souldier Certainely. more base. wife and children are a kinde of discipline of humanity: and fingle men

are more cruell and hardhearted; good to make feuere inquisitors.

Graue natures led by cuftome, and therefore constant, are commonly louing husbands: as was faid of Vlisses; Vetulam tulit immortalitati. Chaste women are often proud and froward, as prefuming vpon the merit of their chasti-It is one of the best ty.

¹¹ Worse. Ad hujusmodi Lucra captanda, 'at getting gain of this kind.'
12 Wiues and Children. Charitates Vxorum et Liberorum, 'the love of their wives and children.

¹³ Charitable. Munifici et charitativi, 'munificent and charitable.'
14 Hard hearted. Sine visceribus, 'without bowels.'

trates: For if they be facile, and corrupt, you shall haue Seruant, fiue times worse¹¹ than a Wife. For Souldiers, I finde Generalls commonly in their Hortatiues, put Men in minde of their Wives and Children. 12 And I thinke the Despising of Marriage, amongst the Turkes, maketh the vulgar fouldier Certainly, more base. Wife and Children, are a kinde of Discipline of Hu-

manity: And fingle Men, though they be many times more Charitable, 18 because their Meanes are exhaust; yet, on the other side, they

are more cruell, and hard

hearted,14 (good to make

seuere Inquisitors) because their Tendernesse, 15 is not so oft called vpon. 16

Graue Natures, led by Cuftome, and therfore conflant, are commonly louing Husbands; As was said of Vlyffes; Vetulam fuam prætulit Immortalitati.a Chast Women areoften Proud, and froward, as Prefuming vpon the merit of their Chasti-It is one of the best ty. Bonds, both of Chastity

[&]quot; He preferred his little old woman to immortality. [i.e. to Circe.] Cic. De Oratore. i. 44.

¹⁶ Tendernesse. Indulgentia et Teneritudo Affectuum, 'indulgence and tenderness of the affections. 4 Called vpon. Evocatur, et excitatur, 'called out and roused up.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. and 'obedience in the and obedience wife, if shee thinke her wife; if shee thinke her husband wife, which shee husband wife; which shee will never doe, if shee finde | will neuer doe, if shee finde him iealous. Wives are vounge mens mistresses. Companions to men of midle age, and old Mens So as Nurses. a Man may have a quarrell to marrye when he will, but yet he was reputed one of the Wise Men, that made aunsweare to the question When a Man should marrie, A younger Man not yet, an elder Man not at all.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. in the him ielous. Wiues are mistresses: young mens companions middle for age; old and mens nurfes. So as a may haue a quarrell to marry when, hee will; but yet hee was reputed one of the wise men, that made answere to the question; When a manshould marrie? A young man not yet, an elder man not at all.





¹⁷ Quarrell. Ansa, 'handie.'
18 When he will. Ætatibus singulis, 'at every age.'

¹⁹ It rayseth the Price of. Hoc modo pretium addatur, in this manner value is added to.

²⁰ Choosing. Expetiti et electi fuerint, "were desired and chosen."

1625.

V.

æt. 65.

and Obedience, in the Wife, if She thinke her Husband Wife; which She will neuer doe, if She finde him Iealous. Wives are young Mens Mistresses; Companions for middle Age; and old Mens Nurfes. So as a Man may haue a Quarrell¹⁷ to marry, when he will. 18 But yet, he was reputed one of the wife Men, that made Answer to the Question; When a Man should marry? A young Man not yet, an Elder Man not at all.a

It is often seene, that bad *Husbands*, haue very good *Wines*; whether it be, that it rayseth the Price¹⁹ of their *Husbands* Kindnesse, when it comes; Or that the *Wines* take a Pride, in their Patience. But this neuer sailes, if the bad *Husbands* were of their owne choosing, ²⁰ against their Friends consent; For then, they will be sure, ²¹ to make good²² their owne Folly.



Thales being asked, when a Man should marrie, sayd; Young Men not yet, old Men not at all. Lord Bacon's Apophth. No. 220. Ed. 1625.

²¹ Will be sure. Animus iis semper adest, 'they will always have a mind.'

Make good. Panitere non videantur, 'not to seem to repent.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106.

28. Of Parents and Children.



He Ioyes of Parentes are secrett, and fo are theire greises, and

feares; they cannot vtter the one, nor they will not Children vtter the other. fweeten laboures, but they make miffortunes more Cares of life, but they mittigate the remembraunce of death. The perpetuity by generacion is common to b[east]es, but memorie, and meritt, and noble workes are [proper] to Men.

They that are the a]re most indulgent towardes theire Children, wards beh olding th em, as the beholding them, as

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

6. Of Parents and Children.



He ioyes of Parents are fecret. and fo are their griefs and

feares: they cannot vtter the one, nor they will not vtter the other. Children fweeten labors, but they make misfortunes more bitter, they encrease the bitter: they increase the cares of life, but they mittigate the remembrance of death. The perpetuitie by generation, is common to beasts; but memorie,

merit, and noble works are proper to men.

They that are the raylers of theire houses first raisers of their house, are most indulgent children; their contynuance not onely of continuance, not only of theire ki[nd, but] of theire their kind, but of their worke, and so both Chil-worke; and so both chil-

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

<sup>Labours. Labores humanos, 'human labours.'
Noble. Omitted in the Latin.</sup>

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

7. Of Parents and Children.

He Ioyes of *Par*ents are Secret; And fo are their Griefes. and

Feares: They cannot vtter the one; Nor they will not vtter the other. Children weeten Labours; 1 But they make Misfortunes more bitter: They increase the Cares of Life; but they mitigate the Remembrance of Death. The Perpetuity by Generation is common b Beasts; But Memory,

Merit, and Noble² Forkes, are proper to Men:

And furely a Man shall see, the Noblest workes, and Foundations, have proceeded from Childleffe Men; which have fought to expresse the Images of heir Minds; where those of their Bodies have failed: the care of Posterity, is most in them, that have no

Posterity. They that are the irst Raisers of their Houses,8 we most Indulgent towards their *Children*; Beholding them, as the Continuance, not only of heir kinde, but of their Worke; 4 And so both Chil-

^{*} First Raisers . . . Houses. Qui Honores in Familiam suam primi introducunt, 'those who first bring honour into their families.'

* But of their Worke. Sed ut Rerum a se gestarum Hæredes: 'but as he heirs of their work.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. dren, and Cr[eatures]. The difference of affection, in Parentes, tow[ardes | their]e feverall Children is manie tymes vnequall [and] fometymes vnworthie, specially in the mother, as Salomon saieth. A wife fonne reioyceth the father, but an vngratious fonne shames the Mother. Man shall see where there is a howfefull of Children, one, or two of the eldest respected, and the yongest made wantons, but in fome midle. that are as it were forgotten, who nevertheles prove the best. The illiberalitye of Parentes in allowance towardes theire Children is an harmefull errour, makes base, acquaintes them with shiftes makes them forte with meane Companie, and makes them furfett more, when they come to plenty; And therefore the proofe is Men keepe best, when theire authoritye towardes theire Children, but not theire purse. Men have their

IV. 1612. æt. 52. dren and creatures. The difference of affection tion in parents towards their feuerall children, is many times vnequall; and fometimes vnworthy: fpecially in the mother; as Salomon saith; A wife fonne reioiceth the Father. but an vngracious fon shames the mother. man shall see where there is a house full of children, one, or two of the eldest respected, and the youngest made wantons; but in middle, fome are as it were forgotten: who thelesse prooue the best. illiberality of The allowance ents in wards their children an harmefull error: makes base; them acquaints them with shifts, makes them fort with companie; and makes them furfet more, when they come to plenty. therefore the proofe best, when men their authority towarൾ children, their but purse. Men haue

⁵ House full of Children. Domo facunda, et Liberorum plena, 'a prolife house, full of children.'

1625.

æt. 65.

dren and Creatures.

The difference in Affection, of Parents, towards their feuerall Children, is many times vnequall; And fometimes vnworthy; Especially in the mother; As Salomon faith; A wife fonne reioyceth the Father; but an vngracious fonne shames the Mother. Man shall see, where there is a House full of Children,5 one or two, of the Eldest, respected, and the Youngest made wantons; But in the middest, some that are, as it were forgotten who, many times, neuerthelesse, proue the best. The Illiberalitie of Parents, in allowance to wards their Children, is an harmefull Errour; Makes them base; Acquaints them with Shifts; Makes them fort with meane Company; And makes them furfet more, when they come to Plenty: And therefore, the Proofe is best, when Men keepe their Authority towards their Children, but not their Purse. 6 Men haue

^a Prov. x. 1.

⁶ But not their Purse. Crumenam laxant, 'loosen their purse.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

a foolishe manner, both Parentes Schoole-Maisters, and Seruauntes in creating, and breeding an emulacion betweene brothers during Childhood, which manie tymes forteth to discord when they are Men, and disturbeth families. The Italians make litle difference betweene Children, and Nephues, or neare Kinffolkes; but so they be of the lumpe, they care not, thoughe they passe not throughe theire owne body; and to faie Truth in nature it is much a like matter, in fo much that wee see a Nephewe sometymes refembleth an vncle, or a kinfeman more then his owne Parent, as the bloud happens.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

a foolish manner, Parents. Schoolemasters, and feruants, in creating and breeding an emulation betweene brothers during childhood, which times forteth to discord when they are men, and disturbeth families. Italians make little difference betweene children and nephewes, or neere kinsfolke: But so they be of the lumpe, they care not, though they passe not through their owne body: and to fay truth, in nature it is much a like matter, in fo much that wee fee a nephewe fometimes resembleth an vncle, or a kiniman, more then his owne Parent, as the blood happens.





a Choose the best, habit will easily and pleasantly bring it to pass. A saying of Pythagoras, quoted by Plutarch. De Exilio. c. 8.

<sup>Vocations, and Courses. Cui vitæ Generi, 'what kind of life.'
Flexible. Flexibiles, et cerei, 'flexible and soft (like wax).'
Extraordinary. Erga aliquod Studium insignis, 'extraordinary to-</sup>

Extraordinary. Erga aliquod Studium insignis, exuadia........
wards any pursuit.'

10 Crosse it. Natura, aut Indoli repugnet, 'resist nature or disposition.'

11 Fortunate. Fortuna Filii, 'sons of fortune.'

Sed raro. aut nunquam, prosperum sortiuntur 12 Seldome or neuer. Sed raro, aut nunquam, prosperum sortiuntur Exitum, 'hut rarely or never, do they obtain a happy end.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

a foolish manner (both Parents, and Schoole-masters, and Seruants) in creating and breeding an Emulation between Brothers, during Childhood, which many times forteth to Discord, when they are Men; And disturbeth Families. The Italians make little difference betweene Children, and Nephewes, or neere Kinffolkes; But so they be of the Lumpe, they care not, though they passe not through their owne Body. And, to fay Truth, in Nature, it is much a like matter; In fo much, that we see a Nephew, sometimes, refemblethan Vncle, or a Kinfman, more then his owne Parent; As the

Bloud happens. Let *Parents* choose betimes, the Vocations, and Courses, they meane their Children should take; For then they are most flexible; And let them not too much apply themselues, to the Disposition of their *Children*, as thinking they will take best to that, which they have most Minde to. It is true, that if the Affection or Aptnesse of the *Children*, be Extraordinary, then it is good, not to crosse it; But generally the Precept is good; *Optimum elige*, fuave et facile illud faciet Consuetudo. Younger Brothers are commonly Fortunate, but seldome or neuer, where the *Elder* are disinherited.



1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. Harleian MS. 5106.

24. Of Great Place.



En in great place, are thrice serferuauntes; vauntes of the

Sovereigne, or State, fervauntes of fame, and feruauntes of bufinesse; so as they have noe freedome, neither in theire persons, nor in theire accions, nor in theiretymes. It is a straunge desier to seeke power, and to leese libertye, or to feeke power over others, and to leefe power over a The rysing Mans self. vnto place is laborious, and by paynes Men come to greater paines; and it is fometymes base, and by Indignities Men come to Dignityes; the standing is flipery, and the regresse is either a downefall, or at least an Eclipse, which is a Melancholie thing.

Nay, retire men cannott when they would, Neither will they when it were

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

8. Of Great Place.



En in great place, are thrice feruants: of uants

Soueraigne, or state; feruants of fame, and feruants of businesse. they have no freedome, neither in their persons, nor in their actions, nor in It is a strange their times. defire to feeke power, and liberty: to lofe feeke power ouer others, and to lose power ouer a The rising mans felfe. vnto place is laborious, and by paines men come to greater paines: and it is fometimes base, and by indignities men come dignities: the standing is flippery; and the regresse is either a downefall, or at least an Ecclipse; malancholy which is a thing.

Nay, retire, men cannot when they would, neither will they when it were

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ TITLE. De Magistratibus & Dignitatibus, 'of magistracies & dignities.'

<sup>Lose. Exuere, 'cast off.'
Base. Indignitatibus non vacat; 'is not without indignities.'</sup>

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

11. Of Great Place.1



En in Great Place, are thrice Seruants: Seruants of the Souer-

Ser-State; aigne or uants of Fame; and Seruants of Businesse. So as they have no Freedome; neither in their Persons; nor in their Actions; nor in their Times. It is a strange defire, to feeke Power, and to lose² Libertie; Or to feeke Power ouer others. and to loofe Power ouer a Mans Selfe. The Rifing vnto Place is Laborious; And by Paines Men come to greater Paines; And it is fometimes base;3 And by Indignities, Men come to Dignities. The standing4 is flippery, and the Regresse, is either a downefall, or at least an Eclipse, which is a Melancholy⁵

Thing. Cùm non sis, qui fueris, non esse, cur velis viuere.^a
Nay, retire Men cannot,
when they would; neither
will they, when it were

^a When thou art no longer what thou wast, why wishest thou to live. Cicero. Epistolæ Familiares. (ad Marium) vii. 3.

⁴ Standing. Statio in Dignitatibus, 'the standing in dignities.'
⁵ Melancholy. Triste quiddam, et Melancholicum, 'is a sad thing and melancholy.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. reason, but are impatient of privatenes, even in age and ficknes which requier the shaddowe.

Certainly great persons had neede to borrowe other Mens opinions to thinke themselves happie; for if they iudge by theire owne feeling, they cannot finde it; but if they thinke with themselves, what Men thinke of them, and that other Men would faine be as they are, then they are happie as it were by reporte, when perhapps they finde the contrary within; for they are the first, that finde theire owne greifes, thoughethey beethe last that finde theire owne faultes. Certainely Men great fortunes are Straungers to themselves, and while they are in the pusle of businesse, they have no etyme to tend their haue no time to tend their health either of body, or health, either of body or minde, Illi mors grauis mind. Flli mors grauis incubat, qui notus nimis incubat, qui notus nimis

IV. 1612. æt. 52. reason; but are impatient of privatenesse, even in age and ficknesse, which require the shadow.

Certainely, great persons had need to borrow other mens opinions, to thinke themselues happy: for if they iudge by their owne feeling, they cannot find it; but if they thinke with themselues. what other men thinke of them, and would that other men fain be as they are, then they are happy as it were by report, when perhappes they finde the contrarie within; for they are the first that finde their owne griefes, though they bee the last that finde their own faults. Certainely great fortunes in strangers to themselues, and while they are in the of busines pusse

⁶ Reason. Cum ratio postulat ut id facerent, 'when reason demands that they should do it.'

 ⁷ Sicknesse. Infirmitas ingruit, 'weakness attacks them.'
 8 Shadow. Umbram et Otium, 'shadow and ease.'

1625.

æt. 65.

Reason: Butare impatient of priuatenesse, euen in Age, and Sicknesse, which require the Shadow:8 Like old Townesmen, that will be still sitting at their Street doore; though thereby they offer Age9 to Scorne. Certainly Great¹⁰ Persons, had need to borrow other Mens Opinions; to thinke themselues happy; For if they iudge by their owne Feeling; they cannot finde it: But if they thinke with themselues, what men thinke of them, and that other men would faine be as they are, then they are happy, as it were by report; When perhaps they finde the Contrary For they are the within. first, that finde their owne Griefs; though they be the last, that finde their owne Certainly, Men Faults. in Great Fortunes, are strangers to themselves, and while they are in the puse of 11 businesse, they haue no time to tend their Health, either of Body, or Minde. Illi Mors grauis incubat, qui notus nimis

⁹ Age. Se, 'themselves.'
10 Great. In Magistratibus positis, 'placed in offices.'
11 In the pusle of. Distrahuntur, 'are distracted by.'

III.

omnibus, ignotus moritur omnibus, ignotus moritur fibi. In place, there is fibi. In place there is licence to doe good, and licence to do good and evill; Whereof the latter euill: wherof the latter is a Curse; For in evill, is a curse: for in euill the best condicion is, not the best condition is, not to will, the second, not to will; the second not to can: But power to doe good, is the true and lawfull end of aspiringe. For good thoughtes (thoughe) God accept them) yet God accept them) yet towardes Men are litle better then good dreames, better then good dreams. except they be putt in except they be put in act, and that cannot be Art; and that cannot be without power, and place, as the vantage and Commaunding ground. Meritt the End of Mans is the ende of mocion, and Conscience of Merite is the accom- of merit is the accomplishement of Mans Rest. For if a Man can in anie measure be partaker of Godes Theater, he shall likewise be partaker of Godes rest. Et conver-

fus Deus vt aspiceret opera quæ fecerunt manus suæ,

1607-12. æt. 47-52. | IV. æt. 52. to can. But power to doe good, is the true and lawfull end of aspiring. For good thoughts, (though towards men are little without power and place: as the vantage and commanding ground. mans motion; and conscience plishment of mans For if a man can any measure be taker of Gods Theater he shall likewise be pertaker of Gods rest. Et converfus Deus vt aspiceret opera quæ fecerunt manus sua vidit quod omnia effent vidit quod omnia effent bona nimis, and then the bona nimis, and then the Sabboth. In the discharge | Sabbath. In the discharge of thie place, fett before of thy place, fet before

1612.

¹² For if a man can be partaker . . God's Rest. Omitted in the Latin.

1625.

æt. 65.

mnibus, ignotus moritur bi.a In Place, There is icense to doe Good, and buill; wherof the latter ia Curse; For in Euill, ne best condition is, not will; The Second, not Can. But Power to doe ood, is the true and lawill End of Aspiring. For od Thoughts (though od accept them,) yet wards men, are little etter then good Dreames; xcept they be put in £t; And that cannot be ithout Power, and Place; s the Vantage, and Comanding Ground. Merit, and good Works,

Ι.

the End of Mans lotion; And Conscience the same, is the Accomlishment of Mans Rest.

or if a Man, can

be Parker of Gods Theater, he iall likewise be Partaker f Gods Rest. 12 Et converis Deus, vt afpiceret Opera, ue fecerunt manus fue, idit quod omnia effent bona imis; And then abbath.c In the Discharge f thy Place, fet before

^a Death lies heavily on the man, who too well known to all, dies a ranger to himself. Seneca. Thyestes. Act ii. (Chorus). 6 Genesis i. 31. See p. 101.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

thee the best Exemples; For Imitacion is a Globe of Preceptes. And after a tyme, fett before thee thyne owne Example, and examine thie felf strictly, Whether thou didst not best at first.

Reforme without | braverye, or Scandale of former tymes, and persons, but yet fett it downe to thie felf, aswell to create good Presidentes, as to followe them. Reduce thinges to the first Institucion, and obferve wherein and how they have degenerate; but yet aske Councell of both tymes; of the auncient tyme what is best, and of the latter tyme what Seeke to make is fittest. thie courses regular, that Men may knowe before hand what they may expect, but be not to positive, felf and expresse thie

thee the best examples for imitation is a globe of precepts. And after time, set before thee thing owne example, and examine thy self strictly, who ther thou diddest not best at first.

Reforme withou brauery or fcandall former times and persons but yet fet it downe to th felfe, aswell to create good presidents, as to follow them. Reduce things to the first institution, and observe wherein and how they have degenerate; but yet aske counfell of both times; of the ancient time what is best; and of the latter time what is fittest. Seeke to make thy course reguler, that may know before men hand what they mar expect; but be not too positiue, and expresse thy fel:c

¹⁸ Best at first. Melius inceperis, quam perstiteris, 'begin better that you went on.'
14 Make thy Course Regular. Ut qua agis pro Potestate, tanquam Regulia

1625.

æt. 65.

ree the best Examples; or Imitation, is a Globe Precepts. And after a me, set before thee, thine was Example; And exnine thy selfe strictly, wheer thou didst not best

first. 13 Neglect not also the Examples of those, that the carried themselves ill, in the same *Place*: Not to the off thy selfe, by taxing their Memory; but to direct to selfe what to avoid

y felfe, what to auoid.

eforme therfore, without

rauerie, or Scandall, of mer Times, and Persons; it yet set it downe to thy lfe, as well to create good residents, as to sollow Reduce things, to em. e first Institution, and oferue, wherin, and how, ey haue degenerate; but et aske Counsell of both imes; Of the Ancient ime, what is best; and the Latter Time, what fittest. Seeke to make y Course Regular; 14 that len may know before and, 15 what they may spect: But be not too ositiue, and peremptorie; nd expresse thy selfe 16

stain rules.' that your actions for power, may be restrained by

Know before hand. Ut Hominibus tanquam digito monstres, 'that you ay point out to men, as if with your finger.'
Thy selfe. Quid sit quod agas, 'what it is you do.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

well, when thou digressest from thie rule; Preserve the rightes of thie place, the rightes of thie place, the rights of thy place, but stirre not questions of but stir not questions of Iurisdiccion, and rather assume thie right in filence and de facto, then voyce it with claimes and Challenges. Preferve likewise the rightes of inferiour places, and thinke it more honor, to direct in cheife, then to be busie in all. Imbrace. and invite helpes, and intelligence, touching th[e] execution of thie place; and doe not drive away fuch as bring thee Informacion, as Medlers, but accept of them in good part. The vices of Aucheifly 4. thority are Delaies, Corruption, Roughnes, and Facilitye. For Delayes; give easie accesse; keepe tymes apgoe through pointed; with that which is in hand, and interlace not businesse but of necessitye. For Corruption, doe not only Corruption, do not on.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. well when thou digressed. from thy rule. Preferre the rights of thy place. Iurisdiction: and rathe assume thy right filence and de facto, then voice it with claimes. and challenges. Preserve likewife the rights inferiour places; and thinke it more honour, to direct in chiefe, then to be busie in al. Imbrace and inuite helpes, and in telligence touching execution of thy place: and doe not drive away fuch as bring thee information, as medlers, but accept of them in good The vices of ar thority are chiefly four Delaies. Corruption Roughneffe, and Facilist For Delaies, giue accesse; keepe times as pointed; go through with that which is in han: and interlace not business but of necessity.

¹⁷ Assume. Assumas et exerceas, 'assume and exercise.'
18 Voice. Cum strepitu suscites, et agites, 'noisily raise and move.
19 Preserue. Defende, et ne destitue, 'defend and do not desert.'
20 Inferiour. Inferiorum Munerum, tibi subordinatorum, 'inferior place subordinate to yourself.'

1625.

æt. 65.

well, when thou digreffest from thy Rule. Preserue the Right of thy Place; but stirre not questions of Iurisdiction: And rather assume17 thy Right, in Silence, and de facto, then voice18 it, with Claimes, and Challenges. Preferue¹⁹ likewise, the Rights of Inferiour²⁰ Places; And thinke it more Honour to direct in chiefe, then to be busie in all. Embrace, and inuite Helps, and Aduices, touching the Execution of thy Place; And doe not driue away fuch, as bring thee Information, as Medlers; but accept²¹ of them in good part. The vices of Authoritie²² are chiefly foure: Delaies;28 Corruption; Roughnesse; and Facilitie. For Delaies; Giue easie Accesse; Keepe times appointed; Goe through with that which is in hand; And interlace not businesse, out of necessitie. Corruption; Doe not onely

Accept. Allicias, et recipias, 'draw to you and accept.'

22 Authoritie. In Auctoritate utenda, et exercenda, 'in using and exercising authority.'

23 Delaies. Mora nimia, 'too much delay.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

bind thine owne handes, or thie Seruauntes handes, that may take, but bind the handes of them that should offer. For Integrity vsed doth the one, but Integrity professed, and with a manisest detestacion of Bribery doth the And avoyd not onely the faulte, but the Suspicion. Whosoever is found variable, and chaungmanifestly without manifest cause, giveth Sufpicion of Corrupcion.

A Servaunt, or a Favourite if he bee inward, and noe other apparaunt cause of esteeme, is commonly thought but a by-way.

A servaunt, or a Favourite if he be inward, and no other apparaunt cause of esteeme: is commonly thought but a by-way.

For roughnes, it is a needles cause of Discontent. Severity breedeth seare, but roughnes breedeth hate. Even Reproofes from authoritye, ought to be grave, and

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

bind 'thine owne hands, or thy feruants hands that may take; but bind the hands of them that should offer. For integrity vfed doth the one, but integrity professed, with a manifest detestation of bribery, doth the other. And auoid not only the fault, but the fuspition. Whosoeuer is found variable and changeth manifestly, manifest cause, giueth sufpition of corruption.

A feraunt or a fauourite if he be inward, and no other apparant cause of esteeme: is commonly thought but a by-way. For roughnes it is a needlesse cause of discontent. Seueritie breedeth feare, but roughnesse breedeth hate. Euen reproofes from authoritie, ought to be graue and

²⁴ Manifest. Omitted in the Latin.

²⁵ Opinion. Opinione tua quam declarasti, 'the opinion you have declared.'

²⁶ Course. *Processu quem incepisti*, 'the course you have begun.'

²⁷ Declare it. *Sedulo declares*, *et inculces*, 'carefully declare and ispress it.'

1625.

æt. 65.

binde thine owne Hands, or thy Seruants hands, from taking; but binde the hands of Sutours also from offring. For Integritie vsed doth the one; but Integritie professed, and with a manifest 24 detestation of Bribery, doth the And auoid not onely the Fault, but the Suspicion. Whosoeuer is found variable, and changeth manifestly, without manifest Cause, giueth Sus-

picion of Corruption. Therefore, alwayes, when thou changest thine Opinion,25 or Course,26 professe it plainly, and declare it,27 together with the Reasons, that moue thee to change; And doe not thinke to steale it.

A Seruant, or a Fauorite, if hee be inward,28 and no other apparent Cause of Esteeme, is commonly

thought but a By-way, to close²⁹ Corruption.

For Roughnesse; It is a needlesse cause of Discontent:30 Seueritie breedeth31 but Roughnesse Feare, breedeth Hate. Euen Reproofes from Authoritie, ought to be Graue, and

²⁸ Inward. Servus gratiosus, et apud Dominum potens, 'a favourite servant having influence with his master.'
29 Close. Omitted in the Latin.

Discontent. Invidiam, et Malevolentiam, 'envy and ill-will.'

Breedeth. Incutit, 'inflicts.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. not taunting. As for Facility, it is worse the[n] Bribery. Bribes For come but now and then, but if importunity, or idle refpectes lead a Man, he shall never be without; as Salomon faieth To respect persons is not good, for fuch a Man will transgresse for a peece of breade. is most true that was aunciently spoken. Aplace sheweth the Man and it sheweth some to the better and some to the worse. Omnium confensu capax imperasset imperii, nisi of Galba. faieth Tacitus but of Vespasian he saieth Solus imperantium Vefpasianus mutatus in melius, thoughe the one was meant of Sufficiencye, the other of Manners, and affeccion. It is an affured figne of a worthie, and generous spiritt, whom honour Ffor honor is, amendes. or should be the place of Vertue, and as in nature, thinges move violentlye to theire place, and calmely

IV. 1612. æt. 52. taunting. As for not facility, it is worse then bribery; bribes for come but now and then, but if importunitie, or idle refpects leade a man, he shall neuer be without. As Salomon faith; To respect perfons is not good; for fuch a man will transgresse for a peece of bread. is most true that was anciently spoken; A place sheweth the man: and it sheweth some to the better. and some to the worse. Omnium confensu imperasset, imperij nisi faith Tacitus of Galba; but of Vespasian he saith, Solus imperantium Vespasianus mutatus in melius: Though the one was meant of fufficiency, the other of manners and affection. It is an affured figne of a worthy and generous **fpirit** whom honour For honour is amends. or should be the place of vertue; and as in nature things moue violently to their place; and calmely

Bribes come. Tentantur, 'are attempted.'
Sufficiencie. Arte Imperatoria, 'the art of governing.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

not Taunting. As for Facilitie; It is worse then Bribery. For Bribes come³² but now and then; But if Importunitie, or Idle Respects lead a Man, he shall neuer be without. As Salomon faith; To respect Perfons, is not good; For such a man will transgresse for a peece of Bread.a is most true, that was anciently spoken; A place sheweth the Man: And it sheweth some to the better and fome to the worse: Omnium confensu, capax Imperij, nisi imperasset;b faith Tacitus of Galba: but of Vespasian he saith; Solus Imperantium Vespasianus mutatus in melius.c Though the one was meant of Sufficiencie, 33 the other of Manners, and Affection. It is an affured Signe, of a worthy and generous Spirit, whom Honour amends. For Honour is, or should be, the Place of Vertue: And as in Nature, Things moue violently to their Place, and calmely

^a Prov. xxviii. 21.

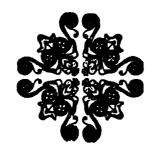
b In the opinion of all he was capable of Empire, had he not ruled. Tacitus. History. i. 49.

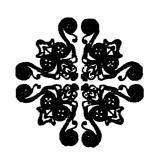
Vespasian, alone of the Emperors, changed for the better. Tacitus. History. i. 50.

292 A HARMONY OF THE ESSAYS.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. in theire place, fo vertue in ambition is violent, in authoritye setled.

IV. æt. 52. 1612. in their place; so vertue in ambition is violent, in authority, setled and calme.





Authority. In Honore adepto, 'when the honour is gained.'

So Calme. Omitted in the Latin.

Fairely, and tenderly. Illasam, 'unhurt.'

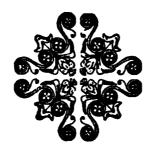
Paid. A Successore tuo, 'by your successor.'

Respect. Amica tracta, 'treat in a friendly manner.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

in their Place: So Vertue in Ambition is violent, in

Authority³⁴ fetled and calme.³⁵ All Rising to *Great Place*, is by a winding Staire: And if there be Factions, it is good, to side a Mans selfe, whilest hee is in the Rising; and to ballance Himselfe, when hee is placed. Vse the Memory of thy Predecessor fairely, and tenderly;³⁶ For if thou dost not, it is a Debt, will sure be paid,³⁷ when thou art gone. If thou have Colleagues, respect³⁸ them, and rather call them, when they looke not for it, then exclude them, when they have reason to looke to be called. Be not too sensible, or too remembring, of thy Place, in Conversation, and private Answers to Suitors;³⁹ But let it rather be said: When he sits in Place,⁴⁰ he is another Man.



89 Conversation, and private Answers to Suitors. Quotidianis sermonibus, aut conversatione privata, 'in daily discourse or private conversation.'
40 Sits in Place. Sedet, et munus suum exercet, 'sits and exercises his office.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. | IV. III. Harleian MS. 5106.

25. Of Empire.

T is a miserable state of minde have few thinges to desier,

and manie thinges to feare; and yet that commonly is the Case of Kinges who being at the highest, want matter of desier. which makes theire mindes more languishing, many reprehave fentacions of perilles, and shadowes, which makes theire mindes the lesse And this is one cleare. reason alsoe of that effect which the Scripture speaketh of That the Kinges heart is inscrutable; For multitude of Iealoufyes, and lacke of fome predominant defier, that should marshall, and putt in order all the rest, maketh Mens heartes hard to finde.

or found. Hence comes it likewife. that Princes manie tymes make themfelves Desieres, and sett 1612. æt. 52.

9. Of Empire.



T is a miserable state of minde, haue things to defire,

and many things to feare: and yet, that commonly is the case of Kings; who being at the highest, want matter of defire; which makes their mindes more languishing, the many reprehaue fentations of perrilles and shadowes, which makes their the lesse minds And this is one cleere. reason also of that effect, which the Scripture speaketh of; That the Kings heart is inscrutable. multitudes of iealousies, and lacke of fome predominant desire, that should marshall and put in order all the rest, maketh any mans heart hard to finde, or found. Hence commeth it likewise that Princes many times make themfelues desires, their eheartes vponn Toyes, their hearts vpon toies;

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

<sup>Shadowes. Umbrarum volitantium, 'flitting shadows.'
Speaketh of. Regibus tribuit, 'attributes to kings.'</sup>

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

19. Of Empire.



T is a miserable State of Minde, haue few to Things to desire,

and many Things to feare: And yet that commonly is the Case of Kings; Who being at the highest, want Matter of desire, which makes their Mindes

more Languishing; And haue many Reprefentations of Perills and Shadowes, which makes their Mindes the lesse cleare. And this is one Reason also of that Effect. which the Scripture speaketh of; That the Kings heart is infcrutable.a For Multitude of Iealousies, and Lack of some predominant desire, that should marshall and put in order³ all the rest, maketh any Mans Heart, hard to finde, or found.4 Hence it comes likewise, that Princes, many times, make themselues Desires, and set their Hearts vpon toyes:

^a Prov. xxv. 3.

Marshall and put in order. Imperet, 'command.'
 Finde, or sound. Exploratu, 'examine.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. fometymes vponn a building,

fometymes vponn the advauncing of a person, sometymes vponn obtayning excellencie in some art, or seate of the hand,

thinges and . fuch which feeme incredible to those that knowe not this principle That the minde of Man is more cheared, and refreshed by profitinge in smale things, then by standing at a stay in great. Therefore great, and fortunate Conquerours in theire first yeares,

tourne Melancholie and superstitious in theire later, As did Alexander the great, and in our memorie Charles the fift, and manie others. Ffor he that is vsed to goe forwarde, and findeth a stopp falleth out of his owne favour.

fometimes vpon a building; fometimes vpon an order; fometimes vpon the aduancing of a person; sometimes vpon obtaining excellency in some Arte, or seate of the hand:

and such like things, which seeme incredible to those that know not the principle; That the minde of man is more cheered and refreshed by prositing in small things, then by standing at a stay in great. Therefore great and fortunate Conquerors in their first yeeres,

fuperstitious in their latter, As did Alexander the great, and in our memory Charles the fifth, and many others. For he that is vsed to goe forward, and findeth a stoppe, falleth out of his owne fauour.

<sup>Building. Aedificia extruenda, 'erecting buildings.'
Order. Ordinem aliquem aut Collegium, 'some order or college.'</sup>

1625.

æt. 65.

Sometimes vpon a Building; Sometimes vpon Erecting of an Order; Sometimes vpon the Advancing of a Person; Sometimes vpon obtaining Excellency in some Art, or Feat of the Hand;

This feemeth incredible

vnto those, that know not

As Nero for playing on the Harpe, Domitian for Certainty of Hand with the Arrow, Commodus for playing at Fence, Caracalla for driving Chariots, and the like.

the Principle; That the Minde of Man is more cheared, and refreshed, by profiting in small things, then by standing at a stay in great. We see also that Kings, that have beene fortunate Conquerors⁸ in their first yeares; it being not possible for them to goe forward infinitely, but that they must have some Checke or Arrest in their Fortunes; turne in their latter yeares, to be Superstitious and Melancholy: As did Alexander the Great; Dioclesian; And in our memory, Charles the fift; And others: For he that is vsed to goe forward, and findeth a Stop, falleth out of his owne fauour, and is not the Thing he was.

⁷ And the like. Omitted in the Latin.
8 Fortunate Conquerors. In Victoriis et provinciis subjugandis, maxime fælices, 'yery fortunate in victories and in subduing provinces.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

A true temper of governement is a rare thing; For both Temper, and Diftemper confift of contraryes. But it is one thing to mingle Contraryes, another to interchaunge them. The aunsweare of Apollorius Vespasian is full of excellent Instruccion. Vefpasian asked him what was Neroes ouerthrowe he aunsweared Nero could touch and tune the Harp well, But in gouernement fometymes he vsed to wynd the pynnes to highe, and foretymes to let them downe to lowe. And certaine it is, that nothing destroyeth authoritye fo much as the vnequall and vntymely interchaunge of pressing power and imbasing Maiestie. The wisedome of all their latter tymes in Princes affaiers is rather fine Deliveryes, and shiftinges of daungers and mischeifes when they are neare, then folid and

groundèd

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

A true

temper of gouernment is a rare thing: For both temper and diftemper consist of contraries. But it is one thing to mingle contraries, another to interchange them. The answer of Apolonius Vespasian is full of excellent instruction. Vispasian asked him, What was Neroes ouerthrow: hee answered: Nero could touch and tune the Harpe well; But in gouernment fometimes he vsed to winde the pinnes to hie, fometimes to let them downe too lowe. And certaine it is, that nothing destroieth

wisdome of all these latter times, in Princes affaires, is rather fine deliueries, and shiftings of dangers and mischieses when they are neere, then solide and grounded courses to

authority, fo much as the

vnequall and vntimely in-

power and relaxing power.

of

pressing

terchange

to

courfes

⁹ To Vespasian. Omitted in the Latin. 10 Vnequall. Inaqualem, et quasi subsultoriam, 'unequal, and as it were, fitful (jumping).'

1625.

æt. 65.

To speake now of the true Temper of Empire: It is a Thing rare, and hard to keep: For both Temper and Diftemper consist of Contraries. But it is one thing to mingle Contraries, another to enterchange them. The Answer of Apollonius to Vespasian,9 is full of Excellent Instruction; Vefbasian asked him; What was Neroes ouerthrow? He inswered; Nero could touch and tune the Harpe well; But in Gouernment, sometimes he vsed to winde the pins too high, sometimes to let them downe 'oo low.a And certaine it s, that Nothing destroieth Authority fo much, as the mequall 10 and vntimely Enterchange of Power Preffed too farre, and Relaxed too much.

This is true: that the visdome of all these latter Times in *Princes* Affaires, s rather fine Deliueries, and Shiftings 11 of Dangers and Mischiefes, when they ire neare; then folid and grounded Courses 12

^a Philostratus. Vità Appolloni Tyanensi. v. 28. Lord Bacon. Apop. 51.

¹¹ Delineries and Shiftings. Ut conquirantur magis et aptentur Remedia

t subterfugia, 'rather to seek and apply remedies and subterfuges.'

12 Courses. Ut Prudentia solida et constanti, depellantur et summoveanur, antequam impendeant, 'to dispel and remove them by solid and conastent prudence before they are imminent.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. keepe them aloofe. But

lett men beware how they neglect and fuffer matter of trouble to be prepared; For noe Man can forbidd the sparke, nor tell whence it may come. The difficulties in Princes businesse are many tymes great, but the greatest difficultye is often in theire owne minde. Ffor it is Common with Princes. (faieth *Tacitus*) to will contradictories; Sunt plerumque Regum voluntates vehementes, et inter se contrariæ. For it is the Solæcisme of power, to thinke to commaunde the end, and yet not to enduer the meane,

1612. æt. 52. keep them aloofe.

let men beware how they neglect and fuffer matter of trouble to bee prepared: for no man can forbid the sparke. tell whence it may come. The difficult nesses in Princes businesse are many times great, but the greatest difficulty, is often in their For it is owne minde. common with Princes (faith Tacitus) to will contradictories. Sunt plervoluntates unque Regum vehementes, et inter se contrariæ. For it power. to Solocifme of thinke to command the ende, and yet not to endure the meane.

¹⁸ Neglect... prepared. Obdormiscant circa Turbarum Materias primas. et Inchoamenta, 'slumber during the first matters and beginnings of troubles 14 Sparke. Scintillam, Incendium parituram, 'the spark, which will pro-

duce a conflagration.'

15 Tell. Regiones Metiri, 'judge the place.'

16 Difficulties. Difficultates et Impedimenta, 'difficulties and hindrances'

17 Great. Omitted in the Latin.

18 Minde. Affectus et mores, 'disposition and manners.'

19 Power. Potentiæ nimiæ, 'too much power.'

1625.

æt. 65.

keepe them aloofe. But this is but to try Masteries with Fortune: And let men beware, how they neglect, and fuffer Matter of Trouble, to be prepared: 18 For no Man can forbid the Sparke,14 nor tell15 whence it may come. The difficulties 16 in Princes Businesse, are many and great;17 But the greatest difficulty, is often in their owne Minde. 18 For it is with *Princes*. common (faith Tacitusa) to will Contradictories. Sunt plerumque Regum voluntates vehementes, et inter se contrariæ. For it is the Solecisme of Power, 19 to . thinke to Command²⁰ the End, and yet not to en-

dure the Meane.

Kings have to deale with their Neighbours; their Wives; their Children; their Prelates or Clergie; their Nobles; their Second-Nobles or Gentlemen; their Merchants; their Commons; and their Men of Warre; And from all these arise Dangers, if Care and Circumspection be not vsed.

First for their *Neighbours*; There can no generall Rule²² be given, (The Occasions are so variable,) saue

Not Tacitus, but Sallust. Sed plerumque regiæ voluntates, ut vehementes, sic mobiles, sæpe ipsæ sibi advorsæ. 'The wills of most kings, as they are violent, so are they fickle and often at variance with themselves.' Jugurtha. cxiii.

²⁰ Command. Posse . . . pro arbitrio assequi, 'to be able to attain at his desire.'

at his desire.'

21 Endure. Procurare, 'attend to.'

²² Rule. Regula aliqua certa Cautionis, 'no certain rule of caution.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. III. 1612. æt. 52.

²³ And this is generally . . . hinder it. This sentence is omitted in

the Latin.

24 Emperour. Hispano, 'of Spain.'

25 Either by confederation, or if need were, by a Warre. Omitted in the Latin.
28 Lawfull. Competens et legitima, 'sufficient and lawful.'

1625.

æt. 65.

ne; which euer holdeth; which is, That Princes doe eepe due Centinell, that none of their Neighbours doe uergrow fo, (by Encrease of Territory, by Embracing f Trade, by Approaches, or the like) as they become nore able to annoy them, then they were. And this s, generally, the work of Standing Counfels to forefee, nd to hinder it.23 During that Triumuirate of Kings, King Henry the 8. of England, Francis the 1. Kins f France, and Charles the 5. Emperour,24 there wag ich a watch kept, that none of the Three, could win Palme of Ground, but the other two, would straightvaies ballance it, either by Confederation, or, if need vere, by a Warre:25 And would not, in any wife, take p Peace at Interest. And the like was done by that League (which, Guicciardine faith, was the Security of (taly) made betwene Ferdinando King of Naples; Lorenzius Medices, and Ludovicus Sforza, Potentates, he one of Florence, the other of Millaine. Neither is he Opinion, of some of the Schoole-Men, to be reeiued: That a warre cannot iuslly be made, but vpon a recedent Iniury, or Prouocation. For there is no Quefion, but a iust Feare, of an Imminent danger, though here be no Blow giuen, is a lawfull²⁶ Cause of a Warre. For their Wives; There are Cruell²⁷ Examples of hem. Liuia is infamed for the poysoning of her husand: 28 Roxolana, Solymans Wife, was the destruction, of that renowned Prince, Sultan29 Mustapha; And therwise troubled his 30 House, and Succession: Edward he Second of *England*, his Queen, had the principall and, in the Deposing and Murther of her Husband. This kinde of danger, is then to be feared, chiefly, when the Wiues haue Plots, for the Raising of their wne Children:31 Or else that they be Aduoutresses.

<sup>Cruell. Crudelia et atrocia, 'cruel and savage.'
Husband. Augusti, 'of Augustus.'
Sultan. Omitted in the Latin.
His. Mariti sui, 'her husband's.'
Children. Liberos ex priore Marito, 'children by a former husband.'</sup>

IV. IIL 1607-12. æt. 47-52. 1612. æt. 52.

⁸² Of dangers. Omitted in the Latin.
83 Turks. Sultanorum, 'of the Sultans.'
84 Strange. Omitted in the Latin.
85 Towardnesse. Spei, 'hope.'
86 His other Sonne. Qui ex filiis ejus superstes fuit, 'his son who survived'
87 Did little better. Omitted in the Latin.
88 Repentance. Mærore et pænitentia, 'grief and repentance.'
89 Baiazet. Bajasetem patrem suum, 'Bajazet, his father.'

1625.

V.

æt. 65.

For their Children: The Tragedies, likewise, of dangers³² from them, haue been many. And generally, the Entring of Fathers, into Suspicion of their Children, hath been euer vnfortunate. The destruction of Muslapha, (that we named before) was fo fatall to Solymans Line, as the Succession of the Turks, 38 from Solyman, vntill this day, is suspected to be vntrue, and of strange³⁴ Bloud; For that Selymus the Second was thought to be Supposititious. The destruction of Crispus, a young Prince, of rare Towardnesse, 35 by Constantinus the Great, his Father, was in like manner fatall to his House; For both Constantinus, and Constance, his Sonnes, died violent deaths; And Constantius his other Sonne,36 did little better;37 who died, indeed, of Sicknesse, but after that Iulianus had taken Armes against him. The destruction of Demetrius, Sonne to Philip the Second, of Macedon, turned vpon the Father, who died of Repentance.³⁸ many like Examples there are: But few, or none, where the Fathers had good by fuch distrust; Except it were, where the Sonnes were vp, in open Armes against them; As was Selymus the first against Baiazet:39 And the three Sonnes of Henry the Second, King of England.

For their Prelates; when they are proud and great, there is also danger from them: As it was, in the times of Anselmus, and Thomas Becket, Archbishops of Canterbury; who with their Crossars, did almost try it, with the Kings Sword; And yet they had to deale with Stout and Haughty Kings; William Rufus, Henry the first, and Henry the second. The danger is not⁴¹ from that State,⁴² but where it hath a dependance of forraine Authority;48 Or where the Church-

Almost. Omitted in the Latin.

11 Is not. Non est magnopere pertimescendum, 'is not much to be seared.'

12 That State. Prælatis, 'prelates.'

13 Forraine authority. Auctoritate et Jurisdictione Principatus externs, authority and jurisdiction of a foreign power.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. IV. 1612. æt. 52

⁴⁴ Come in. Omitted in the Latin.
45 Collation. Omitted in the Latin.
46 Particular Patrons. Patronis Ecclesiarum, 'patrons of churches.'
47 Keep at a distance. Sunt illi certe cohibendi, et tanquam in justa distantia a Solio Regali continendi, 'they ought assuredly to be restrained, and kept as it were at a proper distance from the King's throne.'
48 Depressed. Perpetuo deprimebat: 'continually depressed.'
49 Loyall. In Fide et Officio, 'in faith and duty.'
50 Fain to doe. Sustineret, 'maintained.'

1625.

æt. 65.

nen come in,44 and are elected, not by the Collation45 of the King, or particular Patrons,46 but by the People. For their Nobles; To keepe them at a distance,47 t is not amisse; But to depresse them, may make a King more Absolute, but lesse Sase; And lesse able to performe any thing, that he defires. I have noted it, n my History of King Henry the Seuenth, of England, who depressed his Nobility; Whereupon, it came to passe, that his Times were full of Difficulties and Troubles; For the Nobility, though they continued loyall49 vnto him, yet did they not co-operate with him, n his Businesse. So that in effect, he was saine to doe⁵⁰ all things, himfelfe.

For their Second Nobles; There is not much danger from them, being a Body dispersed. They may sometimes discourse high, but that doth little Hurt: Besides,51 they are a Counterpoize52 to the Higher Nobility, that they grow not too Potent: And lastly, being the most immediate in Authority,53 with the Common People, they doe best temper Popular Commotions.

For their Merchants; They are Vena porta; And if they flourish not, a Kingdome may have good Limmes, but will haue empty Veines, and nourish little.54 Taxes, and Imposts⁵⁵ vpon them, doe feldome good to the Kings Reuenew; For that that he winnes in the Hundred,56 he leefeth in the Shire;57 The particular Rates being increased,58 but the totall Bulke of Trading rather decreased.

For their Commons; There is little danger from

a The Gate-vein.

Besides. Quinimo fovendi sunt, 'besides they should be cherished.'
Counterpoize. Optime temperent, 'moderate well.'
Authority. Gubernacula tractent, 'manage the helm.'

Nourish little. Habitum corporis macrum, 'lean habit of body.'

55 Imposts. Portoria immodica, 'excessive imposts.'

56 Hundred. Partibus, 'in parts.'

57 Shire. Summa, 'in the total.'

⁵⁸ The particular Rates being increased. Omitted in the Latin.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

*Princes are like the heavenly bodyes which cause good, or evill tymes, and which have much veneration, but noe rest. All preceptes concernyng kinges are in effect comprehended in those two Remembrances. Memento quod es Homo and Memento quod es Deus.

The one to bridle their power and, The other their will.

Princes are like to the heauenly bodies, which cause good or euill times; and which haue much veneration, but no rest. All precepts concerning Kings are in effect comprehended in those two remembrances. Memento quod es homo, and Mimento quod es Deus or Vice dei: The one bridle their power, and the other their will.





^{*} This passage is inserted in the margin in a different hand. ? Sir F. Bacon's.

⁵⁹ Great. Populares, 'popular.'

⁶⁰ Customes. Consuetudinibus antiquis; Vel in Gravaminibus Tributorum 'ancient customs, or grievances of tribute.'

torum, 'ancient customs, or grievances of tribute.'
61 Meanes of Life. Vel in aliis quæ victum eorum decurtant, 'or in anything which diminishes their means of life.'

⁶² In a Body. Si in Corpus unum cogantur, vel Exercitus, vel prasidiorum; 'if they are collected in a body either as an army or as garrisons'

1625.

æt. 65.

them, except it be, where they have Great⁵⁹ and Potent Heads; Or where you meddle, with the Point of Religion; Or their Customes, 60 or Meanes of Life. 61

For their Men of warre; It is a dangerous State, where they liue and remaine in a Body,62 and are vied to Donatiues; whereof we fee Examples⁶³ in the Ianizaries, and Pretorian Bands of Rome. 64 But Traynings of Men, and Arming them in seuerall places, and vnder feuerall Commanders, and without Donatiues, are Things of Defence,65 and no Danger.

Princes are like to

Heauenly Bodies, which cause⁶⁶ good or euill times; And which haue⁶⁷ much Veneration, but no Rest. All precepts concerning Kings, are in effect comprehended, in those two Remembrances: Memento nuod es Homo; And Menento quod es Deus, or Viceb Dei: The one oridleth their Power, and he other their Will.68



Remember that thou art man.

Bennember that thou art God, or, in the place of God.

⁴³ Examples. Clarissima Exempla, 'most clear examples.'

⁶⁴ Bands of Rome. Omitted in the Latin.

Defence. Utiles, et salubres, 'profitable and serviceable.'

Cause. In fluxu suo producunt, 'produce in their course.'

Haue. Gaudent, 'enjoy.'

Their will. Ad Voluntatem regendam, 'to rule their will.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Harleian MS. 5106.

26. Of Conncell.



He greatest trust betweene Man, and man is the trust of giveing

Councell. Ffor in other confidences Men committ the partes of theire life. theire landes, theire goodes, theire 'Childe, theire fome particular Creditt, But to fuch as they make theire Councellours, they committ the whole; by how much the more they are obliged to all faith, and Integrity. The wifest Princes neede not thinke it anie diminution to theire greatnes, or derogation to theire fufficiency, to relye vponn God himself councell. is not without, but hath made it one of the great bleffed of his names Counsellor. the sonne Salomon hath pronounced that In Counfell is Sta-Thinges will have bilitie. their first, or second agita- their first or second agita-

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

10. Of Counsell.



He greatest trust betweene man, is the

trust of giving counsell. For in other confidences men commit the partes of their life, their lands, their goods. child, their fome particuler credit; affaire. But to such as they make their counsellors, they commit whole; by how much the more they are obliged to all faith, and integrity. The wifest Princes need not thinke it any diminution to their greatnesse, or derogation to fufficiency, to rely vpon himselse counfell. God is not without: but hath made it one of the great hleffed names of his Counfellor.) Son (the Salomon hath pronounced. that In Counfel is flu-Things will have bilitie.

PH. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ They. Qui partes Consiliariorum prastant, 'those who perform the part of counsellors. ² Greatnesse. Auctoritatis, 'authority.'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

20. Of Counsell.

He greatest Trust, betweene Man and Man, is the Trust of Giving

For in other Counfell. Confidences, Men commit the parts of Their Lands, their Goods, their Children, their Credit, some particular Affaire; But to fuch, as they make their Counfellours, they commit the whole: By how much the more, they1 are obliged to all Faith and integrity. The wifest Princes, need not thinke it any diminution to their Greatnesse,2 or derogation to their Sufficiency,³ to rely vpon Counfell.4 God himselfe is not without: 5 But hath made it one of the great Names, of his bleffed Sonne; The Counfellour.a Salomon hath pronounced, that In Counfell is Stability. Things will have their first, or second Agita-

a Isaiah ix. 6. b Prov. xx. 18.

³ Or derogation to their Sufficiency. Omitted in the Latin.

⁴ Counsell. Consilio Virorum selectorum, 'counsel of chosen men.'
5 Without. Consilio vacat, 'without counsel.'
6 Things. Res humanæ, 'human things.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

if they be not vponn the argutoffed ments of Councell, they toffed vponn the wilbe of fortune waves be full of inconstancye, doeing, and vndoeing, like the reeling of a drunken Salomons sonnes found the force of Councell, as his father fawe the necessity of it. For the kingdome beloved of God was first rent, and broken by ill counfell, vponn which Councell there are fett for our Instruccion, the two markes whereby bad Counfell is discerned, forever best that it was young Councell for the persons, and violent Councell for the matter.

The auncient tymes doe fett fourth in figure both the incorporacion, and inseparable coniunction of Councell with Kinges, and the wife and politique vse of Councell by kinges; the one in that they say Iupiter did that they say Iupiter did

V. 1612. æt. 52. tion; if they bee not vpon the toffed of counfell, they ments will be toffed vpon the waves of Fortune; and bee full of inconstancy, doing, and vndoing, lke the reeling of a drunken Salomons found the force of counfell, as his father faw the necessitie of it. For the kingdome beloued God was first rent and broken by ill counfel: vpon which counfel there are fet for our instruction, the two marks, whereby bad counfell is for euer best discerned, that it was young counfell for the persons, and violent counsell for the matter.

The ancient times doe fet forth in figure both the incorporation, and inseperable coniunction of counfell Kinges; and the wife and politike vse of Counsell by Kings: the

⁷ Inconstancy. Inconstantiæ, et Mutationum, 'inconstancy and changes 8 Necessity. Necessitatem et usum, 'necessity and use.'

1625.

æt. 65.

tion; If they be not toffed vpon the Arguments of Counfell, they will be toffed vpon the Waues of Fortune; And be full of Inconstancy,7 doing, and vndoing, like the Reeling of a drunken Salomons Sonne found the Force of Counfell, as his Father faw the Necessity⁸ of it. For the Beloued Kingdome God was first rent, and broken by ill Counfell; Vpon which Counfell, there are fet,9 for our Instruction, the two Markes, whereby Bad Counfell is, sor euer, best discerned: That it was young Counfell, for the Persons; And Violent Counfell, for the Matter.

V.

The Ancient Times 10 doe set 11 forth in Figure, both the Incorporation, and inseparable Coniunction of Counfell with Kings; And the wise and Politique vse of Counfell by Kings: The one, in that they say, Iupiter did

Set. Inusta, 'branded.'

¹⁰ Times. Sapientia, 'wisdom.'
11 Set. Adumbravit, 'shadowed.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. marrie Metis which signifieth Councell; So

Soveraignetye, or Authoritie is marryed to Councell; the

other in that which followeth which was thus. They fay after Iupiter was

married to Metis, she conceived by him, and was

with childe; But Iupiter fuffred her not to

till she brought fourth, but eate her vpp, whereby he

with became childe, and was delivered

of Pallas armed out of

his head; which monstrous fable conteineth a

fecrett of *Empire*, how kinges are to make vse of

theire Councell of State. That first they ought to

matters to referre them which is the first

begetting, or impregnacion; but when they are

elaborate, moulded, and

theire Councell, and grow their counsell and growe

brought fourth, then that brought fourth; that then

they fuffer not theire Coun- they fuffer not their coun-

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

marrie. Metis (which fignifieth Counfell.)

Soueraignty or authority is married to counsel. other in that which followeth; which was thus, They fay after Iupiter was married to Metis, shee conceiu'd by him, and was with childe, but Iupiter fuffered her not to flay till shee brought fourth, but eate her vp; whereby hee became child and was deliuered of Pallas, armed out of his head. Which monstrous fable containeth a fecret of Empire: How Kings are to make vie of their Counfell of state. That first they ought to referre matters them, which is the first begetting or impregnation; but when they are elaborate, moulded, and shaped in the wombe of shaped in the wombe of ripe, and ready to be ripe, and ready to be

¹⁸ Was thus. Hujusmodi Commentum est, 'was a fable of this kind'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

marry Metis, which fignifieth Counfell: Whereby they intend, that Soueraignty 18 married to Counfell: The other, in that which followeth, which was thus: 12 They say after Iupiter was married to Metis, she conceiued by him, and was with Childe; but Iupiter fuffered her not to stay, till she brought forth, but eat her vp; Wherby he became himselfe with Child, and was deliuered of Pallas Armed, out of his Head. Which monstrous Fable, containeth a Secret of *Empire*; How Kings are to make vse of their Councell of State. That first, they ought to referre 13 matters them, which is the first Begetting or Impregnation; 14 But when they are elaborate, moulded, and shaped, in the Wombe of their Councell, and grow ripe, and ready to be brought forth; That then, they fuffer not their Coun-

Referre. Deliberandas committant, 'refer for deliberation.'
Begetting or Impregnation. Conceptio, 'conception.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. cell to goe throughe with the refolucion, and direccion, as if it depended vponn them, but take the matters backe into theire owne hand, and make it appeare to the world that the decrees and finall (which directions because they come forth with prudence, and power, are refembled Pallas to proceede from armed) themselves; and not onely from theire authority, but add reputhe more to themselves. tacion to from their head, and devise.

The inconveniences that have been enoted in calling, and vsing Councell are three—Ffirst the revealing of affayres whereby they become lesse secrett. Secondly the weakening of the authoritie of Princes, as if they were leffe of themselves; Thirdly the daunger of being vnfaithfullie councelled, and more for the good of them that

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

fel to go through, with the resolution and direction, as if it depended vpon them; but take the matter back into their own hand, and make it appeare to the world, that the decrees and directions (which cause they come forth with prudence, and power, are refembled **Pallas** to armed) proceeded from themselues: and not onely from their authority, but (the more to adde reputation themselues) to from their heade and deuice.

The inconveniences that haue beene noted in calling and vsing counsell, are three. First, the reuealing of affaires, whereby they become lesse secret. Secondly, the weakning of the authority of Princes. as if they were leffe of themselues. Thirdly, the danger of being vnfaithfully counfelled, and more for the good of them that

15 Resolution and direction. Decretum, 'resolution.'

¹⁶ On them. Ex eorum Auctoritate, 'upon their authority.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

all to goe through with the Resolution, and direction,15 as if it depended on them; 16 But take the matter backe into their owne Hands, and make it appeare to the world, that the Decrees, and finall Directions, (which, because they come forth with Prudence, and Power, are resembled **Pallas** to Armed) proceeded from themselues: And not onely from their Authority, but (the more to adde Reputation to Themselues) from their Head, and Deuice.17

Let vs now speake of the Inconveniences of Counfell, and of the Remedies.

The Inconveniences, that have been noted in calling, and vsing Counfell, are three. First, the Revealing sof Affaires, whereby they become lesse Secret.

Secondly, the Weakning of the Authority of Princes, as if they were lesse sof Themselves. Thirdly, the Danger of being vnsaithfully counfelled, and more for the good of them that

¹⁷ Deuice. Auctoritate, 'authority.'

¹⁸ Reuealing. Omitted in the Latin.
19 Were lesse. Minus ex se penderent, 'depended less upon themselves.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

councell, then of him that is councelled. Ffor which inconveniences the doctrine of *Italie*, and practize of Fraunce

hath introduced Cabanett Councelles. remedy a the difeafe, worfe than which hath tourned Metis the wife, to Metis Mistresse, that is the councelles of State which Princes are* solemly marryed, to councells of gracious persons recommended cheifly by flattery and affection.

But for fecrecie, Princes are not bound to communicate all matters with all councellours, but may and extract, select. Neither is it necessarye, that he that confulteth what he should doe, should declare what he will doe; But lett Princes beware that the vnfecreting of theire affaires come not from themselves: and as for *Cabanett* Councell may be theire Mot plenus rimarum sum; one

IV. 1612. æt. 52. counsel, then of him that is counfelled. For which inconueniences, the doctrine of Italy, and practize of France, hath introduced Cabanet counfels. remedy **a**.

worse then the disease.

But the fecrecy Princes. are not bound to communicate all matters with all Councellors, but may extract and felect. Neither is it necessarie. that hee that confulteth what hee should doe; should declare what hee will doe. But let Princes beware that the vnfecreting their affaires come not from themselues. And as for *Cabanet* Counfell. may be it their Mot. Plenus rimarum fum. Onc

^{* †} The word 'solemly' has been struck out here; and the words 'flattery and' have been inserted below in a different hand; ? Sir F. Bacon's.

²⁰ Counselled. Principis ipsius, 'the prince himself.'
²¹ Cabinet. Interiora, qua vulgo vocantur Cabinetti, 'inner councils, which are commonly called cabinets.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

s counfell, then of him that s counfelled.²⁰ For which Inconveniences, the Docrine of Italy, and Practife of France, in some Kings times, 12th introduced Cabinet²¹ Counfels; A Remedy worse then the Disease.

As to Secrecy; 22 Princes are not bound to communicate all Matters, with all Counfellors; but may felect.23 extract and Neither is it necessary, that he that consulteth what he should doe, should declare what he will doe. But let Princes beware, that the *unfecreting* of their Affaires, comes not from Themselues. as for Cabinet Counsells, it may be their Motto; Plenusrimarum sum: One

a I am full of rifts. Terence. Eunuchus. i. 2.

²² Secrecy. Occultationem Consiliorum, 'secrecy of councils.', ²³ After select. Tam Personas, quam Negotia, 'as well the persons as the business.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. | IV. III.

doe more hurt, then manie, that knowe it theire duetie to keepe councell.

1612. æt. 52. futile person, that maketh suite person, that maketh

it his glorie to tell, will it his glory to tell, will do more hurt, then manie that know it their dutie to conceale.

For weakening of authority, The fable sheweth the remedye

weakning weakning For authority, the fable sheweth the remedy;

Neither was there ever neither was prince bereaved of his Prince bereaued of his dependances by Councell, except where Counfell, except there hath bene an over-greatnesse in one, or an over-strict Combin- or an overstrict combinacion in diuerse.

there euer his dependances either there hath been either an ouergreatnesse in one. ation in diuerse.

For the last inconvenience | For the last inconvenience |

Tell. Arcana nosse et retegere, 'to know and disclose secrets.'
Beyond. Ultra notitiam, 'beyond the knowledge of.'
Hand-Mill. Proprio Marte validus, 'strong in his own strength.'

<sup>Inward. Omitted in the latin.
True. Omitted in the Latin.</sup>

1625.

æt. 65.

futile person, that maketh it his glory to tell,24 will doe more hurt, then many, that know it their duty

conceale. It is true, there be fome Affaires, which require extreme Secrecy, which will hardly go beyond 25 one or two persons, besides the King: Neither are those Counfels vnprosperous: For besides the Secrecy, they commonly goe on constantly in one Spirit of Direction, without distraction. But then it must be a Prudent King, such as is able to Grinde with a Hand-Mill;²⁶ And those Inward²⁷ Counfellours, had need also, be Wise Men, and especially true²⁸ and trusty to the Kings Ends; As it was with King Henry the Seuenth of *England*, who in his greatest Businesse,²⁹ imparted himselfe to none, 30 except it were to Morton, and Fox.

Weakening For The Fable

sheweth the Remedy. Nay the Maiesty of Kings, is rather exalted, then diminished, when they are in the Chaire of Counfell:

Neither was there euer Prince, bereaued of his Dependances,³¹ by his Councell; Except where there hath beene, either

an Ouergreatnesse in one Counsellour,

Or an Ouerstrict Combin-

ation in Diuers; which are Things 82 foone found, and holpen.

For the last Inconvenience.

²⁹ His greatest Businesse. Arcana sua majoris momenti, 'his secrets of greater importance.'
None. Duobus tantum modo Consiliariis, 'to two councillors alone.'

Dependances. Auctoritate, 'authority.'
Things. Mala, 'evils.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. an eye to themselves, Certainely Non fidem ticular persons. There be that are in nature faithfull, and fincere and plaine, and direct, not craftye, and involved; lett Princes above all drawe to themselves such natures; Besides Councelles are not commonly fo vnited. but that one keepeth Sentinell over another.

But the best remedy is, if Princes know theire Councellours as well as their Councellours knowe them. Principis est virtus maxima nosse such and on the other fide, Councellours should not be to Speculative into theire Sovereignes The true Comperson. posicion of a Councellour is rather to be skilfull in theire Maisters businesse, then in his nature, for then he is like to advise

IV. 1612. æt. 52. that Men will councell with | that men will counsell with an eie to themselues. inveniet Certainlie, Non inveniet super terram, is fidem fuper terram, is meant of the nature of meant of the nature of tymes, and not of all par-times, and not of all particuler persons. There bee that are in nature faithfull and finceare. plaine, and direct, craftie and involued. Let Princes aboue all, draw to themselues such natures. Besides, counfels not commonly fo vnited. but that one keepeth Sentinell ouer an other.

> But the best remedie is, if Princes know their councellors, aswell as Counfellors know them. Principis est virtus maxima noffe fuos. And of the other fide Councellors should not be too speculatiue into their Soueraignes person. The true composition of a Councellor. is rather to bee skilfull in their Masters businesse. then in his nature: For then he is like to adule

^{. .} non Domini, 'their own affairs, not 33 Themselues. Suæ rei . their masters. 84 After Certainly. Scripturam illam, 'that text.'

1625.

æt. 65.

that Men will Counfell with an Eye to themselues;88 Certainly,34 Non inveniet Fidem super terram,a is meant of the Nature of Times, and not of all particular Persons; There be, that are in Nature, Faithfull, and Sincere, and Plaine, and Direct; Not Crafty, and Inuolued: Let Princes, aboue all, draw to themselues such Natures. Besides, Counsellours are not Commonly fo vnited, but that one Counfellour keepeth Centinell ouer An-

other; So that if any do Counfell out of Faction, or private Ends, it commonly comes to the Kings Eare.

But the best Remedy is, if Princes know their Counfellours, as well as their Counfellours know them: Principis est virtus maxima nosse fuos. b And on the other fide, Counfellours should not be too Speculatiue, into their Soueraignes Person. The true Composition of a Counfellour, is rather to be skilful in Masters Businesse. their then in his Nature; For then he is like to Aduise

^a Luke xviii. 8.

b It is the greatest vertue of a Prince to know his own. Martial Epigr. viii. 15.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

him, and not to feede his humor. It is of finguler vse to Princes, if they take the opinions of theire Councell, both feparately, For priand togither. uate opinion is more free; but opinion before others more reverent. private, Men are more bold in theire owne humours, and in confort, Men are more obnoxious humors. others Therefore it is good to take both, and of the inferiour forte rather in priuate,

of the greater rather in Com-

panie.

It is in vaine for Princes to take Councell concerning matters, if they take not Councell likewife concerning persons. Ffor all matters are as dead Imand the life of the execucion of affayres resteth in the good choise of persons. Neither is it enoughe to confulte concerning persons Secundum genera, as in an Idea, or genera, as in an Idea, or

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

him, and not to feed his humor. It is of finguler vse to Princes, if they take opinions of the their Councell, both feperatly and together. For priuate opinion is more free, but opinion before others more reuerent. priuate, men more are bold in their own humors; and in confort, men are more obnoxious others humors. to Therefore it is good to take both, and of the inferiour fort rather in private to preferu**e** freedome, the greater rather in confort, to preferue respect. It is in vain for *Princes* to take counfell concerning matters: if they take no counfell likwife cerning persons. For all matters are as dead images, and the life the execution of affaires resteth in the good choise of persons. Neither is it enough to confult concerning persons,

Opinions. Opiniones et Vota, 'opinions and wishes.'
Are more bold. Plus inservit, 'serve more.'
Obnoxious. Obnoxius, 'deferential.'
Humours. Affectibus, 'assumptions.'

1625.

æt. 65.

him, and not to Feede his Humour. It is of fingular vie to Princes, if they take the Opinions³⁵ of their Counfell, both Seperately, and Together. For Priuate Opinion is more free; but Opinion before others is more Reuerend. priuate, Men are more bold³⁶ in their owne Humours; And in Confort, Men are more obnoxious³⁷ Humours;³⁸ others Therefore it is good to take both: And of the inferiour Sort, rather in private, to preserve Freedome; Of the greater, rather in Confort, to preserve Respect. 39 It is in vaine for *Princes* to take Counfel concerning Matters, if they take no Counfell likewise 40 concerning Persons: For all Matters, are as dead Images; And the Life of the Execution of Affaires, restethin the good Choice 41 Neither is it of Persons. enough to confult concern-Persons, Secundum genera,a as in an Idea, or

a According to classes.

³⁹ Preserve Respect. Ut modestius Sententiam ferant, 'that they may rive their opinions more moderately.'

give their opinions more moderately.'

Likewise. Diligenter quoque, 'diligently also.'

Good Choice. Delectu, 'choice.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. Mathematicall descripcion what kind person should of but in indiuiduo the greatest errors, and the Iudgement are shewed in the choice of Individualls.



IV. 1612. æt. 52. Mathematicall description, kind what of person should but in *individuo*: be; greatest errors For the and the greatest iudgement are shewed in the choice of Indiuiduals. It was truely faid, Optimi Confiliarij mortui. Bookes will speake plaine, when Councellors blanch. Therefore it is good to be conversant in them, specially the books of fuch as themselues haue beene Actors vpon the Stage.



himselfe; That he was a great Necromancer, for that he vsed to aske Consell of the Dead: meaning Books." Lord Bacon. Apophth. No. 105. Ed. 1625

Truly said. Memoria tenendum, 'must be kept in the memory.'
Blanch. In Adulationem lapsuri, 'will slip into flattery.'

b In the night there is counsell.

⁶ Mr. W. A. Wright quotes the following explanation of this phrase from North's translation of Plutarch. Coriolanus, p. 249. Ed. 1577: "But here appeareth plainely, how king Numa did wisely ordaine all other ceremones concerning deuotion to the goddes, and specially this custome which has stablished, to bring the people to religion. For when the magistrates, bishoppes, priestes, or other religious ministers goe about any deuine serume, or matter of religion, an herauld euer goeth before them, crying out aloud. Hoc age: as to say, doe this, or mind this."

⁴² Most Iudgement is shewne. Judicii Libra maxime versatur, 'the bance of judgment is most used.'

1625.

æt. 65.

Mathematicall Description, what the Kinde and Character of the Person should

For the greatest Errours are committed, and the **Iudgement** shewne,42 in the choice of Indiuiduals.

It was truly faid, 48 Optimi Confiliarij mortui .ª Books will speake plaine, when Counfellors Blanch.44 Therefore it is good to be conversant in 45 them; Specially the Bookes of fuch, as Themselues haue Actors vpon the Stage.46

The Counfels, at this Day, in most Places, are but Familiar Meetings; 47 where Matters are rather talked on, then debated. And they run too swift to the Order or Act of Counfell. It were better, that in Causes of weight, the Matter were propounded one day, and not spoken to,48 till the next day; In Nocte Confilium. So was it done, in the Commission of Vnion, between England and Scotland; which was a Graue and Orderly Assembly. I commend set Daies for Petitions:49 For both it giues the Suitors more certainty for their Attendance; And it frees the Meetings for Matters of Estate,50 that they may Hoc agere.c

⁴⁵ Be conversant in. Multum revolvere, 'turn over much.'

⁴⁶ Actors vpon the Stage. Gubernacula Rerum tractarunt, 'have managed the helm of affairs.'

Meetings. Congressus, et colloquia, 'meetings and conversation.'

Not spoken to. Tractaretur, 'treated.'

Petitions. Petitiones privatas, 'private petitions.'

Meetings for Matters of Estate. Solenniores Conventus, 'more solemn meetings.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. 1612. æt. 52.

51 Indifferent. Qui æqui sint, et in neutram partem propendeant, 'who are indifferent and lean to neither side.'

continual and perpetual."

58 As. Exempli gratia; Quæ curent separatim, 'as for example, which should be administered separately.'

54 Suits. Gratias; Gravamina; 'favours; complaints.'

55 Particular. Subordinata, 'subordinate.'

56 Of Estate. Superius, 'higher.'

57 Let. Si Casus postulet, 'if the case require.'

58 Professions. Muneris aut professionis, 'duty or profession.'

59 After Mint-men. Mercatoribus, Artificibus, 'merchants, artisans'

60 In a Tribunitious Manner. More Tribunitio, 'after the manner of a tribune (i.e. in a tumultuous, turbulent manner).' tribune [i.e. in a tumultuous, turbulent manner]. 61 After enforme. Ut decet, 'as is proper.'

⁵² Standing. Non tantum temporaneas, aut e re nata; sed etiam continuatas, et perpetuas, 'not only temporary or for a certain thing, but also continual and perpetual.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

In choice of Committees, for ripening Businesse, for the Counfell, it is better to choose Indifferent⁵¹ persons, then to make an Indifferency, by putting in those, that are strong, on both sides. I commend also standing 52 Commissions; As 53 for Trade; for Treasure; for Warre; for Suits;54 for fome Prouinces: For where there be divers particular⁵⁵ Counfels, and but one Counfell of Estate, 56 (as it is in Spaine) they are in effect no more, then Standing Commissions; Saue that they have greater Authority. Let⁵⁷ fuch, as are to informe Counfels, out of their particular Professions,58 (as Lawyers, Sea-men, Mint-men,59 and the like) be first heard, before Committees; And then, as Occasion serves, before the Counfell. And let them not come in Multitudes, or in a Tribunitious Manner;60 For that is, to clamour Counfels, not to enforme 61 them. A long Table, and a square Table, or Seats about the Walls,62 seeme Things of Forme, but are Things of Substance; For at a long Table, a few at the upper end, in effect, fway all the Businesse; But in the other Forme, there is more vse of the Counsellours Opinions, that sit lower. King, when he presides in Counsell, let him beware how he Opens his owne Inclination too much, in that which he propoundeth: 63 For elfe Counfellours will but take the Winde of him; And in stead of giuing Free Counfell, fing him a Song of Placebo.



⁶² After Walls. Camera Consilii, 'of the council chamber.'
⁶⁸ In that which he propoundeth. Omitted in the Latin.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

27. Of Atheisme.



Had rather beall the leeve fables in the Legend,

and the Alcaron, then that this vniuerfall frame is without a minde And therefore God never wrought miracle to convince Athiestes because his ordinary workes con-Certainely vince them. litle Philosophie inclineth to Atheisme, but depth in Philosophie bringeth Men about to Religion; for when the minde of Man looketh vponn fecond causes scattered, fometymes it resteth in But them. when it beholdeth them confederate, and knitt togither, flyes to pro- it vidence, and deitye. Most of all that schoole which of all, that schoole which is most accused of Athe- is most acused of Athedoth demonifme. Religion, that **strate** is

æt. 52. IV. 1612.

14. Of Atheisme.



Had rather beall the leeue fables in the Legend,

and the Alcaron, then that this vniuerfall frame is without a minde. And therefore God neuer wrought myracle to conuince Atheists, because his ordinary works conuince them. Certainely, little Philosophie ... clineth mans minde to Atheisme, but depth in Philosophie bringeth men about Religion. to For when the minde of man looketh vpon fecond causes scattered, fometimes it resteth in them; hut when it beholdeth, them confedeknit together, rat, and flies to prouidence, and Deitie. Most

doth

strate Religion.

That is,

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

isme,

¹ Rather. Minus durum est, 'it is less hard.'
² All the Fables. Portentosissimis Fabulis, 'the most monstrous fables'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

16. Of Atheisme.



HAD rather¹ beleeue all the Fables² in the *Legend*, and the

Talmud, and the Alcoran, then that this vniuerfall Frame, is without a Minde. And therefore, God neuer wrought Miracle, to conuince Atheisme, because his Ordinary Works conuince it. It is true, that a little Philosophy³ inclineth Mans Minde to Atheisme; But depth in Philosophy bringeth Mens Mindes about to Religion: For while the Minde of Man, looketh vpon Second Causes Scattered, it may fometimes rest in them, and goe no further: But when it beholdeth, the Chaine of them, Confederate and Linked together, it must needs flie to Prouidence, and Deitie. Nay euen that Schoole, which is most accused of Atheisme,4 doth most demonstrate Religion; That is,

³ Philosophy. *Philosophiæ Naturalis*, 'natural philosophy.'

⁴ Atheisme. *Atheismi*, si quis vere rem introspiciai, 'atheism, if one truly consider the matter.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

the Schoole of Leucippus, and Democritus, and Epicurus; ffor it is a thou-fand tymes more credible that Fower mutable Elementes and one immutable 5th effence duely and eternally placed neede noe God; then that an Armie of infinite smale porcions, and Democritus, and Epicurus. For it is a thou-fand times more credible, that source mutable Elements, and one immutable fifth Essence, duly and eternally placed, neede no God; then that an Armie of infinite small portions

vnplac'd should have produc'd this order, and beautye without a The divine Marshall. Scripture faith The foole hath saied in his heart there is noe God. It is not faied The foole hath thought in his heart, so as hee rather faieth it by rote to himself, as that he would have, then that he can throughlie beleeve it, or be persuaded of it. For none a God, denie there is but those for whom it maketh that there were noe God.

the Schoole of Leucippus, and Democritus, and Epicurus. For it is a thoufand times more credible. that foure mutable Elements, and one immutable fifth Essence, duly God: then that an Army of infinite fmall portions or feeds vnplaced, should haue produced this order, and beauty, without a diuine Marshall. Scripture faith, The foole hath faid in his heart, there is no God, It is not faid, The foole hath thought in his heart. So as he rather faith it by rote to himselfe, as that he would haue: then that hee can throughly beleeue it, or bee perswaded of it. For none denie there is a God, but those for whom it maketh, that there were no God.

⁵ Vnplaced. Sine Ordine fortuito vagantium, 'wandering by chance without order.'

⁶ Marshall. Ædili, 'superintendent.'
7 By rote. Omitted in the Latin.

1625.

æt. 65.

the Schoole of Leucippus, and Democritus, and Epi-For it is a thoufand times more Credible. that foure Mutable Elements, and one Immutable Fift Effence, duly and Eternally placed, need no God; then that an Army, of Infinite small Portions, orSeedes vnplaced,5 should haue produced this Order, and Beauty, without a Divine Marshall.6 Scripture faith; The Foale hath faid in his Heart, there is no God: It is not faid; The Foole hath thought in his Heart: So as, he rather faith it by rote7 to himselfe, as that he would haue, then that he can throughly beleeue it, or be perswaded of it. For none deny⁸ there is a God, but those, for whom maketh9 that there were no

It appeareth in nothing more, that Atheisme is rather in the Lip, then in the Heart of Man, then by this; That Atheists will euer be talking 10 of that their Opinion, as if they fainted in it, within themselues, and would be glad to be strengthned, by the Consent of others: Nay more, you shall have Atheists strive to

a Ps. xiv. 1.

<sup>Deny. Deos non esse credit, 'believe there are no gods.'
It maketh. Expedit, 'it is advantageous.'
Talking. Prædicent et defendant, 'preaching and defending.'</sup>

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. 1612. æt. 52.

Epicurus is charged that his Creditt fake, when he affirmed there were as enioyed themselves without having respect to the governement of the world; wherein they fay he did temporize, thoughe fecrett, he thought there was noe God. But certainely, he is traduced. For his Wordes are noble. and divine deos Non vulgi profanum. negare fed vulgi opiniones Diis applicare profanum Plato could have faied noe more. administracion, he had not the power to denie that nature. The *Indians* of the West have names for theire particuler Godes, thoughe they have noe one

Epicurus is charged that he did but dissemble for he did but dissemble for his credits fake, when he affirmed there blessed natures, but such | blessed natures, but such as enioyed them felues, without having respect to the gouernment of the world. Wherein they fay, he did temporife, though fecret, hee thought, there was no God. But certainly hee is traduced: for his words are noble and divine. Non profanum. vulgi negare fed vulgi opiniones Dijs applicare profanum. could have faid no more. And althoughe he had the And although he had the confidence to denie the confidence to denie the administration; he had not the power to deny the nature. The *Indians* of the West, have names for their particuler gods, though they have no

¹¹ Suffer. Mortem et Cruciatus subierunt, 'have undergone death and

¹² And not recant. Potius quam Opinionem suam retractare sustimerent, 'rather than bear to retract their opinion.'

1625.

V.

æt. 65.

get Disciples, as it fareth with other Sects: And, which is most of all, you shall have of them, that will suffer 11 for Atheisme, and not recant; 12 Wheras, if they did truly thinke, that there were no such Thing as God, why should they trouble themselves?

Epicurus is charged, that he did but dissemble, for his credits fake, when he affirmed: There Bleffed Natures, but fuch as enioyed themselues, without having respect to the Gouernment of the World. Wherein, they fay, he did temporize; though fecret, he thought, there was no God. 18 But certainly, he is traduced; For his Words are Noble and Diuine: Non Deos vulgi negare profanum; sed vulgi Opiniones Dijs applicare profanum.ª Plato could have faid no more.14 And although, he had the unfidence, to deny the Administration, 15 he had not the Power to deny the Nature. The Indians of the West, have Names for their particular Gods, though they have no

It is not profane to deny the gods of the people: but it is profane to attribute to the gods, the beliefs of the people. Diog. Laert. x. 123.

¹⁸ God. Deos, 'gods.'
15 Administration. Divinam rerum Administrationem, 'administration of divine things.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. the names Iupiter, Appollo, Mars, Etc., but not the word, Deus; which shewes they have the notion, though not the full extent. So that against Athiestes the most barbarous Savages take part with the fubtilest Philosophers.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. name for God, as if the name for God: as if the Heathers should have had beathers should have had the names, Iupiter, Apollo, Mars, etc., but not the word *Deus*: which shewes yet they have the notion though not the full extent. So that against Atheists, the | most barbarous Sauages, take part with the fubtillest Philosophers.

[Expanded and transposed here in the Edition, from the Effay Of Superstition of the 1612 Edition; see p. 346.]

They that denie a God, They that deny a God,

¹⁶ Extent. Omitted in the Latin.
17 Received Religion. Religionem aliquam, 'any religion.'
18 Name. Nomen et Nota, 'name and mark.'
19 Maine. Omitted in the Latin.

²⁰ Scoffing. Ludendi et Jocandi, 'playing and joking.'

1625.

æt. 65.

name for God: As if the Heathens, should have had the Names Iupiter, Apollo, Mars, &c. But not the Word Deus: which shewes, that even those Barbarous People, have the Notion, though they have not the Latitude, and Extent of it. So that against Atheiss, the very Sauages

take part, with the very subtillest Philosophers. The Contemplative Atheist is rare; A Diagoras, a Bion, a Lucian perhaps, and some others; And yet they feeme to be more then they are; For that, all that Impugne a received Religion, 17 or Superstition, are by the aduerse Part, branded with the Name 18 of Atheists. But the great Atheists, indeed, are Hypocrites; which are euer Handling Holy Things, but without Feeling. So as they must needs be cauterized in the End. The Causes of Atheisme are; Divisions in Religion, if they be many; For any one maine¹⁹ Diuision, addeth Zeale to both Sides; But many Diuisions introduce Atheisme. Another is, Scandall of Priests; When it is come to that, which S. Bernard faith; Non est iam dicere, vt Populus, sic Sacerdos: quia nec sic populus, vt Sacerdos. A third is, Custome of Profane Scoffing20 in Holy Matters; which doth, by little and little, deface the Reuerence of Religion. And lastly, Learned Times, specially with Peace, and Prosperity: For Troubles and Aduersities doe more bow Mens Mindes to Religion. They that deny a God,21

a It cannot now be said, as are the people, so is the priest; because the people are not so bad as the priest. St. Bernard. Sermones ad Pastores. Opera. p. 1752. Ed. 1640.

²¹ God. Deos, 'Gods.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. destroy mans nobilitye; Ffor certainlie Man is of kin to the beaftes by his body, and if he be not of kin to God by his spiritt, he is a base and ignoble Creature. It destroyes likewise Magnanimitie, and the rayling of humaine nature. For take an Example of a dogg, and marke what a generofitye, and courage he will putt on, when he findes himself mainteyned by a Man, which to him is instead of a God, or melior natura; which courage is manifestlie such, as that Creature without Confidence of a better nature then his owne, could never attaine. So man when he resteth and affureth himselse vponn divine protection, favour, gathereth a force, and faith, which humaine nature in it felf could not obtayne. Therefore as Atheisme is in all refpects hatefull, So in this, that it depriveth humaine nature, of the meanes to exalte it self above hu- exalt it selfe, aboue hu-

IV. æt. 52. 1612. destroy mans nobility. For certainely man is of kinne to the beafts by his body; and if he bee not of kin to God by his spirit, he is a base and ignoble creature. It destroies likewise magnanimity, and the raising of humane nature. For, take an example of a and marke what a generofity and courage he will put on, when hee findes himselse maintained by a man, which to him is instead of a god, or Melior natura: Which courage is manifestly such, as that creature, without confidence of a better nature then his owne, could neuer attaine. man when he resteth and affureth himfelfe vpon Divine protection fauour; gathereth a force, and faith, which humane nature in it felfe could not obtaine. Therefore as Atheisme is in all respects hatefull: So in this, that it depriueth humane nature of the meanes to

.1625.

æt. 65.

destroy Mans Nobility: For certainly, Man is of Kinne to the Beasts, by his Body; And if, he be not of Kinne to God, by his Spirit, he is a Base and Ignoble Creature. It destroies likewise Magnanimity, and the Raising of Humane Nature: For take an Example of a Dog; And mark what a Generofity, and Courage he will put on, when he findes himselfe maintained, by a Man; who to him is in stead of a God, or Melior Natura: which courage is manifestly such, as that Creature, without that Confidence, of a better Nature, than his owne, could neuer attaine. Man, when he resteth and assureth himselfe, vpon Protection, and diuine Fauour, gathereth a Force and Faith; which Humane Nature, in it felfe, could not obtaine. Therefore, as Atheisme is in all respects hatefull, so in this, that it depriueth humane Nature, of the Meanes, to exalt it selfe, aboue Hu-

A Better Nature. Ovid. Metamorphoses. i. 22.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. maine frailtye. As it is in particular persons, so it is in Nacions. Never was there fuch a 'State for Magnanimitye, as Rome; of this State heare what Cicero faieth, Quam volumus licet Patres Conscripti, nos amemus; tamen nec Hifpanos, numero nec robore Gallos, nec calliditate Poenos, nec artibus Græcos, nec denique hoc ipso huius gentis et terræ, domestico, nativoque sensu Italos ipfos et Latinos; fed pietate, ac religione, atque hac vna Sapientia, quod Deorum immortalium numine omnia regi, gubernarique perspeximus, omnes gentes, Nationesque superauimus.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. mane frailty. As it is in particuler persons; so it is in Nations. Neuer was there fuch a state for magnanimity as Rome. Of this state, heare what Cicero faith; Quam volulicet, P. nos amemus, tamen Hispanos, numero nec robore Gallos, nec calliditate Pænos, nec artibus Græcos, nec denique hoc ipso huius gentis et terræ domestico, natiuoque sensu Italos ipsos et Latinos: sed pietate, ac religione, atque hac vnå sapientiå quod Deorum immortalium numine omnia regi, gubernarique perspeximus, omnes gentes, Nationesque superauimus.





²² Neuer was there. Nunquam Gens aliqua æquavit, 'never any State equalled.'

1625.

æt. 65.

mane Frailty. As it is in particular Persons, so it is in Nations: Neuer was there 21 fuch a State, for Magnanimity, as Rome: Of this State heare what Cicero faith; Quam volumus, licet, patres conscripti, nos amemus, tamen nec Hispanos, numero robore Gallos, nec calliditate Pænos, nec artibus Græcos, nec denique hoc ipso huius Gentis et Terræ domestico nativoque sensu Italos ipfos et Latinos; fed Pietate, ac Religione, atque hâc vnâ Sapientiâ, quod Deorum Immortalium Numine, omnia regi, gubernarique perspeximus, omnes Gentes Nationesque superauimus.a



Let us applaud ourselves as much as we please, O conscript fathers: yet it is not because we have surpassed the Spaniards in number, or the Gauls in strength, or the Carthaginians in cunning, or the Grecian in arts, or lastly the Italians and Latins themselves in that native inborn sense peculiar to this race and land; but that in piety and religion, and, in this especial wisdom, that we perceive that all things are governed by the divine power of the immortal gods, it is, that we have overcome all races and nations. Cicero. De Haruspicum Responsis. ix.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

28. Of Superstition.

Γ were better to have noe opinion of God at all, then such opinion as is vnworthie of him; For the one is Vnbeleife, the other Contumelie; and certainly fupersticion is the reproach of the Deytie.

Atheisme leaves a Man to fence, to Philosophie, to naturall piety, to Lawes, to reputacion, all which may be guides vnto

Vertue thoughe Religion were not, but Supersticion dismountes all Tyranny in the | **folute** minde of Men.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

15. Of Superstition.



T were better to haue no opinion of God at all; then fuch

is vnworthy opinion as of him; For the one is vnbeliefe, the other Contumely; and certainely fuperstition is the reproch of Deitie.

Atheisme leaves a Man to fense, to Philosophy, to naturall piety, to lawes, to reputation, all which may bee guides vnto

vertue, though Religion were not: but fuperstition dismounts all theis, and erecteth an ab- these, and erecteth an abfolute Tyranny in There- minde of men. There-

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of **1638**.

No. Nullam aut incertam, 'none, or an uncertain.'
 Vnworthy. Contumeliosam, et indignam, 'ignominious and unworthy.'
 Contumely. Impietatis et Opprobrii, 'impiety and contumely.'
 Eat. Comedere et devorare, 'eat and devour.'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

17. Of Superstition.

T were better to haue no¹ Opinion of God at all; then fuch

Opinion, as is vnworthy² of him: For the one is Vnbeleefe, the other is Contumely³: And certainly Superstition is the Reproach

of the Deity. Plutarch saith well to that purpose: Surely (faith he) I had rather, a great deale, Men Should fay, there was no fuch Man, at all, as Plutarch; then that they should fay, that there was one Plutarch, that would eat4 his Children, as foon as they were borne, as the Poets speake of Saturne. And, as the Contumely is greater towards God, so the Danger is greater towards Men.

Atheifme leaves a Man to Sense; to Philosophy; to Naturall Piety; to Lawes; to Reputation;7 All which may be Guides to an outward Morall vertue, though Religion were not; But Superstition dismounts all these, and erecteth an abfolute Monarchy, in the Mindes of Men. There-

Plutarch. De Superstitione, x.

Contumely. Contumelia Superstitionis, 'contumely of superstition.'
Leaues. Non prorsus convellit Dictamina Sensus, 'does not entirely take away the dictates of sense.

Reputation. Bonæ Famæ Desiderium; 'desire of good reputation.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV.

fore Atheisme did never perturbe States, for it makes Men warie of themfelves, as lookeing noe further. And wee see the tymes inclyned to Atheifme, as the tyme of Augustus Cæfar, and our tymes in fome Countryes were and are civill tymes. Superstition hath bene the Confusion, and desolacion of manie states, and bringes in a new primum mobile that ravysheth all the Spheres of governement. The Master of Supersticion is the People, and in all Supersticion, wife Men followe Fooles. and Arguments are Fitted to practize, in a reverfed order.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

fore Atheisme did neuer perturbe states; for it makes men wary of themfelues, as looking further: and we see the times inclined to Atheisme, as the time of Augustus Cæfar, and our owne times in fome Countries, were, and are, ciuill times. But Superstition, beene the confusion and dissolation of many states: and bringeth in a new Primum Mobile that rauisheth al the spheres of gouernment. The master of Superstition is the people: and in al fuperstition, wife men follow fooles; and arguments are fitted to practise, in a reversed order.

Neuer. Raro, 'rarely.'

As looking no further. Et securitati sua consulentes, 'and regardful of their safety.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

fore Atheisme did neuer⁸ perturbe States; For it makes Men wary of themselues, as looking no further:⁹ And we see the times enclined to Atheisme (as the Time of Augustus Cæsar)

were ciuil¹⁰ Times. But Superstition, hath beene the Confusion

of many States;¹¹
And bringeth in a new Primum Mobile, that rauitheth all the Spheares of Gouernment. The Master of Superstition is the People; And in all Superstition, Wise Men follow Fooles; And Arguments are sitted to Practise, in a reversed

Order. It was grauely said, by some of the Prelates, in the Councell of Trent, where the doctrine of the Schoolemen bare great Sway; That the Schoolemen were like Astronomers, which did faigne Eccentricks and Epicycles, and such Engines of Orbs, to saue the Phenomena; though they knew, there were no such Things: And, in like manner, that the Schoolmen, had framed a Number of subtile and intricate Axiomes, and Theorems, to saue the practise of the Church.

^a P. Sarpi. Historia del Concilio Tridentino. Bk. ii. p. 222. Ed. 1619. The passage is thus translated by N. Brent, "Some pleasant wits said, that if the Astrologers, not knowing the true causes of the celestiall motions, to salue the appearances, haue inuented Eccentriques, and Epicicles, it was no wonder if the Councel, desiring to salue the appearances of the supercelestiall motions, did fall into excentricitie of opinions." p. 227. Ed. 1620.

Ciuil. Tranquilla, 'quiet.'
 States. Regnis et Rebus-publicis, 'Kingdoms and States.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

There is noe fuch Atheist, as an Hypocrite, or Impostor, and it is not possible, but where the generalitye is Superstitious, manie of the Leaders are Hypocrites. The causes of Atheisme are; divisions in Religion; scandall Preistes; and learned tymes; specially if prosperous; thoughe for devisions, anie one mayne division addeth zeale to both fides, but manie divisions introduce Atheisme.

The causes of Supersticion are; the pleasing of Ceremonyes, the excesse of outward holynesse, the Reverence of Traditions, the stratagems of Prelates for their owne ambicion, and lucre.

and barbarous tymes; and specially with special scalarities and disasters. Supersticion without his vaile is a deformed thing.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

There is no such Atheist, as an Hipocrite, or Imand it is poster: not possible, but where the generality is superstitious. many of the leaders are Hipocrits. The causes of Atheisme are, divisions Religion; fcandall Priests; and learned times; fpecially if prosperous; though for divisions, any one maine division addeth zeale to both fides, but many divisions introduce Atheisme.

The causes of Superstition are, the pleasing of Ceremonies; the excesse of outward holinesse; the reuerence of traditions; the stratagems of Prelats for their owne ambition and lucre.

and barbarous times, fpecially with calamities, and disasters. Superstition without his vaile is a deformed thing,

¹² Taking an Aime . . . by Human. Exemplorum importuna et inepta petitio ab humanis, quæ in Divina transferantur, 'the inopportune and foolish taking of examples from human things to transfer them to divine things.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Transferred in an expanded form to the Essay, Of Atheism: see p. 337.]

The Causes of Superstition

Pleasing and sensual Rites and are:

Ceremonies: Excesse

of Outward and Pharifaicall Holinesse; Ouer-great Reuerence of Traditions, which cannot but load the The Stratagems of Prelates [Church;

for their owne Ambition

and Lucre: The Fauouring too much of good Intentions, which openeth the Gate to Conceits and Nouelties; The taking an Aime12 at divine Matters by Human, which cannot but breed mixture of Imaginations;18

And lastly, Barbarous Times,

Especially ioyned with

Calamities and Difasters.

Superstition, without

vaile, is a deformed Thing;

Fantasiarum male cohærentinam, 'disconnected 18 Imaginations. imaginations.

348 A HARMONY OF THE ESSAYS.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. ffor as it addes deformity to an Ape to be so like a Man, fo the Similitude of Supersticion to Religion makes it the more deformed; And as wholefome meate corrupteth to litle wormes; fo good formes, and orders, corrupt into a number of pettie observances.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. for as it addeth deformity to an Ape, to be fo like a man: So the similitude of superstition to Religion, makes it the more formed. And as wholefome meate corrupteth to little wormes; fo good formes and orders, corrupt into a number of pettie observances.





¹⁴ Good. Bonæ et sanæ, 'good and sound.'
15 Petty. Pusillas et superfluas, 'petty and superfluous.'

¹⁶ Doe best. Saniorem et puriorem viam inire, 'enter a sounder and purer way. 17 After would be had. In Religione reformanda, 'in reforming religion.'

V.

1625.

et. 65.

For, as it addeth deformity to an Ape, to be so like a a Man; So the Similitude of Superstition to Religion, makes it the more de-And as wholeformed. fome Meat corrupteth to little Wormes; So good 14 Formes and Orders, corrupt into a Number of petty¹⁵

There is a Superstition, in auoiding Observances. Superstition; when men thinke to doe best,16 if they goe furthest from the Superstition formerly received: Therefore, Care would be had,17 that, (as it fareth in ill Purgings¹⁸) the Good be not taken away, with the Bad; 19 which commonly is done, when the People is the Reformer.20



¹⁸ Ill Purgings. In Corpore purgando, 'in purging.'
19 Bad. Corruptis, 'corrupt.'
20 Reformer. Reformatio regitur a Populo, 'reformation is directed by the people.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

29. Of Praise.



Raise is the Reflexion of vertue, but it is as the glasse, or

which giveth is the reflexion; if it be from the Common People it is commonly false, and naught, and rather followeth vayne persons, then For the Comvertuous. mon People vnderstand not manie excellent vertues; The lowest vertues drawe praise from them, the middell vertues worke in them astonishement, or admiracion, but of the highest vertues they have noe sence, or perceiving att all. But shewes, and Species virtutibus similes serve best with them. Certainely Fame is like a River that beareth vp thinges light, and fwolne, and drownes thinges weightie, and folid: But if persons of quality and Iudgement concurre,

IV.

1612. æt. 52.

35. Of Praise.



Raise is the reflection of vertue: but it is as the glasse, or

bodie is, which giueth the reflection. from the common people. it is commonly false and naught; and rather followeth vaine persons, then vertuous: for the common people vnderstand not many excellent vertues: the lowest vertues draw praise from them, the middle vertues worke in them assonishment, or admiration; but of the highest vertues they have no fense or perceiuing at all. Butshewes, and Species virtutibus similes, serue best with them. Certainly, Fame is like a Riuer that beareth vp things light, and fwolne; and drownes things waighty and folid: But if persons of quality iudgement concur. and

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Or the Bodie. Trahit aliquid e Natura Corporis, 'it draws something from the nature of the body.'

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

53. Of Praise.

Raij fle tu

Raife is the Reflection of Vertue. But it is as the Glasse or

which giueth odie,1 ne Reflection. If it be om the Common People, is commonly False and laught: And rather folweth Vaine2Persons, then ertuous: For the Comnon People vnderstand ot many Excellent Verues: The Lowest Vertues lraw Praise from them; he middle Vertues worke n them Astonishment, or Admiration; But of the Highest Vertues, they have 10 Sense, or Perceiuing at ill. But Shewes, and Species virtutibus similes, serue best with them. Certainly, Fame s like a Riuer, that beareth vp Things Light and Swolne, And Drownes Things waighty and Solide: But if persons of Qualitie and Iudgement concurre,8

Qualities resembling virtues. Tacitus. Annales. xv. 48.

² Vaine. Vanos et tumidos, 'vain and pompous.'

^{*} Concurre. Cum vulgo concurrunt, 'concur with the common people.'

III.

1607-12. æt. 47.52. then it is as the Scripture saieth) Nomen bonum instar vnguenti fragrantis, filleth all round about, and will not easily away. the odours of Oyntementes, durable then are more those of Flowers. There be so manie false pointes of praise, that a Man may iuftly hold it suspect. proceede praifes meerly of flattery, and be ordinary an Flatterer, he will have certaine Common Attributes which may ferve Man: If he be a Cunning Flatterer he will followe the Archflatterer which is a Mans felf, and wherein a Man thinketh best of himfelf therein the Flatterer will vphold him most; But be an impudent Flatterer, looke wherein a Man is conscient to himfelf, that he is most defective, and is most out of countenance in himfelf. that will the flatterer in-

IV. 1612. æt. 52. then it is as the Scripture faith, Nomen bonum instar vnguenti fragrantis; filleth all round about, and will not easily away. odor of ointments durable then are more those of flowers. bee so many false pointes of praise, that a man may iustly hold it fuspect. Some proceeds praises meerely of flattery: and he bee ordinary an flatterer, he will have ceratributes. taine common which may ferue euery man: if he bee a cunning flatterer hee will follow the Archflatterer, which is a mans felfe, and wherein a man thinketh best of himfelfe, therein the flatterer will vphold him most: But if hee bee an impudent flatterer, looke wherein a man is confcient to himfelfe, that he is most defective, and is most out of countenance in himselfe, that wil the flatterer en-

⁴ Common. Communibus non Quæsitis aut appositis, common

^{. . .} not studied or appropriate.'

A Man thinketh best. Tibi places, aut teipsum excellere putas, 'plesse vourself, or think that you excel.'

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

39. Of Custome and Education.



V.

Ens Thoughts are much according to their Inclination:

Discourse and Their Speeches according to their and Infused Learning, Opinions; But their Deeds are after as they haue beene Accustomed.1 And therefore, as Macciauel well noteth (though in an euill fauoured Instance) There is no Trusting to the Force of Nature, nor to the Brauery of Words; Except it be Corroborate by Custome. His Instance is, that for the Atchieuing of a defperate Conspiracie,2 a Man should not rest vpon the Fiercenesse of any mans Nature, or his Resolute Vndertakings;3 But take fuch an one, as hath had his Hands formerly in Macciauel Bloud.4a But knew not of a Friar Clement, nor a Rauillac, nor

a Machiavelli. Discorsi sopra la prima Deca di Tito Livio. iii. 6.

⁸ Vndertakings. Promissis, nedum Juramentis, 'promises, nor even

⁴ Hath had his Hands formerly in Bloud. Sanguinolentis, et jamdudum cædibus assuetis, 'bloody and long accustomed to slaughter.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

a Iaureguy, nor a *

, yet his rule holdeth still, that Nature, nor the ingagement word, are not so forcible as Custome. Onely Supersticion is now so well advaunced that Men of the first bloud, are as firme as Butchers by occupacion, and votarie refolucion is made equipollent to Cuftome in matter of In other thinges bloud. the predominancye of Cuftome is every where visible, in foe much as a Man would wonder to heare Men professe, protest, ingage, give great wordes, and then doe iust, as they have done before, as they were dead Images, and Ingines moved onely by custome.

IV. 1612. æt. 53 a Iaureguy, nor a Baltaza Yet his Gerard. rule' holdeth still, that nature, ingagement nor the words are not fo forcible as custome. Onelie Superstition is now so well aduanced, that men of the first bloud, are as firme. as butchers by occupation: and votarie resolution is made equipollent to cuftome, even in matter of blood. In other things the predominancy of cuftome is euery where visible; in fo much as a man would wonder, to heare men professe, protest, ingage, giue great words, and then doe iust, as they haue done before: as they were dead Images and Engins moued only by the wheeles of custome.

^{*} Blank in manuscript.

⁵ After Gerard. Aut Guidone Faulxio, 'or Guy Fawkes.'
6 After Words. Et ferociam, 'and ferocity.'
7 As they have Done before. Istis omnibus posthabitis, pro more consucts agere, 'putting all these on one side, do according to their usual habit.'

1625.

æt. 65.

title8 him, to perforce, Spretà Conscientia.a Some Praises come of good Wishes, and Respects, which is a Forme due in Ciuilitie to Kings, and Great Persons, Laudando præcipere; When by telling Men, what they are, they represent9 to them, what they should be. Some Men are Praised Maliciously to their Hurt, therby to stirre Enuie and Iealousie towards them; Pefsimum genus Inimi-

corum laudantium; In so much as it was a Prouerb, amongst the Grecians; that, He that was praised to his Hurt, should have a Push rise vpon his Nose: As we say; That a Blister will rise vpon ones Tongue, that tell's a lye. Certainly

Moderate Praise, vsed with Opportunity, and not Vulgar is that which doth the Good. Salomon faith, He that praiseth his Frend aloud, Rising Early, it shall be to him, no better then a Curse. Too much Magnifying of Man or Matter, doth irri-

In disdain of conscience.

b To teach in praising.

The worst kind of enemies, eulogists. Tacitus. Agricoln. 41

Prov. xxvii. 14.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-50 Contradiccion, and tate procure Envye and skorne

IV. 1612. æt. 52. tate contradiction, procure enuie and fcome.





¹² Enuie. Omitted in the Latin.
18 After Profession. Aut studia quibus se addixit, or the studies w which he is given.

¹⁴ Sbirrerie. Hispanico Vocabulo, Sbirrarias, 'by the Spanish word, Sbirrerie.

¹⁶ Which is Vnder-Sheriffries. Omitted in the Latin.'
16 Though many times . . . Speculations. Ac si Artes illæ memorata, magis ejusmodi Homines, quam in Fastigio Cardinalatus positos, decerent:

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

Contradiction, procureEnuie¹² and Scorne.

To Praise a Mans selse, cannot be Decent, except it be in rare Cases: But to Praise a Mans Office or Profession,13 he may doe it with Good Grace, and with a Kinde of Magnanimitie. The Cardinals of Rome. which are Theologues, and Friars, and Schoole-men, haue a phrase of Notable Contempt and Scorne, towards Ciuill Businesse: For they call all Temporall Businesse, of Warres, Embassages, Iudicature, and other Emploiments, Sbirreriea; 14 which is, Vnder Sheriffries; 15 As if they were but matters for Vnder-Sheriffes and Catchpoles; Though many times, 16 those Vndersherifferies doe more good, then their High Speculations. St. Paul, when he boasts of himselfe, he doth oft enterlace; I speake like a Foole; But speaking of his Calling, he saith; 17 Magnificabo Apostolatum meum.



[&]quot; 'Sbirro' in Italian, means a bailiff, catchpole, constable."

b 2 Cor. xi. 23. ⁶ Rom. xi. 13.

Et tamen (si Res rite ponderetur,) Speculativa cum Civilibus non male miscentur, 'as if the above-mentioned arts are more fitted for men of that kind than for those placed on the pinnacle of the Cardinalate; and yet (if it is rightly considered) speculation is not ill mixed with civil matters.'

17 Saith. Nihil veretur dicere, 'is not afraid to say.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

30. Of Rature, in men.



Ature is often hidden, fometymes overcome, feldome extin-

guished. Fforce maketh nature more violent in the retourne. Doctrine. discourse maketh importune. leffe nature But Custome onely doth alter nature. Hee that feeketh victorie over his nature, lett him not fett himfelf to great nor to smale Taskes; For the First will make him deiected by often failes,

and the second will make him a fmale proceeder thoughe by often prevaylinges. And at the first lett him practise with helpes, as Swymmers doe with bladders, or Rushes, but after a tyme, lett him practize with disadvantages, as dancers doe with thick **Ffor** shoes. it great breeds perfection if the practize be harder then the vse. Where !

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

26. Of Aature in Men,



Ature is often hidden, fometimes ouercome; feldom extin-

Force maketh guished. violent in nature more doctrine the returne: maketh discourse and importune; leffe nature onely doth but custome alter and subdue nature. Hee that feeketh victorie ouer his nature, let him not fet himfelfe to great, nor to fmall taskes. the first will make him deiected by often failes;

fecond and the will make him a fmall proceeder, though by often preuailings. And at the first let him practise with Swimmers doe helps as with bladders, or rushes: but after a time let him practife with disaduantages, as dauncers do with thicke shooes. For great perfection. breeds if the Practife bee harder then the vſe. Wher

VX. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ TITLE. De Natura, et Indole Naturali in Hominibus, 'of nature and natural disposition in men.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

38. Of Aature in Men.1

den; Sometimes
Ouercome; Seldome Extinguished. Force maketh
Nature more violent in the Returne: Doctrine and Discourse maketh
Nature² lesse Importune:³
But Custome onely doth

Ature is Often Hid-

alter and subdue Nature. Hee that seeketh Victory ouer his Nature, let him

not fet Himfelfe too great, nor too fmall Tasks: For the first, will make him

deiected by often Faylings; And the Second

will make him a fmall Proceeder, though by often Preuailings. And at the

first, let him practise with Helps, as Swimmers 4 doe

with Bladders, or Rushes: But after a Time, let him

practife with disaduantages, as Dancers doe with

thick Shooes. For it breeds great Perfection,

if the Practife be harder then the vse. Where

Nature. Affectus Naturales, 'the natural dispositions.'

**After Importune. Sed non tollunt, 'but do not remove them' [i.e. the natural dispositions].

**Swimmers. Natatores recentes, 'new swimmers.'

IV.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. nature is mightie, and therefore the victorie hard, the degrees had neede be first to stay and arrest nature in tyme,

then to goe lesse in quantitie

and lastlie to discontynue altogither. But if a Man have the fortitude and refolucion to infranchife himself at once, that is the best

Optimus ille animi vindex lædentia pectus Vincula qui rupit dedoluitque semel.

Neither is it amisse to bend nato a conture trarye extreame,

where it

æt. 52. is nature mighty, and therefore the victorie hard: the degrees had need bee, first to stay and arrest nature in time: like to him that would fay ouer the foure and twenty letters when he was angry, then to go lesse in quantitie; as if one should in forbearing wine come from drinking healthes, to a draught a meale; and lastlie to discontinue altogether. But if a man haue the fortitude and refolution to infranchise himselfe at once that is the best:

1612.

Optimus ille animi vindex lædentia pectus Vincula qui rupit, dedoluitque semel.

Neither is the ancient rule amisse, to bend nature as a wand, to a contrary extreame, whereby to fet it right; vnderstanding it, where the contrary exis noe vice. Lett not | treme is no vice. Let not a man force a habitt vponn | a man force a habite vpon

⁵ Arrest. Omitted in the Latin.

Foure and Twenty. Alphabeti, 'of the Alphabet.'

7 After Letters. Priusquam quicquam faceret, 'before he did anything.'

8 Before to Goe lesse. Naturam moderari, et, 'to moderate nature and'

9 Drinking Healths. Majoribus Haustibus, 'greater draughts.'

10 A Draught at a Meale. Ad minores, 'to less draughts.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

Nature is Mighty, therefore the Victory hard, the Degrees had need be; First to Stay and Arrest⁵ Nature in Time; Like to Him, that would fay ouer he Foure and Twenty⁶ Letters,7 when he was Angry: Then 8 to Goe lesse in Quantity; As if oneshould, in forbearing Wine, come from Drinking Healths,9 to a Draught at a Meale:10 And lastly, to Discontinue¹¹ altogether. But if a Man haue the Fortitude, and Resolution, to enfranchise12 Himselfe at once, that is the best;

Optimus illi Animi Vindex, lædentia pectus
Wincula qui rupit, dedoluitque femel.

Neither is the Ancient Rule amisse, to bend Nature as a Wand, to a Contrary Extreme, whereby to set it right: Vnderstanding it, where the Contrary Extreme is no Vice. 18 Let not a man force a Habit vpon

[&]quot; He is the best vindicator of his mind who breaks the chains that afflict his breast and ceases to grieve once for all. Ovid. Remedia Amoris. i. 293, 4.

¹¹ Discontinue. Naturam penitus sub jugum mittere, et domare, 'to put nature altogether under the yoke, and tame it.'

¹² Enfranchise. Eximere et vindicare, 'free and deliver.'
13 Is no Vice. In Vitium non ducat, 'does not lead to vice.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

himself with a perpetuall contynuance, but with **fome** intermission: For both the pawfe reinforceth the new Onsett; and if a Man that is not perfitt be ever in practife, he shall aswell practize his his abilityes, rours, as and induce one habitt of both, and there is noe meanes to helpe this, but by feafonable intermiffions.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

himselfe with a perpetual continuance. but fome intermission. both the pause reinforceth the new onset; and if a man that is not perfect be euer in practise, heshall aswell practise his rors, as his abilities. and induce one habite of both: and there meanes to help this, but by fesonable intermisfions.

Mans nature is best perceiued in priuatenesse, For there is noe affectacion, in passion for that putteth a Man out of his preceptes, and in a new Case, or experiment, for there cuftome leaveth him. They are happie Men whose natures fort with their vo- natures fort with their vo-

mans nature is best perceiued in priuatnesse, for there is no affectation; in passion for that putteth a man out of his precepts: and in a new case, or experiment, for there cultome leueth him. are happy men,

A

¹⁴ Reinforceth. Redintegrat, et adauget, 'reinforceth and increaseth'
15 That is not perfect. Dum Tyronem agit, 'while he is a pupil.'
16 Practise. Imbibat, 'drinking.'

¹⁷ And induce one Habite of both. Omitted in the Latin.
18 Trust. Triumphum Accinas, 'sing a triumph.'

æt. 65.

nimfelfe, with a Perpetuall Continuance, but ome Intermission. oth the Pause, reinforceth 14 he new Onset; And if a Man, that is not perfect, 15 be euer in Practife, he shall is well practife16 his Eras his Abilities: And induce one Habite of ooth:17 And there is no Meanes to helpe this, but by Seafonable Intermif-

V.

ions. But let not a Man trust¹⁸ his Victorie ouer his Nature too farre; 19 For Nature will lay buried a great Time, and yet reuiue, vpon the Occasion or Temptation.20 Like as it was with Æ fopes Damofell, turned from a Catt to a Woman; who fate very demurely, at the Boards End, till a Mouse ranne before her. Therefore let a Man, either avoid the Occasion altogether; Or put Himselse often to it, that hee may be

little moued with it. Mans Nature is best perceiued in Priuatenesse, for there is no Affectation; In Passion, for that putteth a Man out of his Precepts;²¹ And in a new Case or Experiment,22 for there Cuftome leaueth him. Thev are happie Men, whofe Natures fort with their Vo-

Farre. Cito, 'soon.'
Temptation. Omitted in the Latin.
Precepts. Pracepta et Regulas, 'precepts and rules.'
Experiment. Insolito, 'unaccustomed.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. cacions, otherwife they may fay Multum incola fuit anima mea; when they converse in those thinges they doe not affect. In Studies whatfoever a man commaundeth vponn himfelf, lett him fett howers for it: But whatsoever is agreable to his nature. lett him take noe care for anie fett tymes, For his thoughtes will flye to it of themselves, so as the spaces of other businesse, or studies will suffice.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. cations, otherwife they may say, Multum incola fuit anima mea, when they conuerse in those things they doe not affect. studies whatsoeuer a man commandeth vpon himfelfe, let him fet houres for it. But whatfoeuer is agreeable to his nature. let him take no care for any fet times: For his thoughts will flye to it of themselues; so as the fpases of other businesse or studies will suffice.





foreign to your nature.'

26 Houres for it. Stata tempora ad ejusdem Exercitationes et Meditationes, 'set times for exercise and meditation upon it.'

Vocations. Vitæ quæ Genere, 'kind of life.'
 When they converse . . . Affect. Omitted in the Latin.
 Commandeth vpon himselfe. A Natura tua alienum repereris, 'find

æt. 65.

ations;23 Otherwise they nay say, Multum Incola 'uit Anima mea." when they converse in those Things, hey doe not Affect.²⁴ In Studies, whatsoeuer a Man commandeth vpon himelfe,25 let him fet Houres or it:26 But whatfoeuer is igreeable to his Nature. et him take no Care, for any fet Times: For his Thoughts, will flie to it of Themselues; So as the Spaces of other Businesse,

or Studies, will fuffice.²⁷ A Mans Nature runnes²⁸ either to Herbes, or Weeds; Therefore let him feafonably²⁹ Water the One, and Destroy the Other.



⁴ Ps. cxix. 6. (Vulgate). In the Douay version of 1609 this verse is translated My soul hath been long a sojourner: and in the Authorized Version, it stands. My soul hath long dwelt with him that hateth peace.

²⁷ So as the Spaces . . . suffice. Prout Negotia et Studia cætera permittent, 'as other business and studies will allow.'

²⁸ Runnes. Ex vi innata, producit, 'produces from its inborn force.'

²⁹ Seasonably. Sedulo et tempestive, 'carefully and seasonably.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Harleian MS. 5106.

27. Of Custome and Education.



Ens thoughtes are much according to their enaturall inclinacion.

theire fpeachesaccording to theire and infufed learninges opinions, But theire deedes are after as they have beene accustomed. And therefore as *Macciauell* well noteth (thoughe in an Evill favoured instance), there is noe trusting to the force of Nature nor to the bravery of wordes, except it be corroborate by Custome. His instance is, that for the atchieving of a defperate Conspiracye a Man should not rest vponn the fiercenes of any Mans resolute nature, or. his Vndertakeinges, but take fuch a one as hath had his handes formerly in bloud. Macciauell But knewe not of a Fryer Cle- knew not of a Frier ment, nor a Ravillac, nor ment, nor a Ravillac, E.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

31. Of Custome and Education.



Ens thoughts are much according to their inclination;

discourse their an i fpeeches according to that learning, infuse: and opinions; But their decies are after as they have beene And thereaccustomed. fore as Macciauel wel noteth, (though in an euil fasoured instance) there is r trusting to the force of Nature; nor to the brauer. of words; except it !.. corroborate by custome. His instance is, that the atchieuing of a del perate conspiracie a man should not rest upon the fiercenes of any many his refold: nature, or vndertakings, tast but fuch a one as hath h his hands formerly: But Maccia blood.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

Desperate Conspiracie. Facinore aliquo audaci et crudeii, sone

and cruel deed.

As they have beene Accustomed. Ferme antiquum obtinent, 'D' take the old course.

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

then it is, (as the Scripture faith) Nomen bonum instar vnguenti fragrantis.a filleth all round about, and will not eafily away. the Odours of Oyntments, are more Durable, then There those of Flowers. be fo many False Points of Praise, that a Man may iustly hold it a Suspect. Some Praises proceed meerely of Flattery; And if hee be an Ordinary Flatterer, he will have certaine Common⁴ Attributes. which may ferue euery Man; If he be a Cunning Flatterer, he will follow the Arch-flatterer, which is a Mans felfe; and wherein a Man thinketh best⁵ of himselfe, therein the Flatterer will vphold6 him most: But if he be an Impudent⁷ Flatterer, look wherin a Man is Conscious to himfelfe, that he is most Defective, and is most out of Countenance in himselfe, that will the Flatterer En-

^a Eccles. vii. 1.

Vphold. Iis inhærebit, 'will keep to those.'
Impudent. Impudens, et perfrictæ Frontis, 'impudent and of a shame-less forehead.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. III. him to perforce title him to title Spreta Conscientia. Some Spreta conscientia. of good praifes praifes come respectes, and which is a fourme due in Civility to Kings and great persons; laudando præcipere; when by telling præcipere; when by telling represent to them what they should bee. praised mali-Men are ciously to theire hurt, thereby to stirre envy and Iealousie towardes them; genus inimicorum laudantium.

Certainely moderate praise vsed with oportunitye, and not vulgar, but appropriate, is that which doth the good Salomon faieth He that praifeth his freind alowde, rising early, it shalbe to him noe better then a Curfe. To much magnifying of Man, or matter, doth irri-

1612. æt. 52. perforce: good come of wishes and respects, which is a forme due in Kings and ciuility to great persons, Laudando Men what they are, they men what they are, they represent to them what Some they should bee. Some are praised malimen ciously to their hurt, therby to stirre enuie towards ielousie them: inimi-Pessimum genus corum laudantium.

> Certainly moderate praise vsed with opportunity, and not vulgar, but appropriate, is that which doth the good. Salomon faith. Hee that praiseth his friend aloud. rifing early, it shall bee to him no better then a curfe. Too much magnifying of man or matter, doth irri-

⁸ Entitle. Imputabit, et affiget, 'impute and attribute.'
9 Represent. Humiliter moneas, 'humbly warn.'
10 Nose. Nari, 'nostril.'
11 Is that which doth the Good. Honori vel maxime esse, 'is a very great honour.

æt. 65.

a Iaureguy, nor a Baltazar Gerard: 5 yet his Rule holdeth still, that Nature, nor the Engagement of Words, 6 are not fo forcible, as Custome. Onely Superstition is now so well aduanced, that Men of the first Bloud, are as Firme, as Butchers by Occupation: And votary Resolution is made Equipollent to Cuftome, euen in matter of Bloud. In other Things. the Predominancy of Cuftome is euery where Visible; In so much, as a Man would wonder, to heare Men Professe, Protest, Engage, Giue Great Words, and then Doe iust as they haue Done before: As if they were Dead Images, and Engines moued 8 onely by the wheeles of Custome.

We see also the Raigne⁹ or Tyrannie of Custome, what it is. The Indians (I meane the Sect of their Wife Men)10 lay Themselues quietly vpon a Stacke of Wood, and so Sacrifice themselues by fire. Nay the Wiues striue to be burned 11 with the Corpses of 12 their Husbands. The Lads of Sparta, of Ancient Time, were wont to be Scourged vpon the Altar of Diana, without

12 The Corpses of. Omitted in the Latin.

⁸ Moued. Impulsæ et actæ, 'impelled and driven.'
9 Raigne. Omitted in the Latin.
10 Sect of their Wise Men. Gymnosophistis, et Veteribus et Modernis,
'Gymnosophists, both ancient and modern.'
11 Burned. Im Rogum immitti, 'put on the funeral pile.'
12 The Corpses of Omitted in the Latin

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

Therefore fince Custome, Therefore fince custome, is the principal Magis- is the principal Magistrate of Mans life, lett trate of mans life: let Men by all meanes en- men by all meanes endeavour to obteyne good deauour to obtaine good Customes. Certainly Customes. Certainly cusmost perfite tome is tome beginneth in when when it yong yeares. This wee young yeeres This wee call Education, which is call Education: which is nothing but an early Custome.

most perfect is beginneth in it nothing but an early custome.

For it is true that late For it is true that late termes cannot fo well learners cannot fo well ply, except take the take the it be in some mindes, that it be in some mindes, that have not suffered them- have not suffered themfelves to fix, but have felues to fixe, but have

plie; except

¹³ Queching. Vix ejulatu, aut gemitu ullo emisso, 'scarcely uttering a cry or groan.'
14 Of England. Omitted in the Latin.

Of England. Omitted in the Latin.

Penance. Ad Pænitentiam complendam, 'to perform penance.'

Will sit. Non recusabunt sedere, 'will not refuse to sit.'

Night. Nocte hyemali, 'winter's night.'

Hard. Omitted in the Latin.

Plane stupendas vires, 'truly astounding force.'

æt. 65.

fo much as Queching.¹⁸ I remember in the beginning of Queene Elizabeths time of England,14 an Irish Rebell Condemned, put vp a Petition to the Deputie, that he might be hanged in a With, and not in a Halter, because it had beene so vsed, with former Rebels. There be Monkes in Russia, for Penance,15 that will sit 16 a whole Night,17 in a Vessell of Water, till they be Ingaged with hard 18 Ice. Many Examples may be put, of the Force 19 of Custome, both vpon Minde, and Body.

Therefore, fince Custome is the Principall Magiftrate²⁰ of Mans life; Let Men by all Meanes endeuour, to obtaine good Customes. Certainly, Custome is most perfect,21 when it beginneth in Young Yeares: This we call Education; which is, in effect, but an $Early^{22}$

V.

Custome. So we see, in Languages²³ the Tongue is more Pliant to all Expressions and Sounds, the Ioints are more Supple²⁴ to all Feats of Activitie,²⁵ and Motions, in Youth 26 then afterwards.

For it is true, that late Learners, cannot fo well take the Plie; 27 Except it be in fome Mindes, that haue not fuffered themselues to fixe, but haue

Magistrate. Moderator et Magistratus, 'governor and magistrate.'
Perfect. Validissima, 'strongest.'
Early. A teneris annis imbibita, 'imbibed from tender years.'
Languages. Linguis ediscendis, 'learning languages.'
Supple. Agiles et flexiles, 'agile and flexible.'
Feats of Activitie. Posituras, 'postures.'
Youth. Pueritia, aut Adolescentia, 'boyhood or youth.'
Plie. Novam plicam, 'new ply.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

kept themselves open, and prepared receive to contynuall amendement; which is exceeding rare. But if the force of Custome fimple, and feparate be greate; the force of Cuftome copulate, and conioyn'd and in troupe is farre greater. For theire example teacheth. Companie Comforteth, æmulacion quickneth, Glorie rayseth; so as fuch in places the force of Cuftome is in his exaltacion. Certainly the great multiplicacion of vertues vponn humaine nature resteth vponn Societyes well ordayn'd, and disciplin-For ed. Common wealthes, and good governementes doe nourishe growne, but doe vertue mend the Seedes. But the miserie is, that the most effectuall meanes are nowe applyed to the endes lest to be desiered.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

kept themselues open and prepared to continuall amendment: which is exceeding rare. But if the force of custome fimple, and feparate be great; the force of cuftome copulate and conioind, and in troupe, is far greater. For thear example teacheth; companie comforteth; æmulation quickeneth; raiseth; so in fuch as places the force of cuftome is in his exaltation. Certainelie the great multiplication of vertues vpon humane nature, resteth vpon focieties well ordained, and disciplin-For Common wealthes, and good gounourish ernments, doe vertue grown, but mende the feeds. not But the miserie is, that the most effuctual meanes are now applied to the ends least to be desired.

→{ 36 } •-

28 Prepared. Omitted in the Latin.

²⁹ To receive. Ad omnia Pracepta, quo reciperent, 'to all instruction, so as to receive.

Raiseth. Animos extollit, 'raiseth the spirits.'
 Force. Vires et influxus, 'force and flow.'
 Multiplication. Multiplicatio et (ut Chymicorum Vocabulo utar) Prejectio, 'the multiplication and (to use a chemist's word) the projection.

kept themselues open and prepared,²⁸ receiue 29 to Amendment, continuall which is exceeding Rare. But if the Force of Custome Simple and Separate, be Great; the Force of Cuftome Copulate, and Conioyned, and Collegiate, is far Greater. For there Example teacheth; Company comforteth; Emulation quickeneth; Glory raiseth:30 So as in such Places the Force³¹ of Cuftome is in his Exaltation. Certainly, the great Multiplication 32 of Vertues 33 vpon Humane Nature, resteth upon Societies well Ordained, and Disciplin-For Commonwealths,35 and Good Gouernments,36 doe nourish Vertue Growne,37 but doe not much mend the feeds. But the Misery is,38 that the most Effectuall Meanes, are now applied, to the Ends, least to be desired.

⁸³ Of Vertues. Omitted in the Latin.

³⁴ Disciplined. Disciplina salubri informatis, 'fashioned by wholesome discipline.

⁸⁵ Commonwealths. Respublicæ recte administratæ, 'Commonwealths well administered.'

³⁶ Gouernments. Leges, 'laws.'
37 Crowne. In Herba, 'in the blade.'

³⁸ The Misery is. Infelicitatis Orbis hoc habet, 'the world has t ismisery.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. III.

Harleian MS. 5106.

32. Of fortune.



T cannott be denyed but outwardAccidentes conduce much

to a Mans fortune; favour; death oportune occasion fitting others; But cheiflie the vertue. mould of a Mans fortune is in himfelf.

And the most frequent of externall causes is, That the folie of one Man, is the fortune of another. Ffor noe Man prospers so suddainly as by others errours. Serpens nisi Serpentem comederit non fit Overt and apparant vertues bring fourth praise, but there be hidden and fecrett vertues that bring forth Fortune; Certen deliveryes of a Mans self, which have noe name; The Spanish word Desem1612. æt. 52.

28. Of fortune.



T cannot bee denied, but outward accidents conduce much

to a Mans fortune. Fauour. Oportune death occasion fitting others, But chiefely the vertue. mould of a Mans fortune is in himselfe.

And the most frequent of externall causes is, that the folly of one man is the fortune of another. For no man prospers so sodenly, as by others Serpens nisi serrors. comederit non fit pentem Ouert, and appar-Draco. ent vertues bring foorth praise, but there bee hidden fecret vertues bring forth fortune. taine deliueries of a mans felfe which haue no name. The Spanish word Derem-

VK. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Accidents. Accidentia et Casus, 'accidents and chances.'
2 Fortune. Ad Hominum Fortunas, vel promovendas, vel deprimendas.
plurimum possint, 'have much power in promoting or depressing the for tunes of men.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

40. Of Fortune,



cannot be denied, but Outward Accidents1 conduce much

Fortune:2 Fauour,3 Opportunitie, Death Others, Occasion fitting But chiefly, the Vertue. Mould of a Mans Fortune, is in his owne hands. Faber quisque Fortunæ fuæ; faith the Poet. And the most Frequent of Externall Causes is, that the Folly of one Man, is the Fortune⁵ of Another. For no Man prospers so suddenly, as by Others Errours. Serpens nisi Serpentem comederit non fit Draco. Ouert, and Apparent. vertues bring forth Praise: But there be Secret and Hidden Vertues, that bring Forth Fortune. Certaine Deliueries⁶ of a Mans Selfe, which have no Name. The Spanish Name, Defem-

Every one the architect of his own fortune.

A serpent, unless it has eaten a serpent, does not become a dragon.

Fauour. Gratia alicujus ex Magnatibus, 'favour of some great men.'
Poet. Comicus, 'comic poet.'
Is the Fortune. Fortunam promovere, 'promotes the fortune.'

⁶ Deliueries. Facultates nonnullæ se expediendi, 'certain means of delivering oneself.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

boltura sheweth them best; when there be noe stondes, nor restiuenesse in a Mans nature;

For so saieth Liuye well after he had described Cato Major in theis wordes In illo viro tantum corporis, et animi fuit, vt quocunque loco natus effet fortunam sibi facturus videretur, he falleth vponn that, that he had, versatile ingenium. Certainly if a Man looke sharply and accentively hee shall fee Fortune; for thoughe she be blinde, yet she is not invisible. The way of *Fortune* is like the Milken way in the Sky, or which is a meeting knott of number of a fmale Starres;

so are there a number of litle and fcarce difcerned vertues, or rather facultyes, and Customes, that make Menfortunate. • The *Italians* have found out one of

IV. 1612. æt. 52. boltura partlie expresseth them, when there be no stonds nor restiuenesse in a mans nature.

For so saith Livie well, after he had described Cato Major in these words. illo viro tantum corporis et animi fuit, vi quocunque loco natus effet fortuuam sibi facturus videretur. He falleth vpon that, that he had Versatile ingenium. Therefore if a man looke sharpely and accentiuely, hee shall fee fortune; for though shee be blinde, yet shee is not inuifible. The way of fortune is like the milken way in the skie, which is a meeting, or number of a. knot of fmall starres; not seene asunder, but giving light together. So are there a and number of little fcarse discerned or rather faculties customes, that make men fortunate. The Ftalians fome of them, fuch as

Restiuenesse. Impedimenta, 'hindrances.'
Sharply. Limis Oculis, 'askance.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

boltura, a partly expresseth them: When there be not Stonds, nor Restiuenesse⁷ in a Mans Nature. But that the wheeles of his Minde keepe way, with the wheeles of his Fortune. For fo Liuie (after he had described Cato Maior, in these words; In illo viro, tantum Robur Corporis et Animi fuit, vt quocunque loco natus effet, Fortunam sibi sacturus videretur;)b falleth vpon that, that he had, Verfatile Ingenium. Therfore, if a Man looke Sharply,8 and Attentiuely, he shall fee Fortune: For though shee be Blinde, yet shee is not Inuifible. The Way of Fortune, is like the Milken Way in the Skie; Which is a Meeting or Knot, of a Number of Small Stars; Not Seene afunder, but Giuing Light together. So are there, a Number of Little, and scarse discerned Vertues, or rather Faculties and Customes, that make Men Fortunate. The Italians

note some of them, such as

^a Desemboltura in Spanish means, airiness, impudence, confidence.
^b In that man there was such strength of body and mind, that in whatever place he might have been born, it would seem that he would have made Fortune his own. Livy. xxxix. 40.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. them; Poco di Matto; when they speake of one that cannott doe amisse.

And certainely there be not two more fortunate properties, then to have a litle of the foole, and not to much of the honeft. Therefore extreame Lovers of theire Countrye, or Maisters, were never fortunate, neither can they be: For when a Man placeth his thoughtes without himself, he goeth not his owne way. An hastye Fortune maketh an Enter-Remover priser. and (the French hath it better Entreprenant, or Remuant,) but the exercised fortune maketh the Able man; Fortune is to be honoured and respected and it be but for her daughters, Confidence and reputation, for those two feelicitye breedeth, the first in a Mans self, the later in a mans selfe; the latter.

IV. 1612. æt. 52. a man would little thinke, when they speake of one that cannot doe amisse, they will throw in into his other conditions, that he hath *Poco di matto*. And certainly, there beenot two more fortunate properties, then to haue a little (of the foole, not too much of the hon-Therefore extreme eft. louers of their Country. or Masters, were neuer fortunate, neither can they For when a man bee. placeth his thoughts without himselfe, hee goeth not his owne way. An hafty fortune maketh an enterprifer and remouer: (the French hath it better Enterprenant, or Remuant) but the exercised fortune maketh the able man. Fortune is to bee honoured respected, and be but for her daughters, Confidence and Reputation; thofe two felicity for breedeth: the first within

⁹ Cannot doe amisse. Cui prosperam Fortunam spondent, 'for whom they expect prosperous fortune.'

10 Masters. Principes, 'princes.'

11 Remouer. Nonnihil turbulentos, 'somewhat restless.'

12 The French. . . . Remuant. Omitted in the Latin.

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

1 Man would little thinke. When they speake of one, that cannot doe amisse,9 they will throw in, into his other Conditions, that he hath, Poco di Matto.a And certainly, there be not two more Fortunate Properties; Then to haue a Little of the Foole; And not Too Much of the Hon-Therefore, Extreme est. Louers of their Countrey, or Masters,10 were neuer Fortunate, neither can they For when a Man placeth his Thoughts without Himselfe, he goeth not his owne Way. An hastie Fortune maketh an Enterprifer, and Remouer.¹¹ (The French hath it better: Entreprenant, or Remuant)12 But the Exercised Fortune maketh the Able¹³ Man. Fortune is to be Honoured. and Respected,14 and bee but for her Daughters, Confidence, and Reputation. For those two Felicitie¹⁵ breedeth: The first within a Mans Selfe; the Latter,

a Poco di Matto in Italian means, a little out of his senses, a little mad.

¹³ Able. Prudentes et Cordatos, 'wise and judicious.'

¹⁴ Honoured and Respected. Honorem merctur, 'deserves honour.'

¹⁵ Felicitie. Fortuna prospera, 'favourable fortune.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. others.

All wife Men to declyne the envy of theire owne fo they may greatnes it is in a Man to be the Care of the higher powers.



IV. 1612. æt. 52. in others towards him. All wife men to decline the Enuie of their owne vertues vie to ascribe them | vertues, vie to ascribe them to providence, and Fortune, to prouidence, and fortune. the For fo they may better assume them, and better assume them. And besides, it is greatnesse in a man to bee the care of the higher powers.

> And it hath beene noted, that those that ascribe openly to much to their owne wisedom and policy, end infortunate. it written, that Timotheus the Athenian, after hee had in the account he gaue to the state of his gouernment, often interlaced speach. And in this this, fortune had no part: neuer prospered in any thing he vndertooke afterwards.



¹⁶ After Towards Him. Eæque vicissim pariunt Animos et Auctoritatem. 'and these in turn produce courage and influence.'

¹⁷ Better. Decentius et liberius, 'more fittingly and freely.'

18 Greatnesse. Majestatem quandam addit, 'adds a sort of greatness.'

19 Be the Care. Si videretur Curæ esse, 'if he seems to be the care.'

20 To the State. Omitted in the Latin.

21 Often.

²¹ Often. Ad ravim usque, 'to hoarseness.' 22 Slide, and Easinesse. Majore cum facilitate fluunt, 'flow with more easiness.

æt. 65.

of Others towards Him. 16 all Wise Men, to decline the Enuy of their owne ertues, vie to ascribe them of Prouidence and Fortune; For so they may the effects, it is Greatnesse as Man, to be the Care, 19

of the Higher Powers. So Cæfar said to the Pilot in the Tempest, Cæfarem portas, et Fortunam eius.^a So Sylla chose the Name of Felix, and not of Magnus.^b And it hath beene noted,

that those, that ascribe openly too much to their owne Wisdome, and Policie, end Infortunate. It is written, that Timotheus the Athenian, after he had, in the Account he gaue to the State, of his Godernment, often interdaced this Speech; And in this Fortune had no Part, neuer prospered in any Thing he vndertooke after-

wards. Certainly, there be, whose Fortunes are like Homers Verses, that have a Slide, and Easinesse, 22 more then the Verses of other Poets: As Plutarch saith of Timoleons Fortune, in respect of that of Agesilaus, or Epaminondas. And that this should be, no doubt it is much, in a Mans Selse.

O PORTER OF THE O

a Thou carriest Cæsar and his fortunes. Plutarch. Cæsar. xxxviii.

<sup>Plutarch. Sylla. xxxiv.
Plutarch. Sylla. vi. 5.</sup>

Plutarch, Timoleon, xxxv. v.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV.

Harleian M.S. 5106.

83. Of Beath.



En feare death as Children feare to goe in the darke; and as

in | naturall feare Children is encreased with | Children is encreased with Tales, so is the other. tales; so is the other. Certainely of death in contempla-cion of the cause of it, tion of the cause of it. and the yssue of it and the religious, but the feare of it for it felf is weake.

Yet in religious meditacions there is mixture of vanitye and of Superstition. You shall | reade in fome of the Ffryers Bookes of Mortificacion, that a Man should thinke with himself what the payne is, if he have but his fingers end pressed, or tortured, and thereby imagine what the paynes of death are, when the whole body is corrupted, and dissolved; when manie tymes death passeth with times, Death passeth with lesse payne then the tor- lesse paine, then the tor-

1612. æt. 52.

2. Of Beath.



En feare death. as Children seare to goe in the and as darke:

feare in that naturall the feare | Certainely the feare iffue of it, is religious: but the fear of it, for it selfe, is weake.

Yet in religious meditations there is mixture of vanitie, and of fuperstition. You shall reade in some of the Friers Bookes of Mortification, that a man should thinke with himselfe, what the paine is, if he have but his fingers end preffed. or tortured; and thereby imagine what the paines of Death are, when the whole body is corrupted and diffolued: when many

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Tales. Fabulosis quibusdam Terriculamentis, 'by fictitious terrors'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

2. Of Beath.



En feare *Death*, as Children feare to goe in the darke: And as

that Naturall Feare in Children, is increased with Tales, 1 fo is the other. Certainly, the Contemplation of Death, as the wages of finne, and Passage to another world, is Holy, and Religious; But the Feare of it, as a Tribute due vnto Nature, isweake.2 Yet in Religious Meditations, there is fometimes, Mixture of Vanitie, and of Superstition. You reade, in some of the Friars Books of Mortification, that a man should thinke with himselfe, what the Paine is, if he haue buthis Fingers end Pressed, or Tortured; And thereby imagine, what the Paines of Death are, when the whole Body, is corrupted and dissolued; when many times, Death passeth with lesse paine, then the Tor-

Weake. Infirma et inanis, 'weak and empty.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Ffor the ture of a lymme. most vitall partes are not the quickest of sence. And to speake

Philosopher, as or naturall Man it was well faied Pompa Mortis, magis terret, quam mors ipfa; Grones, and convulsions, discolored face, and frendes weeping, and Blackes, and obsequies, and the like shewe death terrible. It is worthie the observing that theare is noe passion in the minde of Man so weake, but

masters the feare of death; and therefore death is noe fuch enimye when a Man hath fo manie followers about him, that cann Wynne the Combate of it. Revenge triumphes over death, love esteemes it not, Honour aspireth to it, delivery from ignominie chuseth it, greif flyeth preoccufeare it. pateth it, Nay wee fee after Otho

had flaine himself,

IV. 1612. æt. 52. ture of a limme. For the

most vitall parts are not the quickest of sence. And

to speake Philosopher as naturall man, it was well faid, Pompa mortis magis terret, quam mors ipfa. Grones, and Conuulions. and a discoloured sace, and friends weeping, and Blackes and obsequies. and the like, shew death It is worthie the terrible. obseruing, that there is no passion in the minde of man fo weake, but

masters the feare of death; and therefore death is no fuch

enemy, when a man hath fo many followers about him, that can winne the combat of him. Revenge triumphes death, Loue esteemes it not, Honour aspireth to it, deliuery from Ignominy chuseth it, Griefe flieth preocu-Feare to it: pateth it; we nay after Otho

had flain himselse. pittie which is the tender- pitty (which is the tendr-

² Groanes. Gemitus et Singultus, 'groans and sighs.'

1625.

æt. 65.

ture of a Limme: For the most vitall parts, are not the quickest of Sense. And by him, that spake onely a Philosopher, and as Naturall Man, it was well faid; Pompa Mortis magis terret, quam Mors ipfa.a Groanes³ and Conuulfions, and a discoloured Face,4 and Friends weeping, and Blackes, and Obsequies, and the like, shew Death Terrible. It is worthy the obferuing, that there is no passion in the minde of man, fo weake, but it Mates, and Masters, the Feare of Death: And therefore Death, is no fuch terrible Enemie, when a man hath fo many Attendants, about him, that can winne the combat of him. Reuenge triumphs Death; Loue flights it; Honour aspireth to it;

Griefe flieth

to it; Feare pre-occupateth it; Nay we reade, after Otho the Emperour had flaine himselse, Pitty (which is the tender-

The pomps of death frighten more than Death itself.

⁴ Discoloured Face. Oris pallor, 'paleness of the face.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. rest of affections provoked manie to dye.

Seneca fpeaketh of nicenesse. Cogita quam diu eadem feceris, Mori velle non tantum fortis aut miser, sed etiam fastidiosus potest.

It is no lesse worthie to It is no lesse worthy to observe how little altera- observe how little alteracion in good spirittes the tion in good spirits the approaches of make, but they are the same the last. Augustus Cæfar dyed in a Complement, Tiberius in diffimulacion,

Vespasian in Galba a iest.

with a fentence,

IV. 1612. æt. 52 est of affections) prouoked many to die.

fpeaketh Seneca nicenesse: Cogita quàm diù eadem feceris; Mori velle non tantum fortis, miser, sed etiam fastidiosus potest.

death approaches of death make: but thev the same last. Augustus till the Cæsar died in a complement, Tiberius in diffimulation.

Vespasian in

a iest.

Galba

with a fentence, Septimus Seuerus in dispatch;

⁵ Good Spirits. Animo generoso et forti, 'a noble and brave mind.'
⁶ The same Men. Eosdem enim gerunt Homines illi Spiritus, 'for those men bear the same spirits.'

1625.

æt. 65.

est of Affections) prouoked

many to die, out of meere compassion to their Soueraigne, and as the truest fort of Followers.

Seneca addes Niceneffe and

Saciety; Cogita quam diù eadem feceris; Mori velle,

non tantùm Fortis, aut

Miser, sed etiàm Fastidiosus

potest.a A man would die, though he were neither valiant, nor miferable, onely vpon a wearinesse to doe the same thing, so oft ouer and ouer.

It is no lesse worthy to obserue, how little Alteration, in good Spirits,5 the Approaches of Death make; For they appeare, to be the fame Men,6 till the last Instant. Augustus Cafar died in a Comple-

ment; Liuia, Coniugij nostri memor, viue et vale. Tiberius in dissimulation; As Tacitus saith of him; Iam Tiberium Vires, et Corpus, non Dissimulatio, deserebant.c Vespasian in

a lest; Sitting vpon the Stoole,

Vt puto Deus fio.d Galba

with a Sentence; Feri, si ex re sit populi Romani;e Holding forth his Necke. Septimius Seuerus in difpatch; Adeste, si quid mihi restat agendums

^a Consider how often thou dost the same thing. Not only a strong man or an avaricious man, but also a fastidious man is able to wish for death. Seneca. Epistles. x. 1. (6).

Livia, mindful of our marriage life, live and farewell. Suetonius.

Augustus. c. 99.

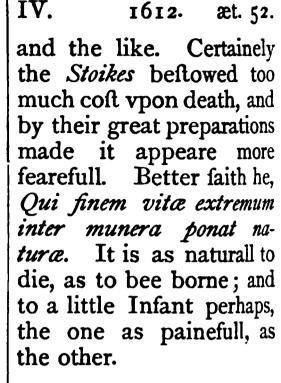
At length, strength and his body failed Tiberius, not his dissimulation. Tacitus, Annals. vi. 50.

d As I think [The play is on the double sense of puto: to cleanse, and to think], I am becoming a God. Suetonius. Vespasian. c. 23.
Strike, if it be for the benefit of the Roman People. Tacitus. History.

i. 41.

I Come here, if anything remains for me to do. Dion Cassius. exxvi. 17.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. and the like. Certainly the Stoikes bestowed too much Cost vponn death, and by their egreat preparacions made it appeare more made it appeare more ' fearefull. Better faieth he Qui finem vitæ extremum inter munera ponat, naturæ. It is as naturall to dye, as to be borne, and to a litle Infant perhaps, the one as painefull, as the other.







⁷ Cost vpon Death. In Solatia Mortis, 'on the consolations of death.'

1625.

æt. 65.

And the like. Certainly, the Stoikes bestowed too much cost vpon Death,7 and by their great preparations, made it appeare more fearefull. Better faith he. Qui Finem Vitæ extremum inter Munera ponat Naturæ.a It is as Naturall to die, as to be borne; And to a little Infant, perhaps, the one, is as painfull, as

the other. He that dies in an earnest Pursuit, is like one that is wounded in hot Bloud; who, for the time, scarce feeles the Hurt; And therefore, a Minde fixt, and bent vpon somewhat, that is good, doth auert the Dolors of Death: But aboue all, beleeve it, the sweetest Canticle is, Nunc dimittis; when a Man hath obtained worthy Ends, and Expectations. Death hath this also; That it openeth the Gate, to good -Fame, and extinguisheth Enuie.

-Extinctus amabitur idem**.**c



Or rather; Qui spatium vitæ extremum inter munera ponit Naturæ. Juvenal, Satires. x. 357.

'Who lays down the last end of life among the Offices of Nature;' or, as

Dryden has put it; A soul that can securely death defy,

And count it Nature's privilege to die.'

Bacon writes: "And it seemeth to me, that most of the doctrines of the Philosophers are more fearefull and cautionary then the Nature of things requireth. So have they encreased the feare of death, in offering to cure it. For, when they would have a mans whole life, to be but a discipline or preparation to dye: they must needes make men thinke, that it is a terrible Enemy, against whom there is no end of preparing. Better saith the Poet, Qui finem, &c." Adv. of Learning. Bk. ii. fol. 75. Ed. 1605.

Luke ii. 29.

b The same [i.e. the envied one] being dead will be loved.

Epistles. ii. 1. 15.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III.

Harleian MS. 5106.

34. Of Seditions and Aronbles.



Heapardes of people had neede knowe the Kalenders of Tempestes

in State, which are comgreatest monlye thinges growe to equalitie, as naturall Tempestes are greatest about the æquinoctia; And as there are certaine hollowe blastes,

and fecrett fwellinges of Seas before Tempestes, so are therein States.

cæcos in-

stare tumultus Sæpe monet, fraudesque, et operta tumescere bella. Certainly, Libells licentious discourses

are amongst the fignes of troubles, Virgile giveinge the pedegree of fame, faieth fister to shee was Gyantes.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

> Of Seditions and Tronbles.

[This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ After Winde. Et veluti e longinquo, 'and as if from afar off.' ² In States. Ingruentibus Procellis politicis, 'when political storms ar.

approaching.'

Licentious Discourses. Licentiosi et mordaces Sermones in Status Scandalum, 'licentious and calumnious discourses to the scandal of the State.'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

15. Of Seditions and Troubles.

Hepheards of People, had need know the Kalenders of Tempests in State; which are commonly greatest, when Things grow to Equality:

Things grow to Equality; As Naturall Tempests are greatest about the *Æquinoclia*. And as there are certaine hollow Blasts of

Winde,¹ and fecret Swellings of Seas, before a Tempest, so are there in States:²

Ille etiam cæcos instare Tumultus Sæpe monet, Fraudesque, et opertatumescere Bella.ª

Libels, and

licentious Discourses against the State, when they are frequent and open; And in like sort, false Newes, often running vp and downe, to the disaduantage of the State, and hastily embraced; are amongst the Signes of Troubles. Virgil giuing the Pedegre of Fame, saith

She was sister to the

Giants.

^a He [i.e. The Sun] also often warns of threatening hidden tumults; and treacheries, and of secret wars swelling to a head. Virgil. Georgics. i. 465.

<sup>Often running vp and downe. Omitted in the Latin.
After State. Undique jactati, 'cast about everywhere.'
After Embraced. A Populo, 'by the people.'</sup>

IIL 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

Illam terra parens ira irritata deorum Extremam vt perhibent Cæo Enceladoque fororem

Progenuit.

As if fames and Rumours were the Reliques of Seditions past, but they are no leffe the preludes of Seditions to come. But he notes it right, that feditions, tumultes, and feditious fames, differ noe more, but as Masculine, and feminine.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.

Also that kinde of obedience (which Tacitus describeth in an Army) is to be

⁷ If it come. Ingravescat Malum, 'the evil grows worse.'

⁸ Checks them. Evanescunt, 'they vanish.'
9 Going about. Conatus sedulus, 'diligent endeavours.' 10 Wonder. Omitted in the Latin.

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

Illam Terra Parens irâ irritata Deorum, Extremam (vt perhibent) Cæo Enceladoque fororem

As if Fames
were the Reliques of Seditions past; But they are
no lesse, indeed, the preludes of Seditions to come.
Howsoeuer, he noteth it
right, that Seditious Tumults, and Seditious Fames,
differ no more, but as
Brother and Sister, Mascu-

line and Feminine; Especially, if it come? to that, that the best Actions of a State, and the most plausible, and which ought to give greatest Contentment, are taken in ill Sense, and traduced: For that shewes the Enuy great, as Tacitus saith; Constata magna Inuidia, seu benè, seu malè, gesta premunt. Neither doth it sollow, that because these Fames, are a signe of Troubles, that the suppressing of them, with too much Severity, should be a Remedy of Troubles. For the Despising of them, many times, checks them best; and the Going about to stop them, doth but make a Wonder Long-lived.

Also that kind of Obedience, which *Tacitus* speaketh of, is to be

Her, Parent Earth, furious with the vengeance of the Gods, brought forth; the youngest sister of Cœus and Enceladus. Virgil. Æneid. iv. 179. "In Heathen Poesie, wee see the exposition of Fables doth fall out sometimes with great felicitie, as in the Fable that the Gyants beeing ouerthrowne in their warre against the Gods, the Earth their mother in reuenge thereof brought forth Fame.

Illam terra Parens &c.

Expounded that when Princes & Monarches haue suppressed actual and open Rebels, then the malignitie of people, (which is the mother of Rebellion,) doth bring forth Libels & slanders, and taxations of the states, which is of the same kind with Rebellion, but more Feminine." Adv. of Learning. ii. fol. 19. Ed. 1605.

b Great envy was excited, whether affairs went well or ill. Tacitus. History i, 7,

IV.

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

held suspected Erant in officio, sed tamen qui mallent mandata Imperantium interpretari, quam exequi When Mandates sall to be disputed and distinguished and new sences given to them, it is the first Essay of disobeying.

[This Essay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.]

1612.

æt. 52.

Also as Machauuell well notes When Princes that ought to bee common Fathersmake themselves as a partie, and leane to a side in the estate, it is as a boate that tiltes aside before it overthrowes.

Alfo when discordes, and quarrells, and factions are carryed openly and audaciously, it is a signe

¹¹ Directions. Omitted in the Latin.

¹² After Disputings. Circa Mandata, 'concerning mandates.'
18 Audaciously. Audacius et contumacius, 'too boldly and obsinately.'

1625.

æt. 65.

held suspected; Erant in officio, sed tamen qui mallent. mandata Imperantium interpretari, quàm exequi;a Disputing, Excusing, Cauilling vpon Mandates and Directions, 11 is a kinde of shaking off the yoake, and

Assay of disobedience: Especially, if in those disputings, 12 they, which are for the direction, speake fearefully, and tenderly; And those that are against it, audaciously.13

Alfo, as Macciauel noteth well; when Princes, that ought to be Common Parents, make themselues as a Party, and leane to a fide,14 it is

as a Boat that

is ouerthrowen,

by vneuen weight, on the one Side; As was well feen, in the time of Henry the third of France: For first, himselfe entred¹⁵ League for the Extirpation of the Protestants; and prefently after, the same League was turned vpon Himselfe. For when the Authority of Princes, is made but an Accessary to a Cause; And that there be other Bands, that tie faster, then the Band of Soueraignty, Kings begin to be put almost out of Possession.16

Alfo, when Difcords, and Quarrells, and Factions, are Carried openly, and audaciously; it is a Signe,

a They were in office, but yet would rather question the orders of the commanders, than perform them. Tacitus. History. ii. 39.
b Macchiavelli. Discorsi sopra la Prima Deca de Tito Livio: iii. 27.

<sup>Leane to a side. Omitted in the Latin.
Entred. Se recipi voluit, 'wished to be received into.'
Possession. Possessione Auctoritatis, 'possession of authority.'</sup>

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. the reverence of governement is loft.

IV. æt. 52.

And reverence is wherewith Princes are girt from God, who threatneth the diffolving thereof, as one of his great Iudgementes.

Soluam cingula Regum.

So when anie of the fower Pillars of governement are mainely shakened, or weakened, which are Religion, Iustice, Councell and Treasure, Men had neede to pray for faier But let vs leave weather. the part of predictions.

speake of the Materialls,

[This Effay does not ocur in the 1612 Edition.]

¹⁷ Gouernment. Erga Principem, 'toward the sovereign.'
18 Highest Motion. Motum primi Mobilis, 'the motion of the primum mobile.

¹⁹ Great Ones. Viri Primores et Nobiles, 'chiefs and noble men.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

the Reuerence of Gouern-

ment¹⁷ is lost. For the Motions of the greatest perfons, in a Gouernment, ought to be, as the Motions of the Planets, under Primum Mobile; (according to the old Opinion: which is, That Euery of them, is carried fwiftly, by the Highest Motion, 18 and foftly in their owne Motion. And therfore, when great Ones, 19 in their owne particular Motion, moue violently, and, as Tacitus expresseth it well, Liberius, quam vt Imperantium meminiffent; a It is a Signe, the Orbs are out of Frame. For Reuerence is that,

wherwith Princes are girt from God; Who threateneth the diffoluing thereof;

Soluam cingula Regum.b.

So when any of the foure Pillars of Gouernment, are mainly shaken, or weakned (which are Religion, Iustice, Counsell, and Treasure,) Men had need to pray for Faire Weather. But let vs passe from this Part of Predic-

tions,20 Concerning which,21 neuerthelesse, more light may be taken, from that which followeth;)

And let vs speake first of the Materials of Seditions;

^a More freely than was grateful to the rulers. Incorrectly quoted from Tacitus. Annals. iii. 4.

^b Is. xlv. 1.

Predictions. Prognostica Seditionum, 'predictions of sedition.'
Concerning which. Circa quæ nihilominus intervenient nonnulla, quæ iis tractandis majorem Lucem præbere possint, 'concerning which, nevertheless, several things will occur which will afford greater light in treating of them.' ing of them.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. and the causes, and the remedyes.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

The matter of feditions is of two kindes, Much povertye and much discontent

Certainely, fo manie overthrowne estates, manie votes for troubles: Lucan, noteth well the state of the tymes before the Civill Warre,

Hinc vfura vorax, Rapidumque in tempore fænus, Hinc concussa sides, multis vtile bellum.

This same Multis vtile bellum, is an affured, and infallible figne State disposed to troubles, and feditions.

[This Essay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.

For discontentes, they are the verie humours

Motiues. Caussis et Flabellis, 'causes and motives: (lit. fans.)'

After Prepared. Flammæ, 'for the flame.'

Come. Emicare possint, 'can shine.'

Ouerthrowne Estates. Hominum res attritæ, et decoctæ Forturæ. 'impaired estates of men, and bankrupt fortunes.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

Then of the *Motives* ²² of them; And thirdly of the *Remedies*.

Concerning the *Materialls* of *Seditions*. It is a Thing well to be considered: For the surest way to preuent *Seditions*, (if the Times doe beare it,) is to take away the *Matter* of them. For if there be Fuell prepared,²³ it is hard to tell, whence the Spark shall come,²⁴ that shall set it on Fire.

The Matter of Seditions is of two kindes; Much Pouerty, and Much Difcontentment. It is certaine, so many Overthrowne Estates, 25 so many Votes for Troubles. Lucan noteth well the State of Rome, before the Ciuill Warre.

Hinc V fura vorax, rapidumque in tempore Fænus, Hinc concuffa Fides, et multis vtile Bellum.

This same Multis vtile Bellum, is an assured and infallible 26 Signe, of a State, disposed to Seditions,

and Troubles. And if this Powerty, and Broken Estate, in the better Sort, be ioyned with a Want and Necessity, in the meane People, the danger is imminent and great. For the Rebellions of the Belly²⁷ are the worst. As for Discontentments,²⁸ they are

^a Hence devouring usury, and interest greedy of time, Hence credit shaken, and war profitable to many. Lucan. Pharsalia. i. 181, 2.

²⁶ Infallible. Omitted in the Latin.
²⁷ Of the Belly. Quæ a Ventre ortum habent, 'which rise from the belly.'
²⁸ Discontentments. Alienationes Animorum, et Tædium Rerum præsentium; 'the alienation of minds, and discontent with the present state.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. III. in the politique

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

apt to gather a preternaturall heate, and to inflame; And let not Princes measure the danger of them by this whether they are iust, or vniust, For that were to imagine people to reasonable:

nor yet by this, whether the greifes Wherevponn they arrise be in true proporcion great, or fmale; for they are the most dangerous kindes of discontentes, where the feare is greater, then the feelinge.

[This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.

²⁹ Humours. Humorum Maligniorum, 'malignant humours.'

³⁰ Them. Illa qua Animos Populi alienant, 'what alienates the minds of the people.'

Be secure. Minus pendat, 'consider of less account,'
Concerning Discontentments. Alienationem Animorum, et Invidiam grassantem, 'the alienation of minds and the increase of envy.

in the Politique Body, like to Humours²⁹ in the Naturall, which are apt to gather a preternaturall Heat, and to Enflame. And let no Prince measure the Danger of them,³⁰ by this; whether they be Iust, or Vniust? For that were to imagine People to be

V.

too reasonable; who doe often spurne at their owne

Good:

yet by this; whether the Griefes, wherupon they rise, be in fact, great or small: For they are the most dangerous

Discontent ments.

where the Feare is greater

then the Feeling. Dolendi Modus, Timendi non item. Besides, in great Oppressions, the same Things, that prouoke the Patience, doe withall mate the Courage: But in Feares it is not so. Neither let any Prince, or State, be secure³¹ concerning Discontentments,³² because they³³ haue been often, or haue been long and yet no Perill³⁴ hath ensued; For as it is true, that every Vapor, or Fume,³⁵ doth not turne into a Storme; So it is, neverthelesse, true, that Stormes, though they blow over divers times, yet may fall³⁶ at last; And as the

They. Illa fastidia Animorum, 'these dislikes.'

Perill. Detrimenti Respublica cepit, 'the State has received no damage.'

They. Illa fastidia Animorum, 'these dislikes.'

the State has received no damage.'

⁸⁶ Fall. Glomerantur et ruunt, 'collect and fall.'

1607-12. æt. 47-52. | IV. III. 1612. æt. 52.

The causes and motof Sedition, ives are Religion, Taxes. alteracions lawes and Customes, breakeing priuiledges, generall oppression, Advauncement of vnworthie perfons, Straungers, Dearthes. And whatfoever in offending people ioyneth them in a Common Caufe. for the remedyes there maie be some generall preservatives, Cure must aunsweare to the particuler disease.

This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.

⁸⁷ And Motiues. Omitted in the Latin.

⁸⁸ Taxes. Tributa et Census, 'tributes and taxes.'
⁸⁹ Priuiledges. Immunitatum et Privilegiorum, 'immunities and privileges.'

40 After Aduancement. Adhonores et Magistratus, 'to honours and offices.'

41 Dearths. Caritas Annonæ, 'dearth of provisions.'

Disbanded Incuriose dimissi, 'carelessly disbanded.'

1625.

æt. 65.

Spanish Prouerb noteth well; The cord breaketh at the last by the weakest pull.

The Causes and Motiues³⁷ of Seditions are; Innouation in Religion; Taxes; 38 Alteration of Lawes and Customes; Breaking of Priviledges; 39 Generall Oppression; Aduancement40 of vnworthy persons; Strangers;

Dearths; 41 Difbanded 42 Souldiers; Factions growne def-And whatfoeuer in offendperate;

ing People, ioyneth and knitteth 43 them, in a Com-

mon Cause.

For the Remedies; There may be fome generall44 Preservatives, whereof wee will speake; As for the iust Cure, it must answer to the Particular

Disease: And so be left to Counsell, rather then Rule. The first Remedy or preuention,45 is to remoue by all meanes46 possible, that materiall Cause of Sedition, wherof we spake; which is Want and Pouerty in the Estate. To which purpose, serueth the Opening, and well Ballancing of Trade;47 the Cherishing48 of Man

Knitteth. Conspirare facit, 'makes them conspire.'

Generall. Confuse, et in genere, possunt assignari, 'may be assigned confusedly and generally.

⁴⁵ After Preuention. Contra seditiones, 'against seditions.'
46 Meanes. Opera et diligentia, 'means and diligence.'
47 Trade. Commercii rationes, 'the conduct of trade.'
48 Cherishing. Introducere, et fovere, 'introducing and cherishing.'

404 A HARMONY OF THE ESSAYS.

1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV. III. 1612. æt. 52.

> [This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.

50 Idlenesse. Desidiam et Otium, 'idleness and ease.'

⁴⁹ Manufactures. Artificis et Manufacturas, 'artisans and manufactures.

work with the most profitable cultivation.'

Soyle. Solum et agros, 'the soil and the fields.'

Reckand Hiterary and American and the fields.'

⁵⁸ Reckoned. Utrum superflua sit, necne, 'whether it is too abundant

More. Pecunias, 'money,'
Stocke. Sorti Reipublica, 'to the stock of the State.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

ufactures;49 the Banishing of Idlenesse;50 the Repressing of waste and Excesse by Sumptuary Lawes; the Improvement and Husbanding⁵¹ of the Soyle;⁵² the Regulating of Prices of things vendible; the Moderating of Taxes and Tributes; And the like. Generally, it is to be foreseene, that the Population of a Kingdome, (especially if it be not mowen downe by warrs) doe not exceed, the Stock of the Kingdome, which should maintaine them. Neither is the Population, to be reckoned,58 onely by number: For a smaller Number, that spend more,⁵⁴ and earne lesse, doe weare out an Estate, sooner then a greater Number, that liue lower, and gather more. Therefore the Multiplying of Nobilitie, and other Degrees of Qualitie, in an ouer Proportion, to the Common People, doth speedily bring a State to Necessitie: And so doth likewise an ouergrowne Clergie; For they bring nothing to the Stocke;55 And in like manner, when more are bred Schollers, then Preferments⁵⁶ can take off.⁵⁷

It is likewise to be remembred, that for as much as the increase of any Estate,58 must be 59 vpon the Forrainer, (for whatfoeuer is some where gotten, is some where lost) There be but three Things, which one Nation felleth vnto another; The Commoditie⁶⁰ as Nature yeeldeth it; 61 The Manufacture; and the Vecture So that if thefe three wheeles goe, or Carriage. Wealth will flow as in a Spring tide. And it commeth many times to passe, that Materiam superabit Opus; a That the Worke, and Carriage, is more worth, then

^a The work will surpass the material. Ovid. Metamorphoses. ii. 5.

Preserments. Vocationis Civiles, 'civil duties.'
Take off. Victum suppeditare, 'supply living to.'
Estate. Publica Opulentia, 'public wealth.'
Be. Lucrifieri, 'be gained.'
Commoditie. Materiam Mercium, 'the material of merchandise.'
As Nature yeeldeth it. Omitted in the Latin.
Opus. De quo loquitur poeta, 'of which the poet speaks.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

IV.

1612. æt. 52.

[This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.]

To give moderate libertye for greifes

⁶⁸ Mines. Fodinas, non subterraneas illas, 'mines not underground.'
64 Good Policie... vsed. Nihil autem prius debet esse aut consultius
quam ut videat Magistratuum Prudentia, 'nothing, moreover, ought to be
sooner or more thought of than that the foresight of the magistrates should see.
65 In a State. Omitted in the Latin.
66 Spread. Per Terram dispergatur, 'spread on the earth.'

V. æt. 65. 1625.

the Materiall, and enricheth a State more; As is notably seene in the Low-Countrey-Men, who have the

best Mines,63 aboue ground, in the World.

Aboue all things, good Policie is to be vsed,64 that the Treasure and Moneyes, in a State,65 be not gathered into few Hands. For otherwife, a State may haue a great Stock, and yet starue. And Money is like Muck, not good except it be fpread.66 This is done, chiefly, by suppressing, or at the least, keeping a strait Hand, vpon the Deuouring Trades of Vfurie,

Ingrofsing, great Pasturages,67 and the like.

For Remouing Difcontentments, or at least, the danger of them;68 There is in euery State (as we know) two Portions of Subiects; The Nobleffe, and the Commonaltie. When one of these is Discontent, the danger is not great; For Common People, are of flow Motion, if they be not excited, by the Greater Sort; And the Greater Sort are of small strength, except the Multitude, be apt and ready, to moue of themfelues. Then is 69 the danger, when the Greater Sort doe but wait for the Troubling of the Waters, amongst the Meaner, that then they may declare themselues.70 The Poets faigne, that the rest of the Gods, would haue⁷¹ bound *Iupiter*; which he hearing of, by the Counfell of Pallas, fent for Briareus, with his hundred Hands, to come in to his Aid. An Embleme, no doubt, to shew, how safe⁷² it is for Monarchs, to make fure⁷³ of the good Will of Common People.

Togiue moderate Liberty, for Griefes, and Difcon-

⁶⁷ Great Pasturages. Latifundiorum in Pascua conversorum, 'changing farms into pasturages.

of them. Quæ ab iis proveniunt, 'which come from them.'

69 Is. Revera ingruit, 'truly approaches.'

70 Themselues. Animos exulceratos, 'their wounded minds.'

71 Would haue. Conjurasse, 'conspired.'

72 Safe. Tutum et salutare, 'safe and wholesome.'

73 Make sure. Conciliare et retinere, 'gain and keep.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. IV.

1612. æt. 52.

to evaporate, fo it be without bravery or importunitye, is fafe way, ffor hee that tourneth the humour the makes wound bleede inwardes, endaungereth maligne vlcers and impostumapernicious cions;

Also the part of Epimetheus become may Prometheus in this Case:

Hee when greifes and evills flewe abroade, kept hope in vet the bottome of the Vessell. The politike, and artificiall nourishing of fome degree of hopes,

is one of the best Antidotes against the poyson of discontentes; and it is a certaine figne of a Wise governement,

if it can hold by hope, where it This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.

⁷⁴ Discontentments. Animis gravate affectis et malevolis, indulgere, ut ebulliant eorum Dolores, et in fumos abeant, 'to indulge ill affected and malevolent minds, that their griefs may evaporate and go off in smoke.'

75 Safe Way. Utile, 'useful.'

76 Inwards. In viscera, 'into the bowels.'

1625.

æt. 65.

tentments74 to euaporate, (so it be without too great Insolency or Brauery) is a fafe Way. 75 For he that turneth the Humors backe. and maketh the Wound bleed inwards,76 endangereth maligne 77 Vlcers, and Impostumapernicious tions.

V.

The Part of Epimetheus, mought well become Prometheus, in the case of Discontentments;78 For there is not a better prouision against them. Epimetheus, when Griefes and Euils flew abroad, at last 79 shut the lid, and kept Hope in the Bottome of the Vessell. Certainly, the Politique and Artificiall Nourishing, and Entertaining of Hopes, and Carrying men from Hopes to Hopes; is one of the best Antidotes, against the Poyson of Discontent-And it is a cerments. taine Signe, of a wife Gouernment, and Proceeding, when it can hold Mens

hearts 80 by Hopes, when it

⁷⁷ Maligne. Mortifera, 'deadly.' 78 In the case of Discontentments. Ad molliendos exacerbatos et malevolos Animos, 'to soothe embittered and evil-disposed minds.'

79 At last. Festinus, 'in haste.'

80 Hearts. Omitted in the Latin.

MI. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. LIV. cannott by Satisfaccion.

1612. æt. 52.

Alfo the forefight and prevencion, that there be noe likely or fitt head difcontentes wherevnto may refort, and vnder whom they may ioyne, is a knowne, but an excellent pointe of I vnderstand a caution. fitt head to be one that hath greatnesse and reputacion, that hath Confidence with the discontented partie, and vponn whom they tourne theire eyes, and that is thought discontent in his ticular.

This Essay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.

⁸¹ Also, the foresight . . Preuention. Trita sane est, sed pracellens Periculorum, quæ Malevolentiæ minantur, Cautio, ut prævideatur, 'it b known but an excellent caution against the dangers threatened by discontent to take care.'

⁸² Likely or fit. Omitted in the Latin.

⁸⁸ Discontented. Insensus et exacerbatus, 'hostile and embittered.'
84 Vnder whom. Sub cujus præsidio, 'under whose protection.'
85 Ioyne. In Corpus aliquod coire, 'join into a body.'
86 Head. Caput . . . et Ducem idoneum, 'head and suitable leader'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

cannot by Satisfaction: And when it can handle things, in such manner, as no Euill shall appeare so peremptory, but that it hath some Out-let of *Hope*: Which is the lesse hard to doe, because both particular Persons, and Factions, are apt enough to flatter themselues, or at least to braue that, which they beleeve not.

Alfo, the Forefight,81 and Preuention, that there be no likely or fit82 Head, whereunto Discontented 83 Perfons may refort, and vnder whom⁸⁴ they may ioyne,85 is a knowne, but an excellent Point of Caution. I vnderstand a fit Head,86 to be one, that hath Greatnesse, and Reputation; That hath⁸⁷ Confidence88 with the Discontented Party; and vpon whom they turne their Eyes;89 And that is thought discontented in his own par-

ticular; which kinde of Persons, are either to be wonne, on and reconciled to the State, and that in a sast and true manner; Or to be fronted, with some other, of the same Party, that may oppose them, and

⁸⁷ Hath. Celebratur, 'is known for.'

⁸⁸ Confidence. Acceptus est et gratiosus, 'is acceptable and influential with.'

⁸⁹ Eyes. Ora et Oculos, 'faces and eyes.' 90 Wonne. Omitted in the Latin.

⁹¹ Fast and true. Non perfunctorie, sed solide; 'not slightly, but firmly.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52. 1612. æt. 52.

Also the deviding and breaking of anie Combinacion, that is adverse to the State

none of the worst is Remedies. For it is a defperate case if the true parte of the State be full of discord and faction, and the false. entyer and vnyted.

This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.

⁹² Diuide. In diversa trahat et secet, 'divide and cut.'
98 Reputation. Gratiam popularem, 'popular favour.'
94 Generally. Ubique hoc obtinet, 'wherever this obtains.'
95 Breaking. Omitted in the Latin.
96 Factions. Factiosas Potentias, 'factious powers.'

⁹⁷ Aduerse to the State. Quæ contra Gubernationem Imperii Frontem contrahunt, 'which from at the government of the State.'

⁹⁸ Setting them at distance. Omitted in the Latin. 99 Distrust. Dissidentiam seminare, 'sow discord.'
100 Worst. Haud contemnendum, 'not to be despised.'

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

fo divide 92the reputation.93 Generally,94 the Diuiding

and Breaking⁹⁵ of all Factions,⁹⁶ and

Combinations that are

aduerse to the State, 97 and setting them at distance, or 98 at least distrust amongst themselves,99

is not one of the worst100

Remedies. For it is a def-

perate Case, if those, that hold with the Proceeding of the

State, be full of Discord and Faction; 101 And those that are against 102 it, be entire and vnited. 103

I have noted, that fome witty and sharpe Speeches, which have fallen¹⁰⁴ from *Princes*, have given fire to Seditions. Cæfar did himselfe infinite Hurt, in that Speech; Sylla nesciuit Literas, non potuit dictare: a For it did, vtterly, cut off that Hope, which Men had entertained, that he would, at one time or other, give ouer his Dictatorship. Galba vndid himselfe by that Speech; Legi à se Militem, non emi: b For it put the Souldiers, out of Hope, of the Donatiue. Probus likewise, 105 by that Speech; Si vixero, non opus erit ampliùs Romano Imperio militibus. A Speech of great Despaire, for the Souldiers: And many the like. Surely, Princes had need, in tender Matters, and Ticklish Times, to beware what they fay; Especially in these

a Sylla knew not letters, he was not able to dictate. Suetonius. Julius Cæsar. 77.

[&]quot;Cæsar would say of Sylla, for that hee did resigne his Dictatorship: That hee was ignorant of letters, he could not dictate." Lord Bacon's Apophth. No. 135. Ed. 1625.

The soldiery was levied by him, not bought. Tacitus. History. i. 5.

If I live, there shall be no longer need for soldiers to the Roman Empire. Flavius Vopiscus. Probus. 20.

¹⁰¹ Faction. Omitted in the Latin.
102 Against. Infensi, et maligni, 'hostile and evil disposed.'
103 Entire and vnited. Arcte conjungantur, 'be strictly united.'
104 After Fallen. Improviso, 'at random.
105 Likewise. Item interiit, 'likewise perished.'

III. 1607-12. æt. 47-52.

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

Lastlie lett Princes against all eventes not be without fome great person of Militarye valew neare vnto them for the repreffing of seditions in theire begininges. For without that, there vieth to be more trepidacion Courtes in vponn the breaking out of troubles then were fitt, and the State runneth the daunger of that which Tacitus saieth Atque is habitus animorum fuit vt pessimum facinus auderent pauci, plures vellent, omnes paterentur. But lett fuch one, be an affured one, and

[This Effay does not occur in the 1612 Edition.]

not popular, and holding good Correspondence with the gowne Men; orels the remedy is worse then the disease.

106 Large. Longiores et productiores, 'longer and more protracted.'
107 Military Valour. Militia et Fortitudine spectatas, 'tried in war and valour.'

108 Court. Aulis Principum, 'the courts of princes.'



V. 1625.

æt. 65.

hort Speeches, which flie abroad like Darts, and are hought to be shot out of their secret Intentions. For is for large 106 Discourses, they are flat Things, and not so nuch noted.

Laftly, let Princes, against all Euents, not be without ome Great Person, one, or rather more, of Military Valour¹⁰⁷ neere vnto them, for the Reprefing of Seditions, in their beginnings. For without that, there vseth to be more trepidation in Court, 108 vpon the first Breaking out of Troubles, then were fit. And the *State* runneth the danger of that, which Tacitus faith; Atque is Habitus animorum fuit, vt pefsimum facinus auderent Pauci, Plures . vellent, Omnes paterentur.a But let such Military Persons, be Assured, and well reputed of, rather then Factious, and Popular; Holding also good Correspondence, with the other Great Men in the State; Or else the Remedie, is worse then the Disease.

^a And this was the disposition of their minds, that a few dared to attempt the greatest villany, that more desired it, and that all tolerated in it. Tacitus. History. i. 28.



AHARMONY

OF THE

THIRD GROUP

OF

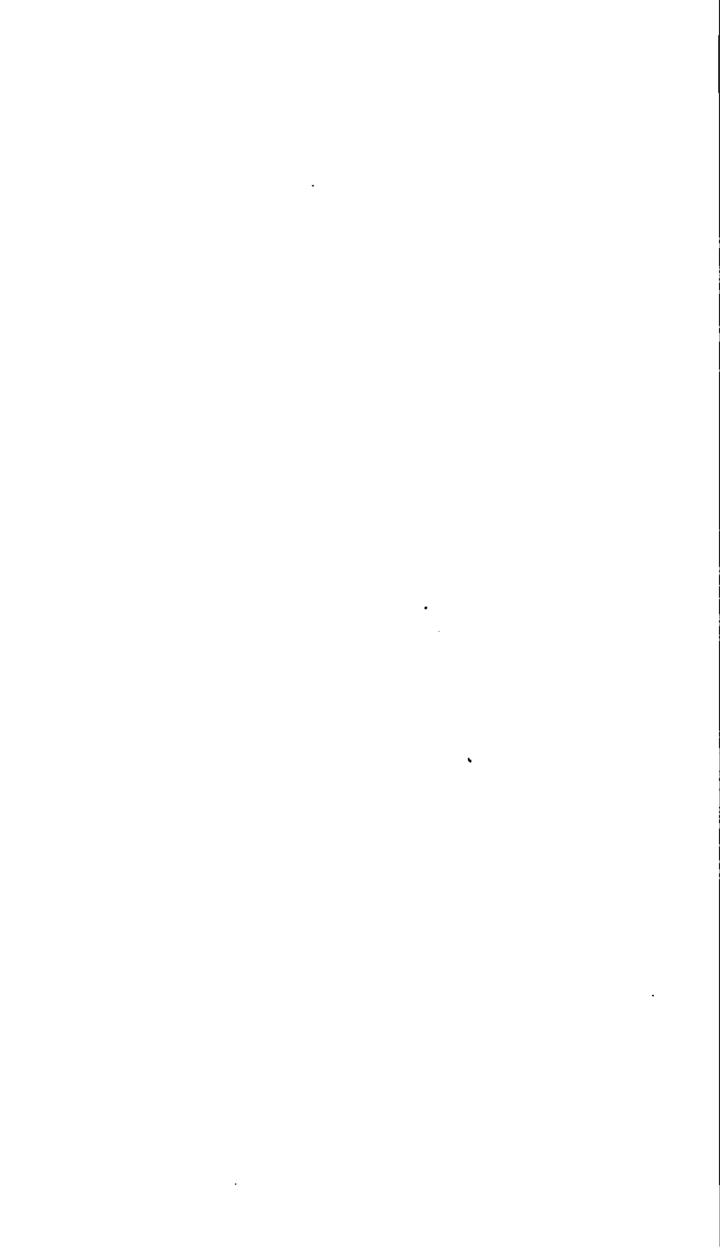
Six

ESSAYS.

- 35. OF RELIGION.
 - The title was afterwards changed to OF UNITY IN RELIGION.
- 36. Of CUNNING.
- 37. OF LOVE.

- 38. OF JUDICATURE.
- 39. OF VAIN-GLORY.
- 40. OF THE TRUE GREAT-NESS OF KINGDOMS.

First Published in 1612.





THE ESSAIES OF S' FRANCIS

BACON Knight, the

Kings Solliciter

Generall.



Imprinted at London by Iohn Beale, 1612

The Epistle Dedicatorie.



TO MY LOVING BROTHER,

S' IOHN CONSTABLE KNIGHT.

Y last Essaies I dedicated to my deare brother Master Anthony Bacon, who is with God. Looking amongst my papers this vacation, I found others of the same Nature: which if I my selfe shall not suffer to be lost, it

feemeth the World will not; by the often printing of the former. Missing my Brother, I found you next; in respect of bond of neare alliance, and of straight friendship and societie, and particularly of communication in studies. Wherein I must acknowledge my selfe beholding to you. For as my businesse found rest in my contemplations; so my contemplations ever found rest in your louing conference and judgement. So wishing you all good, I remaine

Your louing brother and friend,

FRA. BACON.

The Table.

		[ALREADY PRINTED AT]
I	Of Religion.	_
2	Of Death.	[<i>p</i> . 382.]
3	Of Goodnes and goodnes of nature.	$[\ldots, p. 198.]$
4	Of Cunning.	
Š	Of Marriage and single life.	[<i>p</i> . 264.]
5 6	Of Parents and Children.	$[\ldots p. 272.]$
7	Őf Nobilitie.	[p. 188.]
Š	Of Great place.	[,p.278.]
9	Of Empire.	[
10	Of Counfell.	[p.310.]
11	Of Dispatch.	$[\dots p. 242.]$
12	Of Loue.	
13	Of Friendshippe.	[<i>p</i> . 160.]
14	Of Atheisme.	$[\dots p - 330.]$
15	Of Superstition.	$[\ldots p. 342.]$
76	Of Wisdome for a Mans selse.	$[\dots, p. 182.]$
17	Of Regiment of Health.	[p.57:]
× 18	Of Expences.	$[\ldots,p,517]$
• 19	Of Discourse.	[<i>p</i> . 15.]
20	Of Seeming wife.	[,p.214.]
2 I	Of Riches.	[<i>p</i> . 230.]
22	Of Ambition.	[p. 222.]
23	Of Young men and age.	[<i>p.</i> 256.]
24	Of Beautie.	[<i>p</i> . 208.]
25	Of Deformitie.	$[. \dots p. 250.]$
26	Of nature in Men.	$[\dots p. 358.]$
27	Of Custome and Education.	$[\ldots p. 366.]$
_28	Of Fortune.	$[\cdots p. 374.]$
29	Of Studies.	$[\dots p, 7.]$
` 30	Of Ceremonies and respects.	$[\ldots p. 25.]$
-31	Of Sutors.	$[\ldots, p, 41.]$
-32	Of Followers.	$\begin{bmatrix} \dots & p & 33 \end{bmatrix}$
	Of Negociating	[<i>p</i> . 87.]
34	Of Faction.	$\begin{bmatrix} \dots & p & 77 \end{bmatrix}$
35	Of Praise.	[<i>p</i> . 350.]
36	Of Iudicature.	
37	Of vaine glory.	
38	Of greatnes of Kingdomes. Of the publikes.*	
39	Of Warre and peace.*	
40	Of ware arga peace.	

^{[*} These Essays—if ever any were separately written, under these titles—are not found in the Text, nor in any other of Bacon's known writings. The Titles are most probably but sub-titles of No. 38. Of greatnes of Kingdomes.]

^{. . .} Two Essays, which were at this time in existence, were not included in this Edition, viz.: Of Honour and Reputation, and Of Seditions and Troubles.]

1612.

æt. 52.

1. Of Religion.



He quarrels, and divisions for Religion, were euils vnknowne to the Heathen: and no maruell:

for it is the true God that is the lealous God; and the gods of the Heathen were good fellowes. But

yet the bonds of religious vnity, are so to be strengthened, as the bonds of humane society be not disfolued.

¹ TITLE. Religion. Ecclesia, of the church.

Happy thing. Par est, 'it is right.'

Within the . . . of Vnity. Debitis veræ Vnitatis et Charitatis visculis, 'by the proper bands of true unity and charity.' 4 Quarrels. Omitted in the Latin.

The Reason was, because, Nec mirum, cum, 'nor was it strange, since.'
Ceremonies. Cultu Deorum externo, 'outward worship of the gods.'
Beleefe. Confessione, et Fide, 'confession and belief.'
What the Meanes. Quibus denique Modis concilietur, 'and lastly, by

what means it is preserved.

Fruits. Fructus pracipui, 'chief fruits.' 10 Scandals. In Ecclesia Scandala, 'scandals in the church.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

8. Of Unity in Religion.1

Eligion being the chiefe Band of humane Society, it is a happy thing, when it felfe, is well contained, within the true Band of Vnity. The Quarrels, and Divisions about

Religion, were Euils vnknowne to the Heathen. The Reason was, because the Religion of the Heathen, consisted rather in Rites and Ceremonies; then in any constant Beleefe. For you may imagine, what kinde of Faith theirs was, when the chiefe Doctors, and Fathers of their Church, were the Poets. But the true God hath this Attribute, That he is a Iealous God; And therefore, his worship and Religion, will endure no Mixture, nor Partner.

We shall therefore speake, a few words, concerning the *Vnity* of the *Church*; What are the Fruits thereof; what the Bounds; And what the Meanes?

The Fruits⁹ of Vnity (next vnto the well Pleating of God, which is All in All) are two; The One, towards those, that are without the Church; The Other, towards those, that are within. For the Former; It is certaine, that Heresies, and Schismes, are of all others, the greatest Scandals; of yea more then Corruption of Manners. For as in the Naturall Body, a Wound or Solution of Continuity, is worse then a Corrupt Humor; So in the Spirituall. So that nothing, doth so much keepe Men out of the Church, as Breach of Vnity: And therefore,

a Exodus xx. 5.

¹¹ So in the Spirituall. Similis est Corporis Spiritualis ratio, 'the natur of the spiritual body is similar.'

¹² Keepe Men out of the Church. Homines, ab ingressu in Ecclesiam absterreat, 'frighten men from entering the church.'

¹⁸ After And. Jam receptos, 'when already received.'

1612.

æt. 52.

17 Morris daunce. Saltationes Florales et Gesticulationes, 'floral dances

and gestures.'

18 Divers Posture. Peculiarem quendam motum Corporis ridiculum,
'some peculiar ridiculous motion of the body.'

¹⁴ The Propriety of whose Vocation. Cujus Vocatio et Missio, propria et demandata, 'whose peculiar vocation and mission, entrusted to him.'

15 Without. Extra Ecclesiam, 'without the church.'

16 Discordant and Contrary Opinions. Lites, et Opinionum Dimicationes, 'disputes and contests of opinion.'

whenfoeuer it commeth to that passe, that one saith, Ecce in Deferto; Another faith, Ecce in penetralibus; a That is, when some Men seeke Christ, in the Conuenticles of Heretikes, and others, in an Outward Face of a Church, that voice had need continually to found in Mens Eares, Nolite exire, Goe not out.ª The Doctor of the Gentiles (the Propriety of whose Vocation,14 drew him to have a special care of those without) 15 saith; If an Heathen come in, and heare you speake with feuerall Tongues, Will he not fay that you are mad?b And certainly, it is little better, when Atheists, and prophane Perfons, do heare of fo many Discordant, and Contrary Opinions 16 in Religion; It doth auert them from the Church, and maketh them, To fit downe in the chaire of the Scorners.c It is but a light Thing, to be Vouched in fo Serious a Matter, but yet it expresseth well the Desormity. There is a Master of Scoffing; that in his Catalogue of Books, of a faigned Library, fets Downe this Title of a Booke; The morris daunce17 of Heretikes.d For indeed, every Sect of them, hath a Diuers Posture, 18 or Cringe 19 by themselues, which cannot but Moue Derision, in Worldlings, and Depraued Politickes, who are apt to contemne Holy Things.

As for the Fruit²⁰ towards those²¹ that are within; It is Peace; which containeth infinite Bleffings: It establisheth Faith; It kindleth Charity; The outward Peace of the Church, Distilleth into Peace of Conscience; And it turneth the Labours, of Writing, and Reading of Controuersies, into Treaties of Mortification, and

Deuotion.

V.

^a Matthew xxvi. 26. (Vulgate).

b 1 Cor. xiv. 23.

⁴ La Morisque des hereticques. Rabelais. Pantagruel. ii. 7.

Cringe. Gestus Deformitatem, 'deformity of carriage.'

Fruit. Fructus Vnitatis, 'fruit of unity.'

Towards those. Qui ad eos . . . redundat, 'which abounds towards those.

1612.

æt. 52.

Bounds. Terminos et Limites, 'bounds and limits.'

28 True. Vera proculdubio et justa, 'doubtless the true and right.'

24 Importeth. Ad omnia in Religione, 'to every thing connected with religion.'

25 Extremes. In iis statuendis videntur fieri, 'seem to be made in fixing them.'

ing them.'

26 After Luke-warme. In causis Religionis, 'in matters of religion.'

27 The two crosse Clauses. Clausulis illis, quæ primo intuitu, inter a opponi videntur, 'those clauses, which at first sight, seem to be opposed.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Concerning the Bounds²² of Vnity; The true²³ Placing of them, importeth²⁴ exceedingly. There appeare to be two extremes.²⁵ For to certaine Zelants all Speech of Pacification is odious. Is it peace, Iehu? What hast thou to doe with peace? turne thee behinde me.a Peace is not the Matter, but Following and Party. Contrariwise, certaine Laodiceans, and Luke-warme²⁶ Persons, thinke they may accommodate Points of Religion, by Middle Waies, and taking part of both; And witty Reconcilements; As if they would make an Arbitrement, betweene God and Man. Both these Extremes are to be auoyded; which will be done, if the League of Christians, penned by our Sauiour himselfe, were in the two crosse Clauses thereof, soundly and plainly expounded; He that is not with vs, is against vs: b. And againe; He that is not against vs, is with vs: That is, if the Points Fundamentall and of Substance in Religion, were truly discerned and distinguished, from Points not meerely of Faith, but of Opinion, Order, or good Intention.28 This is a Thing, may feeme to many, a Matter triuiall, and done already:29 But if it were done lesse partially,30 it would be embraced more generally.

Of this I may give onely this Aduice, according to my small Modell. Men ought to take heede, of rending Gods Church, by two kinds of Controuersies. The one is, when the Matter of the Point controuerted, is too fmall and light, not worth the Heat,⁸¹ and Strife about it, kindled onely by Contradiction. For, as it is noted³² by one of the Fathers; Christs

^a 2 Kings ix. 18. b Matt. xii. 30.

^o Mark ix. 40.

²⁸ Points . . . good Intention. Quæ non sunt ex Fide, sed ex Opinione probabili, et Intentione sancta, propter ordinem, et Ecclesiæ politiam, sancitæ, which are not of faith, but of probable opinion, aud ratified by a holy intention, for the sake of order and the government of the church.'

29 And done already. In quo quis actum agat: 'in which to act.'

30 Partially. Minore partium studio, 'with less party zeal.

81 Heat. Omitted in the Latin.

82 Noted. Acute, et eleganter, 'acutely and elegantly.'

1612.

æt. 52.

83 Of Iudgement: Doctus, 'learned.'

34 Differ. De aliqua Quæstione, inter se litigantes, 'disputing about sonic

question.'
35 Meane one thing. Idem re ipsa sentire, et in unum convenire, 'really think the same, and meet in one point.'

86 Distance. Exigua illa Judicii disparitate, 'in that little disparity of

judgment.'

87 Knowes. Scrutatur et novit, 'searches and knows.'

88 Nature. Natura et Character, 'nature and character.'

89 Put. Effingunt et cudunt, 'fashion and stamp.'

40 Fixed. Fixa et invariabilia, 'fixed and unvarying.'

41 There be also. Sunt etiam, ut Controversiarum, 'there be also, as o

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Coat, indeed, had no feame: But the Churches Vesture was of divers colours; a whereupon he faith, In veste varietas sit, Scissura non sit; They be two Things, Vnity, and Vniformity. The other is, when the Matter of the Point Controuerted is great; but it is driven to an ouer-great Subtilty, and Obscurity; So that it becommeth a Thing, rather Ingenious, then Substantiall. A man that is of Iudgement³³ and vnderstanding, shall sometimes heare Ignorant Men differ,34 and know well within himselfe, that those which so differ, meane one thing,35 and yet they themselues would neuer agree. And if it come so to passe, in that distance³⁶ of Iudgement, which is betweene Man and Man; Shall wee not thinke, that God aboue, that knowes the Heart,⁸⁷ doth not discerne, that fraile Men, in some of their Contradictions, intend the same thing; and accepteth of both? The Nature 38 of fuch Controuersies, is excellently expressed, by St. Paul, in the Warning and Precept, that he giueth, concerning the same, Deuita profanas vocum Nouitates, et Oppositiones falsi Nominis Scientiæ. Men create Oppositions, which are not; And put them⁸⁹ into new termes, so fixed,⁴⁰ as whereas the Meaning ought to gouerne the Terme, the Terme in effect gouerneth the Meaning. There be also⁴¹ two salse *Peaces*,⁴² or *Vnities*;⁴³ The one, when the Peace is grounded but vpon an implicite ignorance; For all Colours will agree in the Darke: The other, when it is peeced vp,44 vpon a direct Admifsion of Contraries,45 in Fundamentall Points. For Truth and Falshood, in such things, are like the Iron

lum Abbatem Apologia. pp. 983, 4. Ed. 1640.

⁶ τ Tim. vi. 20.

The allusion is to Ps. xlv. 14, where, instead of 'in raiment of needlework,' the Vulgate has circumamicta varietatibus, 'enveloped with varieties.'

In raiment let there be variety, but not rents. St. Bernard. Ad Guille-

Peaces, or. Omitted in the Latin.
Vnities. Vnitatis Species, 'kinds of unity.'
Peeced vp. Consuta et sarcita, 'sewn together and patched.'
Admission of Contraries. Ex positionibus ex diametro inter se contrariis, 'from positions directly contradictory.'

1612.

æt. 52.

tius the Poet, when hee beheld the act of Agamemnon, induring and affifting at the facrifice of his daughter, concludes with this verse;

Tantum relligio potuit fuadere malorum.

But what would hee haue done, if he had knowne the massacre of France, or the powder treason of England? Certainly he would have beene feuen times more Epicure and Atheist then he was. Nay, hee would rather haue chosen to be one of the Mad men of

⁴⁶ Be. Recipiuntur, 'are received.'
47 In the maintenance of Religion. In Religione Christiana propug-

nanda, et protegenda, 'in desending and protecting the christian religion.'

48 Ouert. Aperti, et insolentis; 'overt and insolent.'

49 Intermixture. Omitted in the Latin.

50 Subuersion of all Gouernment. Ad Majestatem Imperii minuendam.

et Auctoritatem Magistratuum labefactandam, 'to diminish the majesty of government, and subvert the authority of magistrates.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

and Clay, in the toes of Nabucadnezars Image; They

may Cleaue, but they will not Incorporate.

Concerning the Meanes of procuring Vnity; Men must beware, that in the Procuring, or Muniting, of Religious Vnity, they doe not Dissolue and Deface the Lawes of Charity, and of humane Society. There be 46 two Swords amongst Christians; the Spirituall, and Temporall; And both haue their due Office, and place, in the maintenance of Religion.47 But we may not take vp the Third fword, which is Mahomets Sword, or like vnto it; That is, to propagate Religion, by Warrs, or by Sanguinary Persecutions, to force Consciences; except it be in the cases of Ouert48 Scandall, Blasphemy, or Intermixture⁴⁹ of Practize, against the State; Much lesse to Nourish Seditions; To Authorize Conspiracies and Rebellions; To put the Sword into the Peoples Hands; And the like; Tending to the Subuersion of all Gouernment,⁵⁰ which is the Ordinance of God.⁵¹ For this is, but to dash the first Table,⁵² against the Second;^b And so to consider Men as Christians, as we forget that they are Men. Lucretius the Poet, when he beheld the Act of Agamemnon, that could endure⁵³ the Sacrificing of his owne Daughter, exclaimed:

Tantum Relligio potuit fuadere malorum.

What would he haue faid, if he had knowne of the Massacre in France, or the Powder Treason of England? He would haue beene, Seuen times more Epicure and Atheist, then he was. For as the temporall Sword, is to bee drawne,⁵⁴ with great circum-

^a Daniel. ii. 33. ^b Exodus. xxxii. 19.

^c To such a degree is Religion capable of occasioning evils. Lucretius. De rerum Natura, i. 102.

⁵¹ Ordinance of God. Cum tamen omnis Legitima potestas sit a Deo ordinata, 'since all lawful power is ordained by God.'

Table. Tabulis legis, 'tables of the law.'

Barbara Comitted in the Latin.

⁴ After Drawne. Non temere, sed, 'not rashly, but.'

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

Munster, then to have beene a partaker of those Coun-For it is better that Religion should deface mens vnderstanding, then their piety and charitie; retaining reason onely but as an Engine, and Charriot driver of cruelty, and malice.

It was a great blasphemie, when the Diuellsaid; I will ascend, and be like the highest: but it is a greater blasphemie, if they make God to fay; I will descend, and bee like the Prince of Darknesse: and it is no better, when they make the cause of Religion descend, to the execrable accions of murthering of Princes, butchery of people, and firing Neither is there fuch a of States. finne against the person of the holy Ghost, (if one should take it literally) as in stead of the likenes of a Doue, to bring him downe in the likenesse of a Vulture, or Rauen; nor fuch a fcandall to their Church, as out of the Barke of Saint Peter, to fet forth the flagge of a Barge of Pirats and Affaffins. Therefore fince these things are the common enemies of humane fociety; Princes by their power: Churches by their Decrees: and all learning, Christian, morall, of what soeuer sect, or opinion, by their Mercurie rod; ought to ioyne in the damning to Hell for euer, these facts, and their supports:

and in all Counfels concerning Religion, that Counsell of the Apostle, would be prefixed, Ira hominis non implet iustitiam Dei.

Personate. Omitted in the Latin.
 Descend. Descendat, et præcipitetur, 'descend and be cast down.'

⁵⁷ States. Omitted in the Latin.
58 Most necessary. Justum est, et id ipsum necessitas Temporum flagitat, 'it is just, and the necessity of the times demands it.'

59 Christian. Religiosæ, 'religious.'

60 Prefixed. Ante oculos Hominum, 'before the eyes of men.'

⁶¹ And it was. Ut vere dicamus, 'to speak the truth.'

⁶² Notable Observation. Optime, et prudentissime observatum, very well and wisely observed.'

⁶³ A wise Father. Ab uno ex Patribus, profundæ sapientiæ vire; 'by one of the Fathers, a man of deep wisdom.'

V. æt. 65. 1625.

spection, in Cases of Religion; So it is a thing monstrous, to put it into the hands of the Common People. that bee left vnto the Anabaptists, and other Furies.

It was great Blasphemy, when the Deuill said; I will ascend, and be like the Highest; a But it is greater Blasphemy, to personate55 God, and bring him in saying; I will descend, and be like the Prince of Darknesse; And what is it better, to make the cause of Religion, to descend,56 to the cruell and execrable Actions, of Murthering Princes, Butchery of People, and Subuersion of States,⁵⁷ and Gouernments? Surely, this is to the Holy Ghost, bring Downe

in stead of the Liknesse of a Doue, in the Shape of a Vulture, or Rauen:

And to fet, out of the

Barke of a Christian Church, a Flagge of a Barque of Pirats, and Assains. Therefore it is most necessary,58 that the Church by Doctrine and Decree; Princes by their Sword; And all Learnings, both Christian⁵⁹ and Morall,

as by their Mercury Rod; Doe Damne and fend to Hell, for euer, those Facts and Opinions, tending to the Support of the same; As hath beene already in good part done. Surely in Counfels, Concerning Religion, that Counsel of the Apostle would be prefixed;60 Ira hominis non implet Iusticiam Dei.b And it was 61 a notable Observation,62 of a wise Father,63 And no lesse ingenuously64 confessed;65 That those, which held and perswaded, pressure of Consciences, were commonly intereffed therin, themfelues, for their owne ends.66

a Isaiah xiv. 14.

⁶⁴ Ingenuously. Ingenue, et sincere, 'ingenuously and sincerely.'
65 Confessed. Prolatum, et evulgatum, 'uttered and published.'
66 Interessed therin... owne ends. Sub illo Dogmate, Cupiditates suas subtexere, illamque rem sua interesse, putare, 'cover their desires with this doctrine, and consider themselves interested therein.'

1612.

æt. 52.

4. Of Cunning.

EE take Cunning for a finister or crooked Wisdome: and certainely there is a great difference betweene a cunning man, and a wise man: not onely in point of honesty, but in point of ability. There be that can pack the cards and yet cannot play well. So there are some, that are good in canuasses and factions, that are otherwise weake men. Againe, it is one thing to vnderstand persons, and another thing to vnderstand matters: for many are perfect in mens humors, that are not greatly capable of the reall part of businesse; which is the constitution of one, that hath studied men more then bookes. Such men are fitter for practife, then for counfell, and they are good but in their owne Alley; turne them to new men, and they have lost their aime. So as the old rule to know a foole from a wife man; Mitte ambos nudos ad ignotos et videbis; doth scarce hold for them.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Evition of 1638.

¹ Factions. Factionibus regendis, 'ruling factions.'

B Humours. Aditibus, et Temporibus, 'accessibilities and time.'
Alley. Viis, quas sape contriverunt, 'the ways which they have often

trod

² Persons. Personarum Naturas et Mores, 'the natures and manners of persons.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

22. Of Cunning.

E take Cunning for a Sinister or Crooked Wisedome. And certainly, there is great difference, between a Cunning Man, and a Wife Man; Not onely in Point of Honesty.

but in point of Ability. There be that can packe the Cards, and yet cannot play well; So there are some, that are good in Canuasses, and Factions,1 that are otherwise Weake Men. Againe, it is one thing to vnderstand Persons,2 and another thing to vnderstand Matters; For many are perfect in Mens Humours,3 that are not greatly Capable of the Reall Part of Businesse; Which is the Constitution of one, that hath studied Men, more then Bookes. Such Men are fitter for Practife, then for Counfell; And they are good but in their own Alley:4 Turne them to New Men, . and they have lost their Ayme; 5 So as the old Rule, to know a Foole from a Wife Man; Mitte ambos nudos6 ad ignotos, et videbis; a doth fearce hold for them. And because these Cunning Men, are like Haberdashers of Small Wares, it is not amisse to set forth their Shop.

It is a point of Cunning; to wait vpon him, with whom you speake, with your eye; As the Iesuites giue it in precept: For there be many Wife Men, that haue Secret Hearts, and Transparant Countenances. Yet this would be done, with a demure Abasing of your Eye fometimes, as the Iesuites also doe vse.

Another is, that when you have any thing to obtaine

^a A saying of Aristippus. Place both naked before unknown persons, and you will see. Diog. Laertes. ii. 73.

"One of the Philosophers was askt; What a wise Man differed from a Foole? He answered; Send them both naked, to those that know them not, and you will perceive." Lord Bacon's Apophth. No. 255. Ed. 1625.

⁵ Ayme. Artibus, 'skill.'

⁶ Nudos. Omitted in the Latin.

1612.

æt. 52.

⁷ Dispatch. Aliquid propere, et facile obtinere et expedire cupias, 'you desire to obtain and despatch any thing speedily and easily.'

8 Obiections. Objectiones et Scrupulos, 'objections and scruples.'

9 Estate. Rebus Status gravioribus, 'about weightier matters of state.'

10 One was about to say. Sermonis, 'talk.'

11 Tooke himselfe vp. Deprehenderet, et contineret, 'took himself up and restrained himself.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

of present dispatch,7 you entertaine, and amuse the party, with whom you deale, with some other Discourse; That he be not too much awake, to make Obiections.8 I knew a Counfellor and Secretary, that neuer came to Queene Elizabeth of England, with Bills to figne, but he would alwaies first put her into some discourse of Estate,9 that she mought the lesse mind the Bills.

The like Surprize, may be made, by Mouing things, when the Party is in haste, and cannot stay, to consi-

der aduisedly, of that is moued.

If a man would crosse a Businesse, that he doubts fome other would handsomely and effectually moue, let him pretend to wish it well, and moue it himselfe, in fuch fort, as may foile it.

The breaking off, in the midst of that, one was about to fay, 10 as if he tooke himselfe vp, 11 breeds a greater Appetite in him, with whom you conferre, to know more.

And because it workes better, when any thing feemeth¹² to be gotten from you by Question, then if you offer it of your selse, you may lay a Bait for a Question, by shewing another Visage and Countenance. then you are wont; To the end, to give Occasion, for the party to aske, what the Matter is of the Change?18 As Nehemias did; And I had not before that time been fad before the King.a

In Things, that are tender and vnpleasing, it is good to breake the Ice,14 by some whose Words are of lesse weight, and to referue¹⁵ the more weighty Voice, to come in, as by chance, fo that he may be asked the

^a Nehemiah. ii. 1.

¹² Seemeth. Omitted in the Latin.

Change. Oris mutatio, 'change of [your] face.'

Breake the Ice. Initia, de iis Sermonem inferendi, alicui alteri deputare, 'to entrust the beginning of the talk about them to some other.'

Reserve. In Subsidiis reservare, 'reserve as a support.'

1612.

æt. 52.

16 Others. Qui ab altero injectus est, 'which was thrown out by the other.

17 Seen in, himselfe. Quas a se amoliri quis cupiat, 'which a person wishes to be removed from him.

Good Quarter betweene. Invicem amice, 'friendly together.'
Lt. Illud Genus Honoris, 'that kind of honour.'

¹⁸ A point of Cunning. Non inutile, 'not useless.'
19 Point. Species satis vafra, 'subtle enough kind.'
20 Take Aduantage. Alterum irretiat et subruat, 'ensnare and undermine the other.'

²⁸ Caught vp. Bona fide arripuit, 'caught up in good faith.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Question vpon the others¹⁶ Speech. As Narcissus did, in relating to Claudius, the Marriage of Messalina and Silius.^a

In things, that a Man would not be seen in, himselse; ¹⁷ It is a Point of Cunning, ¹⁸ to borrow the Name of the World; As to say; The World sayes, Or, There is a speech abroad.

I knew one, that when he wrote a Letter, he would put that which was most Materiall, in the *Post-script*, as if it had been a By-matter.

I knew another, that when he came to have Speech, he would passe ouer that, that he intended most, and goe forth, and come backe againe, and speake of it, as of a Thing, that he had almost forgot.

Some procure themselues, to be surprized, at such times, as it is like, the party that they work vpon, will suddenly come vpon them: And to be sound with a Letter in their hand, or doing somewhat which they are not accustomed; To the end, they may be apposed of those things, which of themselues they are desirous to vtter.

It is a Point¹⁹ of Cunning, to let fall those Words, in a Mans owne Name, which he would have another Man learne, and vse, and thereupon take Advantage.²⁰ I knew two, that were Competitors, for the Secretaries Place, in Queene Elizabeths time, and yet kept good Quarter betweene²¹ themselves; And would conferre, one with another, vpon the Businesse; And the one of them said, That to be a Secretary, in the Declination of a Monarchy, was a Ticklish Thing, and that he did not affect it:²² The other, straight caught vp²³ those

By first employing the Emperor's two chief mistresses, "Calpurnia, therefore, for that was the name of the courtesan, upon the first occasion of privacy, falling at the emperor's feet, exclaimed 'that Messalina had married Silius;' and at the same time asked Cleopatra [the other mistress], who purposely attended to attest it, 'whether she had not found it to be true?' Claudius, upon a confirmation from Cleopatra, ordered Narcissus to be called," &c. Tacitus. Annals. xi. 30.

1612.

æt. 52.

24 Those Words. Verba illa, callide prolata, 'those words, crastily

25 After the Queene. Tanquam scilicet ab altero prolata, 'as if they had been vttered by the other.'

26 After Monarchy. Cum ipsa se vigentem reputaret, 'since she considered herself flourishing.'

27 Cunning Actualis C

²⁷ Cunning. Astutiæ Genus, 'kind of cunning.'
²⁸ Call. Satis absurde dicitur, 'is called, absurdly enough.'

²⁹ Cat (cate). Felem, 'cat.'

⁸⁰ Make it appeare. Probare et verificare, 'prove and verify.'

⁸¹ A way. Artificium in usu, 'an artifice in use.'

1625. V.

æt. 65.

Words,24 and discoursed with divers of his Friends, that he had no reason to desire to be Secretary, in the Declination of a Monarchy. The first Man tooke hold of it, and found Meanes, it was told the Queene; 25 Who hearing of a Declination of a Monarchy, 26 tooke it so ill, as the would neuer after heare of the others Suit.

There is a Cunning,²⁷ which we in England call,²⁸ The Turning of the Cat²⁹ in the Pan; which is, when that which a Man fayes to another, he laies it, as if Another had faid it to him. And to fay Truth, it is not easie, when such a Matter passed between two, to make it appeare,30 from which of them, it first moved and began.

It is a way,³¹ that fome men haue, to glaunce and dart at Others, by Iustifying themselues, by Negatiues; As to say, This I doe not: As Tigillinus did towards Burrhus; 32 Se non diversas spes, sed Incolumitatem

Imperatoris simpliciter spectare.a.

Some haue in readinesse, so many Tales and Stories, as there is Nothing, they would infinuate, but they can wrap it into a Tale; which ferueth both to keepe themselues more in Guard,83 and to make others carry it,34 with more Pleasure.

It is a good Point of Cunning, for a Man, to shape the Answer he would haue, in his owne Words, and Propositions;35 For it makes the other Party sticke the leffe.

It is strange, how long some Men will lie in wait, to speake somewhat, they desire to say; And how farre about they will fetch; And how many other Matters

^a HE entertained not different hopes [hinting that Burrhus did] but simply consulted the safety of the Emperor. Tacitus. Annals. xiv. 57.

⁸² After Burrhus. Sugillando, 'suggesting.'
⁸³ After Guard. Quasi nihil diserte affirmantes, 'as saying nothing ex-

⁸⁴ Carry it. Rem ipsam majore cum voluptate spargi, 'make the thing

be spread with more pleasure.'

85 Words, and Propositions. Conceptis verbis, 'in words conceived by

1612.

æt. 52.

[See similar paragraph below.]

Euen in businesse there are some that know the resorts and fals of busines, that cannot sinke into the maine of it: like a house that hath convenient staires and entries, but neuer a faire roome. Therefore you shall see them finde out pretty looses in the conclusion, but are no waies able to examine or debate matters: and yet commonly they take aduantage of their inability, and would be thought wits of direction. Some build rather vpon others, and as wee now fay, putting trickes vpon them, then vpon foundnesse of their owne proceedings. But Salomon faith, Prudens advertit ad gressus fuos: stultus divertit ad dolos.

Very many are the differences betweene cunning and wisdome: and it were a good deed to set them downe: for that nothing doth more hurte in state then that cunning men passe for wise.





³⁶ Vnexpected. Omitted in the Latin.

⁸⁷ List. Uberiorem Catalogum, 'fuller list.'
88 Maine. Viscera, et interiora, 'body and interior.'
89 Conclusion. Conclusionibus Deliberationum, 'conclusions of deliberations.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

they will beat ouer, to come neare it. It is a Thing

of great Patience, but yet of much Vse.

A sudden, bold, and vnexpected³⁶ Question, doth many times surprise a Man, and lay him open. Like to him, that having changed his Name, and walking in *Pauls*, Another suddenly came behind him, and called him by his true Name, whereat straightwaies he looked backe.

But these Small Wares, and Petty Points of Cunning, are infinite: And it were a good deed, to make a List⁸⁷ of them: For that nothing doth more hurt in a State,

then that Cunning Men passe for Wise.

But certainly, some there are, that know the Resorts and Falls of Businesse, that cannot sinke into the Maine³⁸ of it: Like a House, that hath convenient Staires, and Entries, but never a faire Roome. Therfore, you shall see them finde out pretty Looses in the Conclusion,³⁹ but are no waies able to Examine, or debate Matters. And yet commonly they take advantage of their Inability, and would be thought Wits of direction.⁴⁰ Some build rather vpon the Abusing of others, and (as we now say;) Putting Tricks vpon them; Then vpon Soundnesse of their own proceedings.⁴² But Salomon saith: Prudens advertit ad Gressus successes. Stultus divertit ad Dolos.^a



sound counsels.

a Prov. xiv. 15.

⁴⁰ After Direction. Potuis quam Disputandum, 'rather than of discussion.'

⁴¹ Some build vpon them. Sunt qui magis innituntur Doiis, quos aliis struunt, 'some rather lean upon snares which they lay for others.'
42 Proceedings. Quam Consiliis solidiis et sanis, 'than upon solid and

1612.

æt. 52.

12. Of Lone.



Oue is the argument alwaies of Comedies, and many times of Tragedies. Which sheweth well, that it is a passion generally light, and sometimes extreme.

Extreame it may well bee, since the speaking in a perpetual Hyperbole, is comely in nothing but Low. Neither is it meerely in the phrase. For whereas it

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Law-giuer. Legislatorum inter Romanos Principem, 'the chief of Roman law-givers.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

10. Of Lone.

HE Stage is more beholding to Love, then the Life of Man. For as to the Stage, Loue is euer matter of Comedies, and now and then of Tragedies: But in Life, it doth much mischiese: Sometimes like a Syren; Sometimes like a Fury. You may observe, that amongst all the great and worthy Persons, (whereof the memory remaineth, either Ancient or Recent) there is not One, that hath beene transported, to the mad degree of Loue: which shewes, that great Spirits, and great Businesse, doe keepe out this weake Passion. You must except, neuerthelesse, Marcus Antonius the halfe Partner of the Empire of Rome; and Appius Claudius the Decemuir, and Law-giuer: Whereof the former, was indeed a Voluptuous Man, and Inordinate; but the latter, was an Austere, and wife man: And therefore it feemes (though rarely) that Loue can finde entrance, not only into an open Heart; but also into a Heart well fortified; if watch be not well kept. It is a poore² Saying of Epicurus; Satis magnum Alter Alteri Theatrum fumus: As if Man, made for the contemplation of Heauen, and all Noble Obiects,3 should doe nothing, but kneele before a little Idoll, and make himselfe subject, though not of the Mouth (as Beasts are) yet of the Eye; which was given him for higher It is a strange Thing, to note the Excesse Purposes. of this Passion; And how it braues, the Nature, and value of things; by this, that the Speaking in a Perpetuall Hyperbole, is comely in nothing, but in Loue. Neither is it meerely in the Phrase; For whereas it

We are a sufficiently great theater, the one to the other. Seneca. Epistles. i. 7.

Poore. Abjectum, et pusillanimum, 'mean and small-minded.'
Noble Obiects. Cælestium, 'heavenly things.'

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

hath beene well faid, that the Arch-flatterer with whom al the petty-flatterers haue intelligence, is a Mans selfe, certainely the louer is more. was neuer proud Man thought fo abfurdly well of himselfe, as the louer doth of the person loued: and therefore it was well said, that it is impossible to loue, and to bee wife. Neither doth this weakenes appeare to others only, and not to the party loued, but to the loued most of all, except the loue bee reciproque, For it is a true rule, that loue is euer rewarded either with the reciproque, or with an inward and fecret contempt. But how much the more, men ought to beware of this passion, which loseth not onely other things, but it selfe. As for the other losses, the Poets relation doth wel figure them: That hee that preferred Helena, quitted the gifts of Iuno and Pallas. For whosoeuer esteemeth too much of amorous affection, quitteth both riches and wisdome. This pasfion hath his flouds in the verie times of weakenesse; Which are great prosperity, and great aduersitie. (though this latter hath beene lesse observed) Both which times kindle loue and make it more feruent, and therefore shewe it to be the childe of folly. make this doe best that affection keepe quarter, and seuer it wholly from their serious affaires and actions of their life. For if it checke once with businesse, it troubleth Mens fortunes, and maketh Men, that they can no waies be true to their own endes.



⁴ Well said. Recte itaque receptum est illud Diverbium, 'rightly there-

fore, has that saying been received.'

⁸ Instead of That it is impossible to loue, and to be wise. Amare et sajent vix Deo conceditur, 'to love and be wise is scarcely allowed to a God.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

hath beene well faid,4a that the Arch-flatterer, with whom all the petty Flatterers haue Intelligence, is a Mans Selfe; Certainly, the Louer is more. For there was neuer Proud Man, thought fo abfurdly well of himselfe, as the Louer doth of the Person loued: And therefore, it was well faid; That it is impossible to loue, and to be wife. 56 Neither doth this weaknesse appeare to others onely, and not to the Party Loued; But to the Loued, most of all: except the Loue be reciproque. For, it is a true Rule, that Loue is euer rewarded, either with the Reciproque, or with an inward, and fecret Contempt. By how much the more, Men ought to beware of this Passion, which loseth not only other things, but it selfe. As for the other losses, the Poets Relation, doth well figure them; That he that preferred Helena, quitted the Gifts of Iuno, and Pallas. For whosoeuer esteemeth too much of Amorous Affection, quitteth both Riches, and Wisedome. This Pastion, hath his Flouds, in the very times of Weaknesse; which are, great Prosperitie; and great Adversitie; though this latter hath beene lesse observed. Both which times kindle Loue, and make it more feruent, and therefore shew it to be the Childe of Folly. doe best, who, if they cannot but admit Loue, yet make it keepe Quarter: And seuer it wholly, from their ferious Affaires, and Actions of life: For if it checke once with Businesse, it troubleth Mens Fortunes,6 and maketh Men, that they can, no wayes be true, to their owne Ends.

I know not how,7 but Martiall Men, are given to Loue: I thinke it is, but as they are given to Wine;

^a Plutarch. De Adulatore et Amico. xi.

b Publius Syrus. Sententia. xv.

Mens Fortunes. Omnia, 'everything.'
 I know not how. Quiquid in re sit, 'However it may be.'

448 A HARMONY OF THE ESSAYS.

IV. 1612. set. 52.

8 Friars. Monachis, 'Monks.'

V. 2625. æt. 65.

For *Perils*, commonly aske, to be paid in *Pleafures*. There is in Mans Nature, a fecret Inclination, and Motion, towards *love* of others; which, if it be not fpent, vpon fome one, or a few, doth naturally fpread it felfe, towards many; and maketh men become Humane and Charitable; As it is feene fometime in Friars.⁸ Nuptiall *love* maketh Mankinde; Friendly *love* perfecteth it; but Wanton *love* Corrupteth, and Imbafeth it.

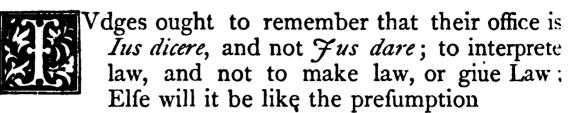


1612.

æt. 52.

British Museum Copy.

36. Of Judicature.



of the Church of Rome, which vnder pretext of exposition of Scripture, vsurpeth and practifeth an authority to adde and alter; and to pronounce that which they doe not finde, and by colour of Antiquity to introduce nouelty. Iudges ought to be more learned wittie; more reuerend then plausible. then and more aduised then confident, Aboue all things integrity is their portion and proper vertue. (saith the Law) is hee that removueth the Land-marke. The missaier of a Meerestone is too blame. But it is the vniust Iudge that is the capitall remouer of Landmarkes, when hee defineth amisse of lands and pro-One foule fentence doth more hurt, then many foule examples; for they doe but corrupt the streame; the other corrupteth the fountaine. So saith Salomon; Fons turbatus et vena corrupta est iustus cadens in causa sua coram aduersario; The of Iudges may have reference vnto the parties that sue; vnto the Aduocates that pleade; vnto the Clerkes and Ministers of Iustice vnderneth them: and to the Soueraigne or State aboue them.

There be

(faith the Scripture) that turne indgement into wormeaccord; and furelie there be also that turne it into vinegar: For iniustice maketh it bitter, and delaies

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

TITLE. De Officio Iudicis, 'of the judge's office.'
 Or Giue Law. Omitted in the Latin.
 Meere Stone. Lapidem, Fines distinguentem, 'a stone marking bourdaries.

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

56. Of Judicature.1

Vdges ought to remember, that their Office is Ius dicere, and not Ius dare; To Interpret Law, and not to Make Law, or Giue. Law. Else will it be like the Authority, claimed by

the Church of Rome; which vnder pretext of Exposition of Scripture, doth not sticke to

Adde and Alter; And to Pronounce that, which they doe not Finde; And by Shew of Antiquitie, to introduce Noueltie. Iudges ought to be more Learned,

then Wittie; More Reuerend, then Plausible; And more Aduised, then Confident. Aboue all Things, Integritie is their Portion, and Proper Vertue. Cursed (saith the Law) is hee that remoueth the Land-marke. The Mislaier of a Meere Stone is to blame. But it is the Vniust Iudge, that is the Capitall Remouer of Landmarkes, when he Defineth amisse of Lands and Propertie. One Foule Sentence, doth more Hurt, then many Foule Examples. For these doe but Corrupt the Streame; The other Corrupteth the Fountaine. So saith Salomon; Fons turbatus, et Vena corrupta, est Iustus cadens in causa fua coram Adversario. The Office of Iudges, may have Reference, Vnto the Parties that sue; Vnto the Advocates that Plead; Vnto the Clerkes and Ministers of Iustice vnderneath them; And to the Soveraigne or State aboue them.

First, for the Causes or Parties that Sue. There be (saith the Scripture) that turne Iudgement into Worme-wood; And surely, there be also, that turne it into Vinegar; For Iniustice maketh it Bitter, and Delaies

a Deut. xxvii. 17.

b Prov. xxv. 26.

c Amos v. 7.

IV. 1612.

æt. 52.

make it fowre. The principall duty of a Iudge, is to suppresse force and fraude; wherof force is the more pernitious, the more open; and fraud the more close and disguised. Adde thereto contentious suites, which ought to be spewed out as the surfet of Courts. A ludge ought to prepare his way to a just sentence, as God vseth to prepare his way, by raising valleis and taking downe hils: So when their appeareth on either fide an high hand, violent profecution, running aduantages taken, combination, power, great counsell, then is the vertue of a Judge scene, to make inequality equall; that he may plant his judgement as vpon an euen ground. Qui fortiter emungit, elicit fanguinem; And where the winepresse is hard wrought, it yeelds a harsh wine that tastes of the grapestone. Iudges must beware of hard constructions and strained inferences; for there is no worse torture then the torture of lawes: specially in case of Lawes penall; they ought to have care that that which was meant for terrour, be not turned into rigour; and that they bring not vpon the people that shower whereof the Scripture speaketh; Pluet fuper eos laqueos: For penall lawes pressed, are a showre of snares vpon the people.

In causes of life and death, Judges ought as farre (as the law permitteth) in iustice to remember mercy;

Iudge. Judex strenuus, 'an active judge.'
There appeareth. Videt judex, 'the judge sees.'
Power. Patrocinio potentum, 'patronage of powerful men.'
Great Counsel. Advocatorum Disparitate, et Similibus, 'disparity of counsel, and the like.'

⁸ Constructions. Interpretationibus Legum, 'constructions of the laws'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

The Principall Dutie of a *Iudge*, 4 is to make it Soure. suppresse Force and Fraud; whereof Force is the more Pernicious, when it is Open; And Fraud, when it is Close and Disguised. Adde thereto Contentious Suits. which ought to be spewed out, as the Surfet of Courts. A *Iudge* ought to prepare his Way to a Iust Sentence, as God vseth to prepare his Way, by Raising Valleys, and Taking downe Hills: a So when there appeareth 5 on either side, an High Hand; Violent Prosecution. Cunning Aduantages taken, Combination, Power,6 Great Counsell,7 then is the Vertue of a *Iudge* seene, to make Inequalitie Equall; That he may plant his Iudgement, as voon an Euen Ground. Qui fortiter emungit, elicit fanguinem; And where the Wine-Presse is hard wrought, it yeelds a harsh Wine, that tastes of the Grape-stone. Iudges must beware of Hard Constructions,8 and Strained Inferences; For there is no Worse Torture, then the Torture of Lawes. Specially in cafe of Lawes Penall, they ought to have Care, that that which was meant for Terrour, be not turned into Rigour; And that they bring not vpon the People, that Shower, whereof the Scripture speaketh; Pluet fuper eos Laqueos: For Penall Lawes Pressed, are a Shower of Snares vpon the People. Therefore, let Penall Lawes, if they have beene Sleepers of long, or if they be growne vnfit for the present Time, be by Wife *Iudges* confined in the Execution;

Iudicis Officium est, vt Res, ita Tempora Rerum, &c.d In Causes of Life and Death; Iudges ought (as farre as the Law permitteth) in Iustice to remember Mercy;

^a Isaiah. xl. 4. ^b Prov. xxx. 33.

^c Ps. xi. 6.

d It is a duty of a judge to enquire not only as to the fact, but also as to the circumstances. Ovid. Tristia. i. 1. 37.

⁹ Pressed. Si severe Executioni demandentur, 'if severely put in execution.'

æt. 52.

and to cast a seuere eie vpon the example, but a mercifull eie vpon the person.

1612.

Patience and grauity of hearing is an effential part of iustice, and an ouerspeaking Judge is no well tuned Cymball. It is no grace to a Iudge, first to finde that which hee might have heard in due time from the Barre; or to shew quicknesse of conceit in cutting of counsell or euidence too short; or to preuent information by questions, though pertinent. partes of a Iudge are foure; to direct the euidence; to moderate length, repetition, or impertinency of speech; to recapitulate, select, and collate the materiall points of that which hath beene faid; and to give the rule or fentence. foeuer is aboue these, is too much; and proceedeth either of glory and willingnesse to speake, or of impatience to heare, or of shortnesse of memory, or of want of a staid or equal attention. It is a strange thing to fee, that the boldnesse of Aduocates should preuaile with Iudges; whereas they should imitate God, in whose seate they sit, who represseth the presumptuous, and giueth grace to the modest. But it is more strange, that the custome of the time doth warrant Iudges to haue noted fauourites, which cannot but cause multipliof fees, and fuspition of by-waies. There is due from the Iudge to the Aduocate. fome commendation and gracing, where causes are well handled and faire pleaded; speciallie towards the side which obtaineth not; For that vpholds in

¹⁰ Finde. In Causa inveniat, et arripiat, 'find and lay hold of in the cause.'

¹¹ Heard. Melius audire, 'better heard.'

¹² Length. Advocatorum, et Testium, Prolixitatem, 'length of advocates and witnesses.'

¹³ Rule. Omitted in the Latin.

¹⁴ Giueth Grace. Erigere, 'raise.'

¹⁵ Noted Fauourites. Advocatis quibusdam præ cæteris immoderate et

V. 1625. æt. 65.

And to Cast a Seuere Eye vpon the Example, but a Mercifull Eye vpon the Person.

Secondly, for the Aduocates and Counfell that Plead: Patience and Grauitie of Hearing, is an Effentiall Part

of Iustice; And an Ouer-speaking Iudge is no well tuned Cymball.a It is no Grace to a *Iudge*, first to finde 10 that, which hee might have heard,11 in due time, from the Barre; or to shew Quicknesse of Conceit in Cutting off Euidence or Counsell too short; Or to preuent Information, by Questions though Pertinent. Parts of a *Iudge* in Hearing are Foure: To direct the Euidence; To Moderate Length, 12 Repetition, or Impertinency of Speech; To Recapitulate, Select, and Collate, the Materiall Points of that, which hath beene faid; And to Giue the Rule¹³ or Sentence. euer is aboue these, is too much; And proceedeth, Either of Gloryand willingnesse to Speake; Or of Impatience to Heare, Or of Shortnesse of Memorie; Or of Want of a Staidand Equall Attention. It is a Strange Thing to see, that the Boldnesse of Aduocates, should preuaile with Iudges; Whereas they should imitate God, in whose Seat they fit; who represseth the Presumptuous, and giveth Grace¹⁴ to the Modest.^b But it is more Strange, that

Iudges should haue Noted Fauourites; 15 Which cannot but Cause Multipliof Fees,16 and Suspicion of By-waies.17 There is due from the *Iudge*, to the *Advocate*, fome Commendation and Gracing, where Caufes are well Handled, and faire Pleaded; Especially towards the Side which obtaineth not; For that vpholds, in

^a Ps. cl. 5. (Prayer Book version). ^b James. iv. 6.

aperte favere, 'should immoderately and openly favour some advocates above the others.

¹⁶ Multiplication of Fees. Merces Advocatorum augeat et multiplicet, increases and multiplies the fees of advocates.'

¹⁷ By-waies. Corruptionis et obliqui ad Judices aditus, 'of corruption and byways to the judges.'

1612.

æt. 52.

the Client the reputation of his counsel, and beats down in him the conceit of his cause. likewise due to the publike a ciuill reprehension of Aduocates, where there appeareth cunning counsell, grosse neglect, slight information, indiscreet pressing, or an overbold defence.

The place of Iustice is an hallowed place; and therefore not onely the bench, but the footepace and precincts and purprife thereof ought to bee preserved without scandall and corruption. For certainely Grapes (as the Scripture faith) will not be gathered of thornes or thistles; neither can Iustice yeeld her fruit with sweetnesse, amongst the briers and brambles of chatching and poling Clearkes and Ministers. The attendance of Courts is subject to foure bad instruments; First, certaine persons that are sowers of fuits, which make the Court swel, and the Country pine. The fecond fort is of those that ingage Courts in quarrels of Iurisdiction, and are not truly, Amici Curiæ, but Parasiti Curiæ, in pussing a Court vp beyond her bounds for their own scrappes and aduantage. The third fort is of those that may bee accounted the left hands of Courts, persons that are full of nimble finister trickes and shiftes, whereby they peruert the plaine and direct courses of Courts, and

¹⁸ Let not the Counsel. Advocatus autem illud tribuat Judici, 'let the advocate moreover allow this to the judge.'

19 Halfe-Way. Media, et nullatenus perorata, 'half-way and not heard

throughout.'

20 Say. Conqueratur, 'complain.'

21 Heard. Ad plenum non auditas, 'not fully heard.'

1625. V. æt. 65.

the Client, the Reputation of his Counfell, and beats downe, in him, the Conceit of his Caufe. There is likewise due to the Publique, a Civill Reprehension of Advocates, where there appeareth Cunning Counfel, Grosse Neglect, Slight Information, Indiscreet Pressing, or an Ouer-bold Defence. And let not the Counfell 18 at the Barre, chop with the Iudge, nor winde himselfe into the handling of the Caufe anew, after the Iudge hath Declared his Sentence: But on the other side, Let not the *Iudge* meet the *Caufe* halfe Way; 19 Nor giue Occasion to the Partie to say; 20 His Counsell or

Proofes were not heard.21

Thirdly, for that that concerns Clerks, and Ministers. The Place of Iustice, is an Hallowed Place; And therefore, not only the Bench, but the Foot-pace, and Precincts, and Purprise 22 thereof, ought to be preserved without Scandall and Corruption. For certainly, Grapes, (as the Scripture saith) will not be gathered of Thornes or Thistles: a Neither can Iustice yeeld her Fruit with Sweetnesse, amongst the Briars and Brambles, of Catching and Poling²³ Clerkes and Ministers. The Attendance of Courts is subject to Foure bad Instruments. First, Certaine Persons, that are Sowers of Suits; which make the Court swell, and the Country pine. The Second Sort is of those, that ingage Courts, in Quarrels of Iurisdiction, and are not truly Amici Curiæ, but Parasiti Curiæ; in puffing vp a Court beyond her Bounds, for their owne Scraps, and Aduantage. The Third Sort is of those, that may be accounted, the Left Hands of Courts; Persons that are full of Nimble and Sinister²⁴ Trickes and Shifts, whereby they peruert the Plaine and Direct²⁵ Courses of Courts, and

⁴ Matt. vii. 16.

b Not friends but parasites of the Court.

<sup>Purprise. Omitted in the Latin.
Poling. Lacris inhiantium, 'gaping for gain.'
Nimble and sinister. Omitted in the Latin.
Plaine and Direct. Legitimos, 'lawful.'</sup>

IV. 1612. æt. 52.

bring iustice into oblike lines and labirinthes. And the fourth is the Poler and exacter of fees, which iustifies the common resemblance of the Courts of Iustice, to the bush, wherunto while the sheepe slies for desence in weather, hee is sure to lose part of his sleece. On the other side an ancient Clearke, skilfull in presidents, wary in proceeding, and vnderstanding in the businesse of the Court, is an excellent singer of a Court, and doth many times point the way to the Iudge himselse.

Lastly,

Iudges ought aboue al to remember the conclusion of the Roman twelue Tables; Salus populi fuprema lex, and to know that Lawes, except they bee in order to that ende are but things captious. and Oracles not well inspired. Therefore it is an happy thing in a State, when Kings and States doe often confult with Iudges; and againe, when Iudges doe often consult with the King and State: the one, when there is matter of Law interuenient in businesse of State; the other when there is some consideration of State interuenient in matter of Lawe. For many times the thing deduced to Iudgement, may bee meum et tuum, when the reason and consequence thereof may trench to point of estate; I call matter of estate not only the parts of Soueraignty, but whatfoeuer introduceth any great alteration or dangerous president or concerneth manifestly any great portion of people. And let no man weakely conceiue that iust lawes, and true pollicy, haue any antipathy. For they are like the spirits, and sinewes

²⁶ Parts of Souereignty. Quid ad Jura Regalia impetenda spectri, what tends to attack royal rights.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

bring *Iustice* into Oblique Lines and Labyrinths. And the Fourth is, the Poler and Exacter of Fees; which iustifies the Common Resemblance of the *Courts* of *Iustice*, to the *Bush*, whereunto while the Sheepe slies for desence in Wether, hee is sure to loose Part of his Fleece. On the other side, an *Ancient Clerke*, skilfull in Presidents, Wary in Proceeding, and Vnderstanding in the *Businesse* of the *Court*, is an excellent Finger of a *Court*; And doth many times point the way to the *Iudge* himselse.

Fourthly, for that which may concerne the Soueraigne and Estate. Iudges ought aboue all to remember the Conclusion of the Roman Twelue Tables; Salus Populi Suprema Lex; And to know, that Lawes, except they bee in Order to that End, are but Things Captious, and Oracles not well Inspired. Therefore it is an Happie Thing in a State, when Kings and States doe often Confult with Iudges; And againe, when Iudges doe often Confult with the King and State: The one, when there is Matter of Law, interuenient in Businesse of State; The other, when there is some Consideration of State, interuenient in Matter of Law. For many times, the Things Deduced to *Iudgement*, may bee *Meum* and *Tuum*, when the Reason and Consequence thereof, may Trench to Point of Estate: I call Matter of Estate, not onely the parts of Soueraigntie,26 but whatsoeuer introduceth any Great²⁷ Alteration, or Dangerous president; Or Concerneth manifestly any great Portion of People. And let no Man weakly conceiue, that Iust Laws, and True Policie, haue any Antipathie: For they are like the Spirits, and Sinewes,

a Not the laws of the Twelve Tables, but Cicero. De Legibus. iii. 3. The welfare of the people is the highest law.

²⁷ Great. Minus tutam, 'unsafe.'

1612.

æt. 52.

that one moues with the other.

Neither ought Iudges to be so ignorant of their owne right, as to thinke there is not lest to them as a principall part of their office, a wise vse and application of Lawes. For they may remember what the Apostle saith of a greater law then theirs, Nos scimus, quia lex bona est, modo quis ea vtatur legitime.



28 Right. Juris et Prerogativa, 'right and prerogativa.'
29 Theirs. Humanis legibus, 'human laws.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

that One moues with the Other. Let *Iudges* also remember, that *Salomons Throne*, was supported by Lions, on both Sides; Let them be Lions, but yet Lions vnder the Throne; Being circumspect, that they doe not checke, or oppose any Points of *Soueraigntie*. Let not *Iudges* also, be so Ignorant of their owne Right, as a to thinke, there is not lest to them, as a Principall Part of their Office, a Wise Vse, and application of Lawes. For they may remember, what the *Apostle* saith, of a Greater *Law*, then theirs; Nos scimus quia Lex bona est. modò quis ea vtatur Legitime.



^a 1 Kings. x. 20. ^b 1 Tim, i. 8 (Vulgate.

1612.

æt. 52.

37. Of Baine-glory.



T was pretily denifed of Æfop, The Flie fate upon the Axletree of the Chariot wheele, and faid, What a dust doe I raise? So there are some vaine persons, that whatsoeuer goeth

alone, or moues vpon greater meanes,

they thinke it is they that carry it. They that are glorious must needs be factious; for all brauery stands vpon comparisons. They must needes be violent to make good their owne vaunts. Neither can they bee fecret, and therefore not effectuall; but according to the French prouerb. Beaucoup de bruit et peu de fruit, Much bruit, little fruit. Yet certainely there is vse of this quality in ciuill affaires. Where there is an opinion and fame to bee created, either of Vertue or Greatnesse: these men are good Trumpeters. Again, as Titus Liuius noteth in the case of Antiochus and the Ætolians, There are fomctimes greate effects of croffe lies; as if a man that should interpose himselfe to negotiate between two.

should to either of them seuerally pretend, more interest then he hath in the other. And in this and the like kind, it often fals out. that fomewhat is produced of nothing. For lies are fufficient to breed opinion, and opinion brings on

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

Vaine. Futiles et Vani, 'worthless and vain.'
 Carry it. Machinam totam vertere, 'turn the whole machine.'
 Created. Fama excitanda sit, vel Opinio late spargenda, 'fame to be raised or opinion to be widely spread.'

V.

1б25.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

54. Of Vaine-Glory.

T was prettily Deuised of Æsope; The Fly sate vpon the Axle-tree of the Chariot wheele, and said, What a Dust doe I raise? So there are some Vaine¹ Persons, that whatsoever goeth alone, or moveth vpon greater Means, if they have never so little Hand in it, they thinke it is they that carry it.² They that are Glorious, must needs be Factious; For all Bravery stands vpon Comparisons. They must needs be Violent, to make good their owne Vaunts. Neither can they be Secret, and therefore

Vaunts. Neither can they be Secret, and therefore not Effectuall; but according to the French Prouerb; Beaucoup de Bruit, peu de Fruit: Much Bruit, little Fruit. Yet certainly there is Vse of this Qualitie, in Ciuill Affaires. Where there is an Opinion, and Fame to be created, either of Vertue, or Greatnesse, these Men are good Trumpetters. Againe, as Titus Liuius noteth, in the Case of Antiochus, and the Ætolians; There are sometimes great Essets of Crosse Lies: As if a Man, that Negotiates between Two Princes, to draw them to ioyne in a Warre against the Third, doth extoll the Forces

a Warre against the Third, doth extoll the Forces of either of them, aboue Measure,⁵ the One to the Other: And sometimes, he that deales between Man and Man, raiseth his owne Credit, with Both, by pretending greater Interest, then he hath in Either. And in these, and the like Kindes, it often falls out, that Somewhat is produced of Nothing: For Lies are sufficient to breed Opinion, and Opinion brings on

^a Livy. xxxvii. 48.

⁴ Crosse. Reciproca, et ex utraque parte, 'reciprocal and on both sides.'
⁵ Measure. Modum, et Veritatem, 'measure and truth.'

1612.

æt. 52.

substance.

But principally cases of great enterprise, vponcharge and aduenture such composition of glorious natures doth put life into busines, and those that are of folid and fober natures have more of the ballast, then of the faile.

Certainely Vaine-glory helpeth to perpetuate a mans memory, and Vertue was neuer fo beholding to humane nature, as it receiued his due at the fecond hand. Neither had the fame of Cicero, Seneea, Plinius Secundus, borne her age fo well, if it had not beene ioined with some vanity in themselues; like vnto varnish, that makes feelings not onely shine, but last. But all this while, when I speake of Vaine-glory, I meane not of that property that Tacitus doth attribute to Mucianus, Omnium quæ dixerat seceratque arte quadam ostentator. For that proceedes not of vanity, but of a natural magnanimity and discretion; and in some persons is not onely comely, but gracious. exusations, cessions, modesty it selfe well go-

⁶ Substance. Rem et Substantiam, 'matter and substance.'
7 Sharpeneth. Acuuntur, et excitantur, 'sharpen and stir up.'
8 Learning. Doctrinæ et Literarum, 'learning and literature.'
9 The Flight will be slow. Non volitabit Fama illius per Ora Virum, neque bene Alata erit, 'the fame thereof will not fly through the mouths of men, nor will it be well winged.'

10 After Galen. (Magna Nomina,) '(great names.)'
11 Perpetuate. Propagandam et perpetuandam, 'spread and perpetuate.'
12 And Vertue . . . Second Hand. Neque Virtus ipsa, tantum Humanæ Naturæ debet, propter Nominis sui Celebrationem, quantum sibiipsi, 'nor does virtue itself owe as much to human nature for the celebration of its name as to itself.' bration of its name as to itself.'

¹⁸ Borne her Age. Ad hunc usque diem vix durasset, aut saltem non tam vegeta, 'would not have lasted till this time, or at least, not so fresh.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Substance.⁶ In Militar[y] Commanders and Soldiers, Vaine-Glory is an Effential Point; For as Iron sharpens Iron, so by Glory one Courage sharpneth? another. In Cases of great Enterprise, vpon Charge and Aduenture, a Composition of Glorious Natures, doth put life into Businesse; And those that are of Solide and Sober Natures, haue more of the Ballast, then of the Saile. In Fame of Learning,8 the Flight will be flow9, without some Feathers of Ostentation. Qui de contemnendà Glorià Libros scribunt, Nomen fuum inscribunt.a Socrates, Aristotle, Galen, 10 were Men full of Ostentation. Certainely Vaine-Glory helpeth to Perpetuate¹¹ a Mans Memory; And Vertue was neuer so Beholding to Humane Nature, as it receiued his due at the Second Hand. 12 Neither had the Fame of Cicero, Seneca, Plinius Secundus, borne her Age¹³ fo well, if it had not been ioyned, with fome Vanity¹⁴ in themselues: Like vnto Varnish, that makes Seelings¹⁵ not onely Shine, but Last. But all this while, when I speake of Vaine-Glory, I meane not of that Property, that Tacitus doth attribute to Mucianus; Omnium, quæ dixerat, feceratque, Arte quadam Ostentator: For that proceeds not of Vanity, but of Naturall¹⁶ Magnanimity, and discretion;¹⁷ And in some Perfons, 18 is not onely Comely, but Gracious. For Excusations, 19 Cessions, 20 Modesty it selfe well Go-

a Those who write books in contempt of glory, wrote their own names.

Cicero. Tusculanum Disputationes. i. 15.

b The manifestor, by a certain art, of all things that he had said and done. Tacitus. History. ii. 80.

¹⁴ Vanity. Vanitate et Jactantia, 'vanity and boastfulness.'
15 Seelings. Ligna, 'wood-work.'
16 Naturall. Omitted in the Latin.
17 Discretion. Arte et prudentia, 'art and wisdom.'
18 After Persons. Qui natura veluti comparati ad eam sunt, 'who are fitted for this by nature.'

¹⁹ Excusations. Excusationes decoræ, 'comely excusations.'
²⁰ Cessions. Concessiones tempestivæ, 'timely cessions.'

1612.

æt. 52.

uerned are but arts of oftentation: and amongst those Arts there is none better, then that which Plinius Secundus speaketh of, which is to be liberall of praise and commendation to others, in that wherein a mans selse hath any persection. For saith Plinie very wittily; In commending another, you do your selse right; for hee that you commend, is either superior to you in that you commend, or inferiour. If he be inferiour if he be to be commended; you much more: if he be superiour if hee be not commended; you much lesse.



²¹ Liberall. Liberaliter et copiose, 'liberally and abundantly."

²² Commendation. Omitted in the Latin.

In that you Commend. Omitted in the Latin.
 Idols. Prada et Esca, 'booty and baits.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

uerned, are but Arts of Ostentation. And amongst those Arts, there is none better, then that which Plinius Secundus speaketh of; which is to be Liberall²¹ of Praise and Commendation²² to others, in that, wherein a Mans Selse hath any Persection. For saith Pliny very Wittily; In commending Another, you doe your selse right; For he that you Commend, is either Superiour to you, in that you Commend, or Inseriour. If he be Inseriour, if he be to be Commended, you much more: If he be Superiour, if he be not to be commended, you much lesse. Glorious Men are the Scorne of Wise Men; the Admiration of Fooles; The Idols²⁴ of Parasites; And the Slaues of their own Vaunts.²⁵



^a Pliny. Epistles. vi. 17.

²⁵ Their own Vaunts. Sibiipsis et Gloriæ vanæ, 'themselves and their vain glory.'

1612.

æt. 52.

38. Of the greatnesse of Kingdomes.

He speech of *Themistocles*, was arrogant in challenge,

which

is profitable in censure.

Defired at a banquet to touch a Lute, hee faid, He could not fiddle; but he could make a fmall Towne to become a great Citie. This speech at a time of folace, and not ferious, was vnciuill, and at no time could be decent of a mans felfe. But it may have a pretie application: For to speake truly of politikes and Statesmen, there are sometimes, though rarely, those that can make a small estate great, and fiddell. there bee And

many that can fiddell very cunningly, and yet the procedure of their Art is

to make a

flourishing estate ruinous and distressed. For certainly those degenerate Arts, whereby divers politikes and Gouernors doe gaine both fatisfaction with their Masters, and admiration with the vulgar, deferue no better name then fidling;

if they adde nothing to the fafetie, strength, and amplitude of the States they gouerne.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

1 TITLE. De Proferendis Finibus Imperii, 'of extending the bounds of

² Metaphore. Ad Sensum politicam translata, 'transferred to a political meaning. Expresse.

Optime describunt, et distinguunt, 'well describe and

Estate. Rerum Gubernacuta tractant, 'who manage the helm of affairs'

1625.

 V_{-}

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

29. Of the true Greatnesse of Kingdomes and Estates.1

He Speech of *Themistocles* the *Athenian*, which

was Haughtie and Arrogant, in taking fo much to Himfelfe, had been a Graue and Wife Observation and Censure, applied at large to others. Defired at a Feast to touch a Lute, he faid; He could not fiddle, but yet he could make a fmall Towne, a great Citty.a These Words (holpen a little with a Metaphore)2 may expresse two differing Abilities, in those that deale in Businesse of Estate.4 For if a true Suruey be taken, of Counfellours⁵ and Statesmen, there may be found (though rarely) those, which can make an Small State⁶ Great, and yet cannot Fiddle: As on the other fide, there will be found a great many, that can fiddle very cunningly,7 but yet are so farre from being able, to make a Small State Great, as their Gift lieth the other way; To bring a Great and Flourishing Estate to Ruine and Decay. And certainly, those Degenerate Arts and Shifts, whereby many Counfellours and Gouernours, gaine both Fauour with their Masters, and Estimation with the Vulgar, deserve no better Name then Fidling; Being Things, rather pleasing for the time, and gracefull to themselues onely, then tending8 to the Weale and Aduancement of the State, which they serue. There are also (no doubt) Counsellours and Gouernours, which may be held fufficient, (Negotijs pares,) Able to mannage Affaires, and to keepe them from Precipices,

^a Plutarch. Themistocles. ii. Cimon. 7.

⁵ Counsellours. Regum Consiliarios, Senatores, aliosque ad Negotia publica admotos, qui usquam fuerunt, 'councillors of kings, senators, and others applied to public business, who have lived anywhere.'

⁶ State. Regnum aut Civitatem, 'kingdom or state.'

⁷ Cunningly. In Cythara, aut Lyra (hoc est Aulicis tricis) miri Artifices, 'wonderful players on the lute or lyre (that is, in court tricks).

⁸ Tending. Utiles, aut Accommodæ, 'profitable or fit.'

1612.

æt. 52.

The greatnes of a State in bulke or territory, doth fall vnder measure; and the greatnes of finances and reuenew, doth fall vnder computation: the population may appeare by Musters, and the number and greatnesse of Cities and Towns by Carts and Mappes: but yet there is nothing among ciuill affaires more subject to error, then the right valuacion and true iudgement concerning the greatnes of an estate. Certainly there is a kind of refemblance betweene the Kingdome of heauen, and the Kingdomes vpon the earth. The Kingdome of heauen is compared not to any great kernell, or nut; but to a graine of Musterd; which is one of the least of graines. but hath in it a propertie and spirit hastily to get vp and spread. So are there States that are great in Territory, and yet not apt to conquer or inlarge: and others that have but a small dimention or stemme, and yet apt to be the foundation of great Monarchies.

9 Power, Meanes, and Fortune. Omitted in the Latin.

¹⁰ Meanes. Quibus Artibus obtineri possit, 'by what means it can be obtained.'

¹¹ Great and Mightie. Omitted in the Latin.
12 After Hand. Et diligenter meditentur, 'and carefully to consider'
13 Leese. Implicent, 'involve.'
14 Vaine. Vanis et nimis Arduis, 'vain and too difficult.'

Finances. Omitted in the Latin.
 Iudgment. Omitted in the Latin.

¹⁷ Nut. Nuci alicui grandiori, 'any large nut.'
18 Spread. Latius diffundat, 'spread widely.'

and manifest Inconveniences; which neverthelesse, are farre from the Abilitie, to raife and Amplifie an Estate, in Power, Meanes, and Fortune.9 But be the workemen what they may be, let vs speake of the Worke; That is; The true Greatneffe of Kingdomes and Estates; and the Meanes 10 thereof. An Argument, fit for Great and Mightie¹¹ Princes, to haue in their hand; 12 To the end, that neither by Ouer-measuring their Forces, they leefe 13 themselues in vaine 14 Enterprifes; Nor on the other side, by vnderualuing them, they descend to Fearefull and Pusillanimous Counsells.

The Greatnesse of an Estate in Bulke and Territorie, doth fall vnder Measure; And the Greatnesse of Finances¹⁵ and Reuenew doth fall vnder Computation. The Population may appeare by Musters: And the Number and Greatnesse of Cities and Townes, by Cards and Maps. But yet there is not any Thing amongst Ciuill Affaires, more subject to Errour, then the right valuation, and true Iudgement, 16 concerning the Power and Forces of an Estate.

The Kingdome of Heauen

is compared, not to any great Kernell or Nut,17 but to a Graine of Mustard-feed; which is one of the least Graines. but hath in it a Propertie and Spirit, hastily to get vp and spread. 18 So are there States, 19 great in Territorie, 20 and yet not apt to Enlarge, 21 or Command; 22 And fome, that haue but a small Dimension of Stemme,23 and yet apt to be the Foundations of Great Monarchies.24

 \mathbf{V} .

a Matt. xiii. 31.

States. Regna et status, 'kingdoms and states.'
 Territorie. Ambitu quidem et Regionum Tractu, 'in circumference and extent of country.

²¹ Enlarge. Ad Fines ulterius proferendos, 'to extend their boundaries

²² Command. Latius imperandum, 'command more widely.'
²³ Of Stemme. Omitted in the Latin.
²⁴ Of Great Monarchies. In quibus maxima Monarchia inadificentur,
'ou which great monarchies can be built.'

1612.

æt. 52.

Walled Towns, stored Arcenals and Armories, goodly Stables, Elephants (if you wil) Masse of treasure, Number in Armies, Ordinance, and Artillerie, they are all but a Sheep in a Lions skin, except the breed and disposition of the people be militarie.

Armouries. Omitted in the Latin.

Ordnance, Artillery. Machina atque Tormenta Bellica omnigena,
all kinds of military machines and engines.

Weake Courage. Imbelles, et ignavi, 'unwarlike and slothful.'
Sea of People. Oculis Macedonum, tanquam vastum Hominum Pelagus, subjiciebatur, 'lay before the eyes of the Macedonians like a vast sea of people.'

29 Easie. Opinione facilior, 'easier than he thought.'

1625. V.

æt. 65.

Walled Townes, Stored Arcenalls and Armouries,²⁵ Goodly Races of Horse, Chariots of Warre, Elephants, Ordnance, Artillery,26 and the like: All this is but a Sheep in a Lions Skin, except the Breed and disposition of the People, be flout and warlike. Nay Number (it felfe) in Armies, importeth not much, where the People is of weake Courage: 27 For (as Virgil saith) It neuer troubles a Wolfe, how many the sheepe be.a The Armie of the Persians, in the Plaines of Arbela, was such a vast Sea of People,28 as it did somewhat astonish the Commanders in Alexanders Armie; Who came to him therefore, and wisht him, to set vpon them by Night; But hee answered, He would not pilfer the Victory. And the Defeat was Easie.29 When Tigranes the Armenian, being incamped vpon a Hill, with 400000. Men, discouered the Armie of the Romans, being not aboue 14000. Marching towards him, he made himselse Merry with it, and faid; Yonder Men, are too Many for an Ambaffage, and too Few for a Fight. But before the Sunne fett, he found them enough, to give him the Chace, with infinite Slaughter. Many are the Examples, of the great oddes between Number and Courage: So that a Man may truly make a Iudgement; 30 That the Principal Point of Greatnesses in any State, is to have a Race of Military Men. 32 Neither is Money the Sinewes of Warre, (as it is triuially faid)38 where the Sinewes of Mens Armes, in Base and Effeminate People, are failing. For Solon said well to Crasus (when in Ostentation he shewed him his Gold) Sir, if

a Virgil. Bucolics. vii. 52. b Plutarch. Alexander. xxxi.

³⁰ So that a Man a Iudgement. Pro re certissima, et exploratissima decernatur, et statuatur; 'it may be determined and set down as a most certain and ascertained fact.'

⁸¹ Of Greatnesse. Omnium, quæ ad Magnitudinem Regni aut status spectent, 'of all things which belong to the greatness of a kingdom or state.'

⁸² Race of Military Men. Ut populus ipse sit stirpe et Ingenio bellicosus, 'that the people themselves should be warlike in race and disposition.'

⁸³ Neither is . . . (as it is trivially said). Atque illud magis tritum, quam verum, 'and that is more trite than true.'

1612.

æt. 52.

The helpe is mercenary aides. But a Prince or State that resteth vpon waged Companies of forraine Armes, and not of his owne Natiues, may spread his feathers for a time, but he will mew them foone after.

The bleffing of Iudah and Iffachar will neuer meet, to be both the Lions whelpe, and the Asse laid betweene burthens: Neither will a people charged with tributes, bee euer fit for Empire.

Nobilitie and Gentlemen multiplying in too great a proportion, maketh the common subject grow to bee a

⁸⁴ Except his Militia of Natiues. Cajus subditi Nativi et Indigena, non sunt, 'whose natural and native subjects are not.'

³⁶ In this Case. Cum Copiæ Nativæ desint, 'when native forces fail.'
36 Or Prince. Omitted in the Latin.
37 Feathers. Pennas, Nido majores, 'wings beyond his nest.'
38 Abate. Dejicere, et deprimere, quam quæ ex Imperio mero indicuntur, "cast down and depress less than those which are imposed by a mere command.

any Other come, that hath better Iron then you, he will be Master of all this Gold. Therfore let any Prince or State, thinke foberly of his Forces, except his Militia 34 of Natiues, be of good and Valiant Soldiers. And let Princes, on the other side, that have Subiects of Martiall difposition, know their owne Strength; vnlesse they be otherwise wanting vnto Themselues. for Mercenary Forces, (which is the Helpe in this Case) 85 all Examples shew; That whatsoeuer Estate or Prince 36 doth rest vpon them; Hee may spread his Feathers37 for a time, but he will mew them foone after.

The Blefsing of Iudah and Iffachar will neuer meet; That the same People or Nation, should be both The Lions whelpe, and the Affe betweene Burthens: Neither will it be, that a People ouer-laid with Taxes, should euer become Valiant, and Martiall. It is true, that Taxes leuied by Confent of the Estate, doe abate 38 Mens Courage lesse; As it hath beene seene notably, in the Excises of the Low Countries; And in some degree, in the Subfidies of England. For you must note, that we speake now, of the Heart, and not of the Purse. So that, although the same Tribute and Tax,39 laid by Consent, or by Imposing, be all one to the Purse, 40 yet it workes diuersly vpon the Courage. 41 So that you may conclude; That no People, ouer-charged with Tribute, is fit for Empire,

Let States 42 that aime at Greatneffe, take heed how their Nobility 43 and Gentlemen, doe multiply too fast. For that maketh the Common Subject, grow to be a

a Lucian. Charon.

b Gen. xlix. 9, 14.

³⁹ The same Tribute and Tax. Tributa, 'tributes.'
40 To the Purse. Quoad Opes exhauriendas, 'as to the exhaustion of

⁴¹ Courage. Animos Subditorum, 'courage of the subjects.'
42 States. Regnis et Statibus, 'kingdoms and states.'
43 Nobility. Nobiles et Patricii, atque (quos vocamus) Generosi, 'nobles and patricians, and those we call gentlemen.'

IV. 1612.

pefant and base swaine driven out of heart, and but the Gentlemans laborer:

æt. 52.

like as it is in copices, where if you leave your staddels too thick, you shal neuer haue cleane vnderwood, but shrubbes and bushes.

And take away the middle people, and you take away the infantery, which is the nerue of an Armie: and you bring it to this, that not the hundreth pole will be fit for a helmet, and so great population and little strength.

Certainely Virgil coupled Armes and the Plough together well in the constitution of ancient Italy; Terra potens armis atque vbere glebæ:

For it is the Plough that yeeldeth the best souldier;

⁴⁴ A Peasant and base Swaine. Humilis et abjecta, 'low and base.'

Driuen out of Heart. Omitted in the Latin.
Labourer. Nobilium Mancipia et Operarii, 'the nobles' slaves and labourers.

⁴⁷ Staddles. Caudicum, sive Arborum majorum, 'trunks or greater trees'

⁴⁸ Cleane. Sincera et pura, 'sound and clean.'
49 But Shrubs and Bushes. Sed major pars in Vepres et Dumos degenerabit, 'but the greater part will degenerate into shrubs and bushes.'
50 Base. Vilis and ignava, 'base and sluggish.'

Poll. Caput, 'head.'

Nerue. Robur præcipuum, 'chief strength.'

After Ouermatch. Fere semper in Bellis, 'almost always in war.'

Middle People. Coloni, et inferioris Ordines Homines, 'farmers and men of the lower order.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Peafant, and Base Swaine,44 driven out of Heart,45 and in effect but the Gentlemans Labourer.46 Euen as you may fee in Coppice Woods; If you leave your staddles 47 too thick, you shall never have cleane48 Vnderwood, but Shrubs and Bushes. 49 So in Countries, if the Gentlemen be too many, the Commons will be base;50 And you will bring it to that, that not the hundred poll,⁵¹ will be fit for an Helmet: Especially as to the Infantery, which is the Nerue⁵² of an Army: And fo there will be Great Population, and Little Strength. This, which I speake of, hath been no where better seen, then by comparing of England and France; whereof England, though farre lesse in Territory and Population, hath been (neuerthelesse) an Ouermatch;53 În regard, the Middle People⁵⁴ of Éngland, make good Souldiers, which the Peafants of France doe not. And herein, the deuice of King Henry the Seuenth, (whereof I haue spoken largely in the History of his Life) was Profound,55 and Admirable; In making Farmes,56 and houses of Husbandry, of a Standard; That is, maintained with fuch a Proportion of Land vnto them, as may breed a Subject, to live in Convenient Plenty, and no Servile Condition;⁵⁷ And to keepe the Plough in the Hands of the Owners, and not meere Hirelings.⁵⁸ And thus indeed, you shall attaine to Virgils Character, which he giues to Ancient Italy.

—Terra potens Armis atque vbere Glebæ.a Neither is that State (which for any thing I know, is

a A land powerful in arms and fruitful of soil. Eneid. i. 531.

⁵⁸ Profound. Profunda prudentia excogitatum, 'devised with profound wisdom.

⁵⁶ Farmes. Prædia minora, 'smaller farms.'
57 Standard. . . . Seruile Condition. Quæ habeant certum, eumque Mediocrem Agri Modum annexum, qui distrahi non possit; Eo fine, ut ad Victum liberaliorem sufficiat, 'which should have a certain and moderate amount of land annexed to them, which might not be divided, that it might suffice for liberal living.'

58 And to keepe Hirelings. Utque Agricultura ab iis exerceretur, qui Domini fuerint Fundi, aut saltem Usu-fructuarii, non Conductitii, aut Mercenarii, 'so that husbandry might be exercised by the owners, or at least holders of the farm, and not by hired or paid men.'

1612.

æt. 52.

but how? maintained in plentie and in the hand of owners, and not of meere laborers.

The germ of the entire paragraph on the opposite page, -from By all meanes down to published, appeareth. on p. 481—will be found on p. 492.]

Nobilium, 'I mean the servants of noblemen.'

60 Armes. Peditatum, 'infantry.'

61 After Hospitality. Atque Famulitia, 'and household servants.'

62 Close. Obscura, et magis privata, 'obscure and more private.'

63 Liberall of. Facile et libenter largiuntur, 'easily and freely bestow.'

64 Empire. Imperii Magnitudinem, 'greatness of empire.'

65 Embrace. Imperii Jugo cohibere and franare, 'hold and govern by the voke of empire.'

the yoke of empire.'

66 It will faile suddainly. Diuturnitatem hac res non assequitur, 'this will not have long duration.'

V.

almost peculiar to England, and hardly to be found any where else, except it be perhaps in Poland) to be passed ouer; I meane the State of Free Servants and Attendants vpon Noblemen and Gentlemen; 59 which are no waies inferiour, vnto the Yeomanry, for Armes.60 And therefore, out of all Question, the Splendour, and Magnificence, and great Retinues, and Hospitality⁶¹ of Noblemen, and Gentlemen, received into Custome, doth much conduce, vnto Martiall Greatneffe. Whereas, contrariwife, the Close 62 and Referued living, of Noblemen, and Gentlemen, causeth a Penury of Military Forces.

By all meanes, it is to be procured, that the Trunck of Nebuchadnezzars Tree of Monarchy, be great enough, to beare the Branches, and the Boughes; That is, That the Naturall Subiects of the Crowne or State, beare a sufficient Proportion, to the Stranger Subiects, that they gouerne. Therfore all States, that are liberall of 63 Naturalization towards Strangers, are fit for Empire.64 For to thinke, that an Handfull of People, can, with the greatest Courage, and Policy in the World, embrace⁶⁵ too large Extent of Dominion, it may hold for a time, but it will faile fuddainly.⁶⁶ Spartans were a nice⁶⁷ People, in Point of Naturalization;68 whereby, while they kept their Compasse,69 they flood firme; 70 But when they did spread, and their Boughs were becommen too great, for their Stem, they became a Windfall vpon the fuddaine.⁷¹ Neuer

Nice. Parci and difficiles, 'sparing and difficult.'
Naturalization. In cooptandis novis Civibus, 'in receiving new citizens.'
Compasse. Intra parvos Limites dominati sunt, 'ruled within small boundaries.

⁷⁰ Firme. Res eorum firmæ fuerunt, et stabiles, 'their affairs were firm and stable.

The But when they did spread . . . suddaine, At postquam Limites suos cæpissent proferre, et latius dominari, quam ut Stirps Spartanorum, Turbam Exterorum, Imperio commode coercere posset, Potentia eorum corruit, 'but when they began to extend their bounds, and to rule so widely, that the Spartan race could not easily govern the crowd of foreigners, their Power fell to pieces.'

1612.

æt. 52.

[The germ of the passage on the opposite page will be found at p. 492.]

Sedentary and within-doores

Romans. Respublica Romana, 'the Roman Republic.'

Romans. Respublica Romana, 'the Roman Republic.'

Rottuna, 'their fortune sorted with this wise ordinance.'

Greatest. Toto Orbe amplissimum, 'greatest in the whole world.'

Honorum. Petitionis sive Honorum, 'right of holding office.'

Nations. Integris Nationibus, 'entire nations.'

Greatnesse. Proferendi imperii, 'extending empire.'

Romans. Regna et Provincias, 'kingdoms and provinces.'

Whole Compasse of Spaine. Hispania ipsa, 'Spain itself.'

1625.

V.

æt. 65.

any State was, in this Point, so open to receive Strangers, into their Body, as were the Romans.⁷² Therefore it forted with them accordingly;⁷³ For they grew to the greatest ⁷⁴ Monarchy. Their manner was, to grant Naturalization, (which they called Ius Ciuitatis) and to grant it in the highest Degree; That is, Not onely Ius Commercij, Ius Connubij, Ius Hæreditatis; But also, Ius Suffragij, and Ius Honorum.75 And this, not to Singular Persons alone, but likewise to whole Families; yea to Cities, and fometimes to Nations. 76 Adde to this, their Custome of Plantation of Colonies; whereby the Roman Plant, was remoued into the Soile, of other Nations. And putting both Constitutions together, you will say, that it was not the Romans that fpred vpon the World; But it was the World, that fpred vpon the Romans: And that was the fure Way of Greatneffe.77 I have marueiled sometimes at Spaine, how they claspe and containe so large Dominions, 78 with fo few Naturall Spaniards: But fure, the whole Compasse of Spaine, 79 is a very Great Body of a Tree; Farre aboue 80 Rome, Sparta, at the first. And besides, though they have not had that vsage, to Naturalize liberally; yet they have that, which is next to it; That is, To employ, almost indifferently, all Nations, in their Militia of ordinary Soldiers: yea, and fometimes in their Highest Commands.81 Nay, it seemeth at this instant, they are sensible of this want of Natiues; 82 as by the Pragmaticall Sanction, now 83 published, appeareth.

It is certaine, that Sedentary, and Within-doore84

⁸⁰ Far aboue. Cum longe ampliorem contineant Regionum Tractum quam, 'as it contains a much larger extent of countries, than.
81 And . . . commands. Quinetiam, summum Belli Imperium, haud raro, ad Duces, Natione non Hispanos, deferunt, 'nay also, they not seldom entrust the chief command of a war to generals not Spaniards by birth.'

⁸² After Natiues. Eique succurrere cupiisse, 'and desire to remedy it.'
88 Now. Hoc anno, 'in this year.'
84 Within-doore. Quæ non sub Dio, sed sub Tecto exercentur, 'which are practised not in the open air, but in a house.'

1612.

æt. 52.

Arts, and nice manufactures, that require rather the finger then the hand or arme, have in their nature a contrariety to a disposition militar[y]: and generally, all warlike people are a little idle, and loue danger better then pain: neither must they be too much broken of it, if they shall be preserved in vigor.

⁸⁵ Arts. Artes Mechanicas, 'mechanical arts.'
86 Idle. Feriari gaudent, 'enjoy being idle.'
87 They. Animos ipsorum, 'their spirits.'
88 Slaues. Non Ingenuos, sed Servos, 'not freeborn but slaves.'
89 Did rid. Quorum Laboribus . . . expediebantur, 'by whose toil were despatched.'
90 That Manciticum verse 'the use of slaves'

⁹⁰ That. Mancipiorum usus, 'the use of slaves.'

⁹¹ By the Christian Law. Post legem Christianam receptam, 'since the Christian law has been received.

⁹² For that purpose. Propterea alliciendi, aut, for that purpose to be invited, or.'

V.

Arts,85 and delicate Manufactures (that require rather the Finger, then the Arme) haue, in their Nature, a Contrariety, to a Military disposition. And generally, all Warlike People, are a little idle;86 And loue Danger better then Trauaile; Neither must they be too much broken of it, if they⁸⁷ shall be preserved in vigour. Therefore, it was great Aduantage, in the Ancient States of Sparta, Athens, Rome, and others, that they had the vie of Slaues,88 which commonly did rid89 those Manufactures. But that 90 is abolished, in greatest part, by the Christian Law.91 That which commeth nearest to it, is, to leaue those Arts chiefly to Strangers, (which for that purpose⁹² are the more easily to be received) and to containe, the principall Bulke⁹⁸ of the vulgar Natiues, within those three kinds, Tillers of the Ground; Free Servants; and Handy-Crafts-Men, of Strong, and Manly Arts, 94 as Smiths, Masons, Carpenters, &c; Not reckoning Professed Souldiers.

But aboue all, for Empire and Greatnesse, 95 it importeth most; That a Nation doe professe Armes, as their principall Honour, Study, and Occupation.96 For the Things, which we formerly haue spoken of, are but Habilitations towards Armes: And what is Habilitation without Intention and Act? Romulus, after his death (as they report, or faigne) fent a Prefent to the Romans; That, aboue all, they should intend Armes; And then, they should proue the greatest *Empire* 97 of the World. The Fabrick 98 of the State

⁹⁸ Principall Bulke. Plebs, 'commonalty.'
94 Manly Arts. Quorum Opera Robur et Lacertos viriles postulant, whose work demands strength and manly arms.'

⁹⁵ Empire and Greatnesse. Imperii magnitudinem, 'greatness of Empire.

⁹⁶ Study and Occupation. Institutum Vitæ primarium, et in præcipuo Honore habitum, 'their principal mode of life and held in the highest honour.'

⁹⁷ Greatest Empire. In Caput Orbis Terrarum Urbs eorum insurgeret, 'their city should rise to the head of the world.'

⁹⁸ Fabrick. Fabrica universa, 'the whole fabric.'

1612.

æt. 52.

99 After End. Ut Cives sui Belligeratores essent, 'that their citizens should be warriors.'

105 It needeth not to be Stood vpon. Verbis non indigeat, 'does not need words.'

¹⁰⁰ Flesh. Idem erat Institutum, sed non tam constans aut diuturnum.

^{&#}x27;had the same custom, but not so constantly nor so long.'

101 Turks. Lege sua paululum extimulati, 'urged on a little by their law 102 Haue it. Illud adhuc retinet at profitetur, 'still retain and professit 108 Plaine. Liquida, et manifesta, 'clear and plain.'

104 Intendeth. In quo plurimum impendit Studii, 'in the study which he most considers.'

of Sparta, was wholly (though not wifely) framed, and composed, to that Scope and End. 99 The Persians and Macedonians, had it for a flash. 100 The Galls, Germans, Goths, Saxons, Normans, and others, had it for a Time. The Turks 101 haue it, at this day, though in great Declination. Of Christian Europe, they that haue it, 102 are, in effect, onely the Spaniards. But it is so plaine, 103 That every Man profiteth in that hee most intendeth, 104 that it needeth not to be flood vpon. 105 It is enough to point at it; That no Nation, which doth not directly professe Armes, 106 may looke to haue Greatnesse fall into their Mouths. 107 And, on the other side, it is a most Certaine Oracle of Time; That those States, that continue long in that Profession¹⁰⁸ (as the Romans and Turks principally have done) do wonders. 109 And those, that have professed Armes 110 but for an Age, haue notwithstanding, commonly, attained that Greatnesse in that Age, which maintained them long after, when their Profession and Exercise¹¹¹ of Armes hath growen to decay.

Incident to this Point is; For a State, to have those Lawes or Customes, which may reach forth vnto them, iust Occasions (as may be pretended) of Warre. For there is that Iustice112 imprinted, in the Nature of Men, that they enter not vpon Wars (whereof fo many Calamities doe ensue) but vpon some, at the least Specious, 113 Grounds and Quarells. The Turke, hath

110 Professed Armes. Bellica Gloria floruere, 'flourished by warlike

¹⁰⁶ Armes. Arma et Militiam, iisque præcipue studeat et incumbat, 'arms and warfare, and principally studies and pays attention thereto.'

107 Greatnesse fall into their Mouths. Insignem aliqum Imperii Magnitudinem, 'any remarkable greatness of empire.'

108 Profession. Professione et studiis, 'profession and study.'

109 Wonders. Miros in Imperio amplificando facere Progressus, 'make

wonderful progress in increasing their empire.

glory.'

111 Profession and Exercise. Disciplina, 'training.'
112 Iustice. Justitiæ Apprehensio, 'understanding of justice.'
113 At the least Specious. Gravem ob Caussam, saltem speciosam, 'for a serious ground or at least a specious one.'

1612.

æt. 52.

No body can be healthfull without exercise, neither naturall body, nor politike; and to the politike body of a Kingdome or estate,

a ciuill warre is as the heate of a feuer; but an honourable forraine warre is like

¹¹⁴ Sit. Torpeat, aut tardet, 'be sluggish or slow.'
115 Aids. Omitted in the Latin.

1625. V. æt. 65.

at hand, for Cause of Warre, the Propagation of his Law or Sect: A Quarell that he may alwaies Command. The Romans, though they esteemed, the Extending the Limits of their Empire, to be Great Honour to their Generalls, when it was done, yet they neuer rested vpon that alone, to begin a Warre. First therefore, let Nations, that pretend to Greatnesse, haue this; That they be fensible of Wrongs, either vpon Borderers, Merchants, or Politique Ministers; And that they sit¹¹⁴ not too long vpon a Prouocation. Secondly, let them be prest, and ready, to give Aids115 and Succours, to their Confederates: As it euer was with the Romans: In fo much, as if the Confederate, had Leagues Defensiue with divers other States, and vpon Inuasion offered, did implore their Aides seuerally, yet the Romans would ever bee the formost, and leaue it to none Other to haue the Honour. As for the Warres, which were anciently made, on the behalfe, of a kinde of Partie, or tacite Conformite of Estate, I doe not see how they may be well instified: As when the Romans made a Warre for the Libertie of Grecia: Or when the Lacedemonians, and Athenians, made Warres, to fet vp or pull downe Democracies, and Oligarchies: Or when Warres were made by Forrainers, 116 vnder the pretence of Iustice, 117 or Protection, to deliuer the Subjects of others, from Tyrannie, and Oppression; And the like. 118 Let it suffice, That no Estate expect to be Great, that is not awake, vpon any iust Occasion of Arming.

No Body can be healthfull without Exercise, neither Naturall Body, nor Politique: And certainly, to a Kingdome or Estate, a Iust and Honourable Warre, is the true Exercise. A Ciuill Warre, indeed, is like the Heat of a Feauer; But a Forraine Warre, is like

¹¹⁶ Forrainers. Rebuspublicis aut Principibus, 'states or princes.'
117 Iustice. Omitted in the Latin.
118 Oppression; And the like. Omitted in the Latin.

1612.

æt. 52.

the heate of exercise. At least, discoueries, nauigations, honourable fuccours of other States may keepe health: For in a slothfull peace, both courages will effeminate, and maners corrupt.

¹¹⁹ Slothfull. Deside atque torpente, 'Slothful and torpid.'
120 Tired out. Delassasset, et attrivisset, 'tired and worn out.'

¹²¹ See. Ex multis Exemplis patet, 'is clear from many examples.'

122 Arrested the greatnesse of the Turke. Circulum in Naribus Tures

possuit, 'put a ring in the nose of the Turk.'

123 Princes or States. Omitted in the Latin.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

the Heat of Exercise,

and ferueth to keepe the Body in Health: For in a Slothfull¹¹⁹ Peace, both Courages will effeminate, and Manners Corrupt. But howfoeuer it be for Happinesse, without all Question, for Greatnesse, it maketh, to bee still, for the most Part, in Armes: And the Strength of a Veteran Armie, (though it be a chargeable Businesse) alwaies on Foot, is that, which commonly giueth the Law; Or at least the Reputation amongst all Neighbour States; As may well bee seene in Spaine; which hath had, in one Part or other, a Veteran Armie, almost continually, now by the space of Six-score yeeres.

Monarchy. Cicero writing to Atticus, of Pompey his Preparation against Cæfar, saith; Consilium Pompeij plane Themistocleum est; Putat enim, qui Mari potitur, eum Rerum potiri.a And, without doubt, Pompey had tired out 120 Cæfar, if vpon vaine Considence, he had not lest that Way. We see 121 the great Essects of Battailes by Sea. The Battaile of Assium decided the Empire of the World. The Battaile of Lepanto arrested the Greatnesse of the Turke. 122 There be many Examples, where Sea-Fights have beene Finall to the warre; But this is, when Princes or States, 123 have set vp their Rest, vpon the Battailes. 124 But thus much is certaine; That hee that Commands the Sea, is at great liberty, and may take as much, and as little of the Warre, as he will. Whereas those, that be strongest by land, are many times neverthelesse in great Straights. Surely, at this Day, with vs of Europe, the Vantage of Strength at Sea (which is one

The counsel of Pompey is evidently that of Themistocles: for he thinks that he who is master of the sea will rule all things. Cicero. Ad Atticum. x. 8.

¹²⁴ Set vp their Rest, vpon the Battailes. Alea hujusmodi Praliorum, totius Belli Fortuna commissa est, 'the whole fortune of war is set upon battles of this kind.'

1612.

æt. 52.

126 Great. Summi, ad Revum Fastigia, momenti, 'of great importance for attaining the highest place.

Thesauri et Opes, 'treasures and wealth.' 126 Wealth.

¹²⁷ Martiall Encouragement. Ad Animos faciendos, 'to give courage.'
128 Some Degrees, and Orders of Chiualry. Ordines quosdam Honorificos Militiæ, 'some honourable orders of knighthood.'

¹²⁹ Conferred promiscuously. Communes, 'common to.'
130 Soldiers, and no Soldiers. Armis et Togæ, 'arms and the gown.'
181 Maimed. Emeritis et Mutilatis, 'worn out and maimed.'
182 Monuments. Monumenta magnifica, 'magnificent monuments.'
183 Crowns and Garlands Personal. Corona Civicæ, Militares, singulis concessæ, 'civic crowns; military crowns conferred on individuals.

of the Principall Dowries of this Kingdome of Great Brittaine) is Great: 125 Both because, Most of the Kingdomes of Europe, are not meerely Inland, but girt with the Sea, most part of their Compasse; And because, the Wealth¹²⁶ of both *Indies*, seemes in great Part, but an Accessary, to the Command of the Seas.

The Warres of Latter Ages, seeme to be made in the Darke, in Respect of the Glory and Honour, which reflected vpon Men, from the Warres in Ancient Time. There be now, for Martiall Encouragement,127 fome Degrees and Orders of Chiualry;128 which neuerthelesse, are conferred promiscuously, 129 vpon Soldiers, and no Soldiers; 130 And some Remembrance perhaps vpon the Scutchion; And some Hospitals for Maimed¹³¹ Soldiers; And such like Things. But in Ancient Times; The Trophies erected vpon the Place of the Victory; The Funerall Laudatiues and Monuments¹³² for those that died in the Wars; The Crowns and Garlands Perfonal; 133 The Stile of Emperour, which the Great Kings of the World after borrowed; 134 The Triumphes 135 of the Generalls vpon their Returne; 136 The great Donatiues and Largesses vpon the Disbanding of the Armies; were Things able to enflame all Mens Courages. 137 But aboue all, That of the Triumph, amongst the Romans, was not Pageants or Gauderie, but one of the Wisest and Noblest Institutions, that euer was. For it contained three Things; Honour¹³⁸ to the Generall; Riches to the Treasury out of the Spoiles;

¹⁸⁴ After Borrowed. A Belli Ducibus, 'from commanders in war.'
185 Triumphes. Celebres Triumphi, 'crowded triumphs.'
186 Of Generalls vpon their Returne. Redeuntium Ducum, Bellis prospere confectis, 'of generals returning after successfully finishing a war.'
187 Enflame all Mens Courages. Hæc (inquam) tot et tanta fuerunt, et tam insigni splendore coruscantia, ut Pectoribus Mortalium etiam maxime conglaciatis. Ignicules subdere escape ad Bellum inflamace totamint conglaciatis, Igniculos subdere, eaque ad Bellum inflamare potuerint. these, I say, were so many and so great, and shone with so much splendour, that they could set fire to the minds of mortals, however frozen, and inflame them to war.'

138 Honour. Decus et gloriam, 'honour and glory.'

1612.

æt. 52.

States liberall of naturalization, are capable of greatnesse; and the iealous states that rest upon the first tribe and stirpe, quickly want body to carrie the boughes and branches.

Many are the ingredients into the receit for greatnesse. No man can by care taking adde a cubit to his stature, in the little modell of a mans body. But certainly in the great frame of Kingdomes and Commonwealths, it is in the power of Princes or Estates by ordinances and constitutions, and manners which they may introduce, to sowe greatnesse to their posteritie and succession. But these things are commonly lest to chance.

189 Actuall Triumphs. Honorem ipsius Triumphi, 'the honour of an actual triumph.'

FINIS.



1625. V.

And Donatiues to the Army. But that Honour, perhaps, were not fit for Monarchies; Except it be in the Person of the Monarch himselfe, or his Sonnes; As it came to passe, in the Times of the Roman Emperours, who did impropriate the Actuall Triumphs 139 to Themselues, and their Sonnes, for such Wars, as they did atchieue in Person: And lest onely, for Wars atchieued by Subjects, some Triumphall Garments, and Ensignes, to the Generall.

[Expanded in 1625 Edition, and transposed to pp. 479, 481.]

To conclude; No Man can, by Care taking (as the Scripture saith) adde a Cubite to his Stature; in this little Modell of a Mans Body: But in the Great Frame of Kingdomes, and Common Wealths, it is in the Power of Princes, or Estates, to adde Amplitude and Greatnesse to their Kingdomes. For by introducing such Ordinances, Constitutions, and Customes, as we have now touched, they may fow Greatnesse, to their Posteritie, and Succession. But these Things are commonly not Observed,140 but left to take their Chance.

140 After Obserued. Apud Principes, 'by princes.'



A HARMONY

OF THE

FOURTH GROUP

OF

EIGHTEEN

ESSAYS.

- 41. OF TRUTH.
- 42. OF REVENGE.
- 43. Of Adversity.
- 44. OF SIMULATION AND DISSIMULATION.
- 45. OF ENVY.
- 46. OF BOLDNESS.
- 47. OF TRAVEL.
- 48. OF DELAYS.
- 49. OF INNOVATIONS.
- 50. OF Suspicion.

- 51. OF PLANTATIONS.
- 52. OF PROPHECIES.
- 53. OF MASQUES AND TRIUMPHS.
- 54. OF Usury.
- 55. OF BUILDING.
- 56. OF GARDENS.
- 57. OF ANGER.
- 58. OF VICISSITUDES OF THINGS.

First published in 1625.

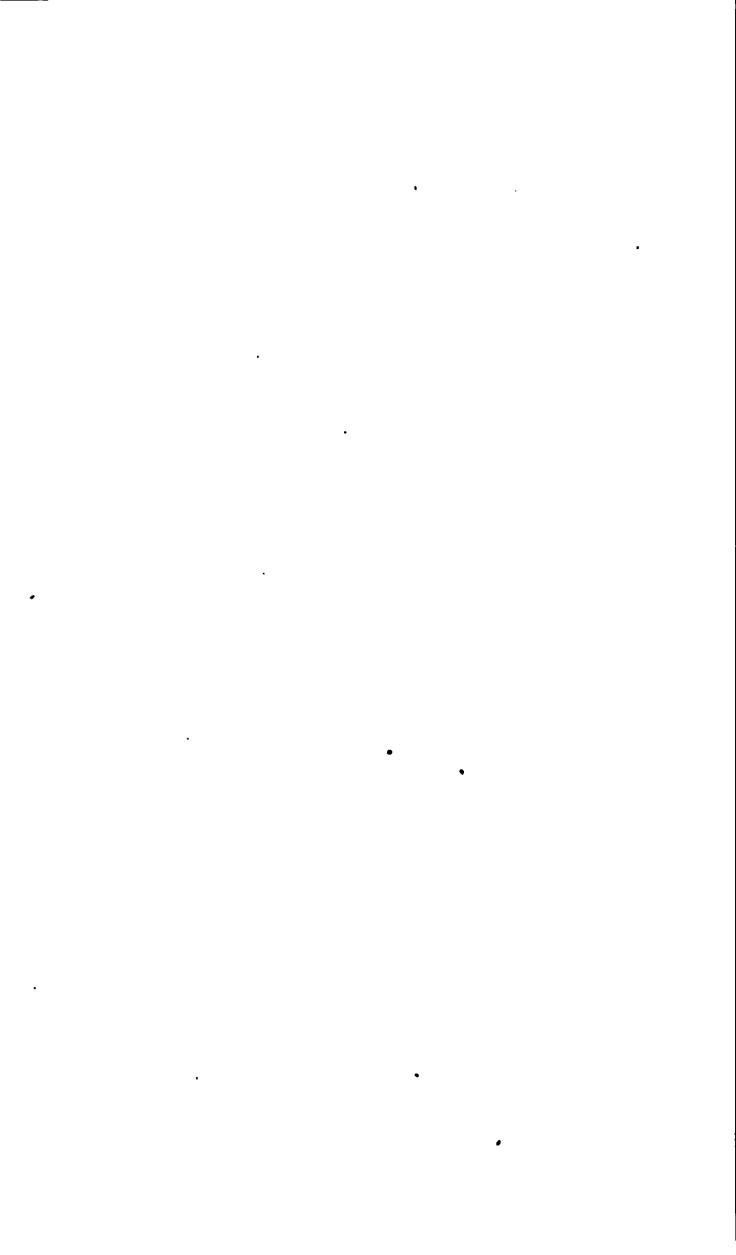
Collated with the posthumous Latin Fdition of 1638.

To which is added

A Fragment of an Essay,

Of Fame.

First published in Resuscitatio, in 1657.



THE

ESSAYES

OR

COVNSELS,

CIVILL AND

MORALL,

O F

FRANCIS LO. VERVLAM,
VISCOVNT St. ALBAN.

Newly written.



LONDON,
Printed by Iohn Haviland for
Hanna Barret.
1625.

THE EPISTLE DEDICATORIE.

TO

THE RIGHT HONORABLE MY VERY GOOD Lo. THE DVKE of Buckingham his Grace, Lo.

High Admirall of England.

EXCELLENT LO.

ALOMON faies; A good Name is as a precious oyntment; And I affure my felfe, fuch wil your Graces Name bee, with Posteritie. For your Fortune, and Merit both, have beene Eminent. And you have planted Things, that are like to last. I doe now publish my Essays:

which, of all my other workes, haue beene most Cur-, rant: For that, as it feemes, they come home, to Mens Bufineffe, and Bofomes. I have enlarged them, both in Number, and Weight; So that they are indeed a New Worke. I thought it therefore agreeable, to my Affection, and Obligation to your Grace, to prefix your Name before them, both in English, and in Latine. For I doe conceive, that the Latine Volume of them, (being in the Vniuerfall Language) may last, as long as Bookes last. My Inflauration, I dedicated to the King: My Historie of HENRY the Seventh, (which I have now also translated into Latine) and my Portions of Naturall History, to the Irina And these I dedicate to your Grace; Being of the best Fruits, that by the good Encrease, which God gives to my Pen and Labours, I could yeeld. God leade your Grace by the Hand.

Your Graces most obliged and faithfull Servant, FR. St. ALBAN.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

1. Of Truth.

HAT is Truth; said jesting Pilate; And would not stay for an Answer. Certainly there be, that delight in Giddinesse; And count it a Bondage, to fix1 a Beleefe; Affecting Freewill in Thinking, as well as in Acting. And though the Sects of Philosophers of that Kinde be gone, yet there remaine certaine discoursing2 Wits, which are of the same veines, though there be not so much Bloud in them, as was in those of the Ancients. But it is not onely the Difficultie, and Labour, which Men take in finding out of Truth; Nor againe, that when it is found, it imposeth⁸ vpon mens Thoughts; that doth bring Lies in fauour: But a naturall, though corrupt Loue, of the Lie it selse. One of the later Schoole of the Grecians, examineth the matter, and is at a stand, to thinke what should be in it, that men should loue Lies; Where neither they make for Pleasure, as with Poets; Nor for Aduantage, as with the Merchant; but for the Lies fake. But I cannot tell: This same Truth, is a Naked, and Open day light, that doth not shew, the Masques, and Mummeries, and Triumphs⁴ of the world, halfe so Stately, and daintily, as Candlelights.⁵ Truth may perhaps come to the price of a Pearle, that sheweth best by day: But it will not rise, to the price of a Diamond, or Carbuncle, that sheweth best in varied lights. A mixture of a Lie doth euer adde Pleasure. Doth

a John xviii. 38.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Fix. Fide fixa aut Axiomatibus Constantibus, constringi, 'to be restrained by a fixed faith or constant axioms.'
2 Discoursing. Ventosa et Discursantia, 'windy and discoursing.'
3 Imposeth. Quæ. imponitur Captivitas, 'the captivity that it

imposeth.'

Triumphs. Omitted in the Latin.

⁵ Candlelights Tædæ, Lucernæque Nocturnæ, 'torches and nocturnal lamps.

1625.

æt. 65.

any man doubt, that if there were taken out of Mens Mindes, Vaine Opinions, Flattering Hopes, False valuations, Imaginations as one would, and the like; but it would leave the Mindes, of a Number of Men, poore shrunken Things; full of Melancholy, and Indisposition, and vnpleasing to themselues? One of the Fathers, in great Seuerity, called Poesie, Vinum Dæmonum; " because it filleth the Imagination, and yet it is; but with the shadow of a Lie. But it is not the Lie, that passeth through the Minde, but the Lie that finketh in,6 and fetleth in it, that doth the hurt, fuch as we spake of before. But howfoeuer these things are thus, in mens depraued Iudgements, and Affections, yet Truth, which onely doth iudge it felfe, teacheth, that the Inquirie of Truth, which is the Loue-making, or Wooing of it; The knowledge of *Truth*, which is the Presence of it; and the Beleese of *Truth*, which is the Enioying of it; is the Soueraigne Good of humane Nature. first Creature of God, in the workes of the Dayes, was the Light of the Sense; The last, was the Light of Reason; And his Sabbath Worke, euer since, is the Illumination of his Spirit. First he breathed Light, vpon the Face, of the Matter or Chaos; Then he breathed Light, into the Face of Man; and still he breatheth and inspireth Light, into the Face of his Chosen. The Poet, that beautified the Sect, that was otherwise inferiour to the rest, saith yet excellently well: It is a pleafure to stand vpon the shore, and to fee ships tost vpon the Sea: A pleasure to stand in the window of a Castle, and to see a Battaile, and the Adventures thereof, below: But no pleasure is comparable, to the standing, vpon the vantage ground of Truth: (A hill not to be

a It is not certain to whom Bacon alludes; probably either Jerome, Letters to Damasus, 146; or Augustine, Confessio, i. 16.—See Mr. W. A. Wright's note at length at p. 289 of his edition.

⁶ Sinketh in. Quod a Mente imbibitur, 'which is drunk in by the mind.'
7 Beleefe. Veritatis Receptionem cum Assensu, 'the receiving of truth with
8 Enjoying. Fruitio et Amplexus, 'enjoying and embrace of it.' [assent.'
9 Suave est, &c. This is given merely in paraphrase, not as a literal quotation from Lucretius, De rerum Natura, ii. 1.

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

commanded, and where the Ayre is alwaies cleare and ferene;) And to fee the Errours, and Wandrings, and Mists, and Tempests, in the vale below: So alwaies, that this prospect, be with Pitty, and not with Swelling, or Pride. Certainly, it is Heauen vpon Earth, to haue a Mans Minde Moue in Charitie, Rest in Proudience,

and Turne vpon the Poles of Truth.

To passe from Theologicall, and Philosophicall *Truth*, to the *Truth*¹⁰ of ciuill Businesse; It will be acknowledged, euen by those, that practize it not, that cleare and Round¹¹ dealing, is the Honour¹² of Mans Nature; And that Mixture of Falshood, is like Allay 13 in Coyne of Gold and Siluer;14 which may make the Metall worke the better, but it embaseth it. For these winding, and crooked courses, are the Goings of the Serpent; which goeth bafely 15 vpon the belly, and not vpon the There is no Vice, that doth so couer a Man with Shame, as to be found false, and perfidious. And therefore Mountaigny faith prettily,16 when he enquired. the reason, why the word of the Lie, should be such a Difgrace, and fuch an Odious Charge? Saith he, If it be well weighed, To fay that a man lieth, is as much to fay, as that he is braue towards God, and a Coward towards men.a For a Lie faces God, and shrinkes from Man. Surely the Wickednesse of Falshood, and Breach of Faith, cannot possibly be so highly expressed, as in that it shall be the last Peale, to call the Judgements of God, vpon the Generations of Men, It being foretold that when Christ commeth, He shall not finde Faith vpon the Earth.b

~ : 36 } · ·

^a Montaigne, Essais, ii. 18, p.

b Luke xviii. 8.

¹⁰ Truth (of civil business). Veritatem, aut potuis Veracitatem, 'truth, or rather truthfulness.

¹¹ Round. Minime fucatam, 'not painted (counterfeit).'
12 Honour. Præcipium Decus, 'chief honour.'
13 Allay. Plumbeæ Materiæ, 'leaden matter.'
14 Coin of Gold and Siluer. Omitted in the Latin.

³⁵ Basely. Omitted in the Latin.
16 Prettily. Acutissime, 'most acutely.'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

Of Renenge.

Euenge is a kinde of Wilde Iustice; which

the more Mans Nature runs to, the more ought Law¹ to weed it out. For as for the first Wrong, it doth but offend the Law; but the Revenge of that wrong, putteth the Law out of Office.2 Certainly, in taking Revenge, A Man is but euen with his Enemy; But in passing it ouer, he is Superiour: For it is a Princes part to Pardon. And Salomon, I am sure, saith, It is the glory of a Man to passe by an offence.a That which is past, is gone, and Irreuocable; And wise Men haue Enough to doe, with things present, and to come: Therefore, they doe but trifle with themselues,4 that labour in past matters. There is no man, doth a wrong, for the wrongs fake; But therby to purchase himselfe, Profit, or Pleasure, or Honour, or the like.⁵ Therfore why should I be angry with a Man, for louing himselse better then mee? if any Man should doe wrong, meerely out of ill nature, why? yet it is but like the Thorn, or Bryar, which prick, and scratch, because they can doe no other.6 The most Tolerable Sort of Revenge, is for those wrongs which there is no Law to remedy: But then, let a man take heed, the Revenge be fuch, as there is no law to

3 Gone and irreuocable. In integrum restitui non potest, 'cannot be restored entirely.

e Prov. xix. 11.

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Law. Legibus severis, 'severe laws.'
2 Putteth out of Office. Auctoritate sua plane spoliat, 'clearly strips it of its authority.

¹ Therefore, they doe . . . with themselves. Nugantur igitur, et se frustr.. conturbant 'they trifle therefore, and disturb themselves to no purpose." Or the like. Omitted in the Latin.

⁶ Because they can do no other. Quia natura sua utuntur, because they act according to their nature.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

punish: Else, a Mans Enemy, is still before hand, And it is two for one.7 Some, when they take Revenge, are Desirous the party should know, whence it commeth: This 8 is the more Generous. For the Delight feemeth to be, not so much in doing the Hurt, as in Making the Party repent: But Base and Crasty Cowards, are like the Arrow, that flyeth in the Darke. Duke of Florence, had a Desperate Saying,9 against Perfidious or Neglecting Friends, as if those wrongs were vnpardonable: 10 You shall reade (saith he) that we are commanded to forgive our Enemies; But you never read, that wee are commanded, to forgive our Friends. But yet the Spirit of *Iob*, was in a better tune; 11 Shall wee (faith he) take good at Gods Hands, and not be content to take euill alfo? And so of Friends in a proportion. This is certaine; That a Man that studieth Revenge, keepes his owne Wounds greene,12 which otherwise would heale, and doe well. Publique Reuenges, are, for the most part, Fortunate; As that for the Death of Cæsar; For the Death of Pertinax; for the Death of Henry the Third 13 of France; And many more. But in pri-uate Revenges it is not so. Nay rather, Vindictive Persons liue the Life of Witches; who as they are Mischieuous, So end 14 they Infortunate.



Job ii. 10.

⁷ Iwo for one. Ipse sibi Panam conduplicat, 'he doubles the punishment

⁸ This. Iste affectus, 'this disposition.'

⁹ Had a Desperate Saying. Acutissimum telum vibravit, 'brandished a very sharp weapon.'

10 As if those wrongs were vnpardonable. Omitted in Latin.

11 Was in a better tune. Loquitur meliora, 'says what is better.'

12 Keep green. Refricare, 'rub open again.'

13 Henry the Third. Quarti, 'fourth.'

14 After End. Plerunque, 'generally.'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

Of Adnersitie:

T was an high speech of Seneca, (after the manner of the Stoickes) That the good things, which belong to Prosperity, are to be wished; but the good things, that belong to Adversity, are to be admired. Bona Rerum Secundarum, Optabilia; Adversarum, Mirabilia.a Certainly if Miracles, be the Command ouer Nature, they appeare most in Aduersity. It is yet a higher speech of his, then the other, (much too high for a Heathen) It is true greatneffe, to haue in one, the Frailty of a Man, and the Security of a Verè magnum, habere Fragilitatem Hominis, Securitatem Dei. This would have done better in Poefy; where Transcendences are more allowed. And the Poets indeed, haue beene busy with it; 2 For it is, in effect, the thing, which is figured in that Strange Fiction, of the Ancient Poets, which feemeth not to be without mystery; Nay, and to haue some approach, to³ the State of a Christian: That Hercules, when hee went to vnbinde Prometheus, (by whom Human Nature is represented) failed the length of the great Ocean, in an Earthen Pot, or Pitcher: Liuely describing Christian Resolution; that saileth, in the fraile Barke of the Flesh, thorow the Waues 4 of the World. But to speake in a Meane.⁵ The Vertue of *Prosperitie*, is Temper-

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

^a Seneca, Epistles, lxvi.

b Seneca, Epistles, liii.

¹ High speech. Grande prorsus sonabat . . . cum diceret, 'struck 2 gh note . . . when he said.'

high note . . . when he said.'

Beene busy with it. Intactum non reliquerunt, 'have not lest this untouched.'

³ Approach, to. Non obscure referre, 'refers to not obscurely.'
4 Waves. Fluctus, undique circumfusos, 'waves surrounding it on every

⁵ Speake in a Meane. Ut a Granditate verborum, ad Mediocritatem & scendamus, 'to descend from grandeur of words to a mean.'

V. · 1625. æt. 65.

ance; The Vertue of Adversity, is Fortitude: which in Morals is the more Heroicall Vertue. Prosperity is the Blessing of the Old Testament; Adversity is the Blesfing of the New; which carrieth the greater Benediction,8 and the Clearer Reuelation of Gods Fauour. Yet, euen in the old Testament, if you Listen to Dauids Harpe, you shall heare as many Herselike Ayres, as Carols: And the Pencill of the holy Ghost, hath laboured more, in describing, the Afflictions of Iob, than the Felicities of Salomon. Prosperity is not without many Feares and Distastes; And Adversity is not without Comforts and Hopes. Wee fee in Needleworkes, and Imbroideries, 10 It is more pleasing, to haue a Liuely Worke, vpon a Sad and Solemne¹¹ Grounde; ¹² then to haue a Darke and Melancholy Worke, 18 vpon a Lightsome Ground: Iudge therfore, of the Pleasure of the Heart, by the Pleasure of the Eye. Certainly, Vertue is like pretious Odours, most fragrant, when they are incenfed, or crushed: For Prosperity doth best discouer Vice; But Aduersity doth best discouer Vertue.



⁶ Is the Blessing. Ad Benedictiones pertinent, 'belongs to the blessings.'
7 Blessings of the New. Novi beatitudines, 'beatitudes of the New.'
8 Which carrieth the greater Benediction. Quæ, et reipsa majores sunt, 'which [the beatitudes] are in themselves greater.
9 As many Herselike ayers, as. Plures invenias Threnos, quam, 'you will find more dirges than.'
10 Imbroideries. Omitted in the Latin.
11 Sad and Salaman Coloris magic et as it to be led to the blessings.'

¹¹ Sad and Solemne. Coloris magis opaci, 'of a darker colour.'
12 Ground. Stamen telæ, 'the warp of the web.'
13 Worke. Imagines, 'figures.'

٧.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

e. Of Simulation and Dissimulation.

Isimulation is but a faint kind of Policy, or Wisdome; 2 For it asketh a strong Wit, and a strong Heart, to know, when to tell Truth, and to doe it. Therfore it is the weaker

Sort of Politicks, that are the great Dissemblers.

Tacitus 4 faith; Liuia forted well, with the Arts of her Husband, and Dissimulation of her Sonne: a Attributing Arts or Policy 5 to Augustus, and Dissimulation to Tiberius. And againe, when Mucianus encourageth6 Vespasian, to take Arms against Vitellius, he saith; We rife not, against the Picrcing Iudgment of Augustus, nor the Extreme Caution or Closenesse of Tiberius. These Properties of Arts or Policy,8 and Dissimulation or Closenesse, are indeed Habits and Faculties, seuerall, 10 and to be distinguished. For if a Man, haue that Penetration of Iudgment,11 as he can discerne, what Things are to be laid open, and what to be fecretted, and what to be shewed at Halfe lights, and to whom

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

1 Faint kind. Compendium quoddam, et Pars infirmior, 'a kind of shortening and weaker part of.'

² Policy or Wisdome. Artium Civilium, 'of political arts.'

Boe it. Id facere audeat, 'to dare to do it.'

4 Tacitus. Quod Discrimen, bene apud Tacitum, Casarem Augustum inter, et Tiberium, adnotatum est. Etenim de Livia sic ait, 'The difference between Cæsar Augustus, and Tiberius is well marked in Tacitus, is he says thus of Livia.'

5 Arts or Policy. Artes imperii, 'arts of government.'
6 When Mucianus encourageth. Mucianum inducit hert. atem. 'he brings in Mucianus, encouraging.'
7 Extreme Caution or Closenesse. Cautissimam senectutem, 'extremeis

cautious old age.

- 8 Arts or Policy. Artium Civilium, 'political arts.'
 9 Dissimulation or Closenesse. Simulationum, 'simulation.' 10 Habits and Faculties, seuerall. Omitted in the Latin.
- 11 Penetration of Iudgment. Falicis Acuminis, tanta que Perspicacia, de such happy sharpness and penetration.

a Tacitus. Annals. v. 1.

b Tacitus. History. ii. 76.

 \mathbf{V} . 1625. æt. 65.

and when, (which indeed are Arts of State, and Arts of Life,12 as Tacitus a well calleth them) to him, A Habit of Difsimulation, is a Hinderance, and a Poorenesse.13 But if a Man cannot obtaine to that Iudgment,14 then it is left to him,15 generally, to be Close, and a Diffembler. For where a Man cannot choose, or vary 16 in Particulars, there it is good to take the fafest and wariest Way¹⁷ in generall; Like the Going softly by one that cannot well fee. Certainly the ablest Men, that euer were, haue had all an Opennesse, and Francknesse of dealing; And a name of Certainty, 18 and Veracity; But then they were like Horses, well mannaged; For they could tell passing well, when to stop, or turne: And at fuch times, when they thought the Case indeed, required Dissimulation, 19 if then they vsed it, it came to passe, that the sormer Opinion, spred abroad of their good Faith, and Clearnesse of dealing, made them almost Inuisible.

There be three degrees, of this Hiding, and Vailing of a Mans Selfe. 20 The first Clofenesse, Reservation, and Secrecy; 21 when a Man leaueth himselfe without Observation, or without Hold to be taken, what he is.22 The fecond Dissimulation, in the Negative; when a man lets fall Signes, and Arguments, that he is not,

Mr. W. A. Wright in his edition states, 'It is difficult to say whether Bacon had in his mind the egregium publicum et bonas domi artes of Tac. Ann. iii. 70, or the studia fori et civilium artius decus of Agr. c. 39.'

¹² Arts of State, and Arts of Life. Artes Politicæ, et Civiles.
13 Poorenesse. Omitted in the Latin.
14 That Iudgment. Hunc Iudicii et Discretionis Gradum, 'to this degree of judgment and discretion.'

¹⁵ Lest to him. Tanquam tutissimum, 'as the sasest course.'
16 Or vary. Omitted in the Latin.
17 Take the sasest and wariest Way. Caute insistere tutissimum est, 'it is safest to proceed cautiously.

¹⁸ Name of Certainty. Omitted in the Latin.

¹⁹ Dissimulation. Dissimulationem Profundam. 'profound dissimulation.'
20 Mans Selfe. Consilia et Mentem, 'plans and mind.'
21 Reservation and Secrecy. Omitted in the Latin.

When a Man leaueth himselfe. ... what he is. Cum quis sensus Animi sui premit, adeoque relinquit in æquilibrio, ut in quam partem propendent, nemo facile conjecerit. When a man represses his opinions, and leaves it so evenly balanced that no one can easily guess to which side he is inclined.

1625.

æt. 65.

that he is. And the third Simulation, in the Affirmatiue; when a Man industriously, and expressely,23 faigns, and pretends to be, that he is not.

For the first of these, Secrecy: It is indeed, the Vertue of a Confessour; And assuredly, the Secret Man. heareth many Confessions; For who will open himselfe. to a Blab or a Babler? But if a Man be thought Secret, it inuiteth Discouerie; 24 As the more Close Aire, sucketh in the more Open: And as in Confession, the Reuealing is not for worldly vse, but for the Ease of a Mans heart, so Secret Men come to the Knowledge of Many Things, in that kinde; while Men rather discharge their Mindes, then impart their Mindes. In few words, Mysteries are due to Secret. Besides (to say Truth) Nakednesse is vncomely,25 as well in Minde, as Body; and it addeth no small Reuerence, to Mens Manners, and Actions, if they be not altogether Open. As for Talkers and Futik Persons, they are commonly Vaine, and Credulous withall. For He that talketh, what he knoweth, will also talke, what he knoweth not. Therfore set it downe; That an Habit of Secrecy, is both Politick. and Morall. And in this Part, 26 it is good, that a Mans Face, giue his Tongue, leaue to Speake. For the Difcouery, of a Mans Selfe,27 by the Tracts of his Countenance,28 is a great Weaknesse, and Betraying; By how much, it is many times, more marked and beleeved, then a Mans words.

For the Second, which is Difsimulation. It followeth many times upon Secrecy, by a necessity: So that, he

²³ Industriously, and expressely. Aperte, 'openly.

²⁴ Inviteth Discouerie. Facile aliorum Animos reserabit, 'He will easly unlock the minds of others.'

²⁵ Vncomely. Deformis et invenusta, 'shapeless and uncomely.'
26 And in this Part. Illud addendum est, 'it must be added.'
27 Mans Selfe. Animi, 'mind.'
28 Tracts of his Countenance. Ex Vultu, aut Gestu 'by his countenance.

or gesture.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

that will be Secret, must be 29 a Diffembler, in some degree. For Men are too cunning, to fuffer a Man, to keepe an indifferent carriage, betweene both, and to be Secret, 30 without Swaying the Ballance, 31 on either side. They will so beset a man with Questions, 32 and draw him on, and picke it out of him, that without an abfurd³³ Silence, he must shew an Inclination,³⁴ one way; Or if he doe not, they will gather as much by his Silence, as by his Speech. As for Equiuocations, or Oraculous Speeches, they cannot hold out long. So that no man can be fecret, except he give himselfe a little Scope of Difsimulation; which is, as it were, but the Skirts or Traine of Secrecy.

But for the third Degree, which is Simulation, and false Profession; That I hold more culpable, and lesse politicke; except it be in great and rare Matters.35 And therefore a generall Custome of Simulation (which is this last Degree)³⁶ is a Vice, rising either of a naturall Falsenesse, or Fearfulnesse; Or of a Minde, that hath fome maine Faults; 37 which because a man must needs disguise, it maketh him practise38 Simulation, in other things, lest his Hand should be out of vre. 39

The great Advantages of Simulation and Difsimulation are three. First to lay asleepe 40 Opposition, and to Surprize. For where a Mans Intentions, are published, it is an Alarum, to call vp, all that are against

²⁹ After Must be. Vel nolens, 'even if unwilling.' 80 And to be Secret. Omitted in the Latin.

³¹ Swaying the Ballance. Inclinationis sua declaratione, 'any declaration of his inclining.

³² Questions. *Quastionibus subtilibus*, 'subtle questions.' 33 Absurd. *Obstrmato et absurdo*, 'obstinate and absurd.'

³⁴ Shew an Inclination, one way. Senonnihil prodere, 'betray himself a little.'
35 Great and rare Matters. Nisi forte dignus vindice Nodus inciderit,
'Unless perchance a difficulty happens worthy of the celiverer.'
36 (Which is this last Degree) Omitted in the Latin.
37 Minde, . . . maine Faults. Animi Constitutione, qua Vitio aliquo magno imbuta est, 'constitution of mind, which is tainted with some great fault.'
38 Practise. Adhibere et exercere, 'apply and practise.'
39 Hand should be out of vre. Habitus ipse intercidat, 'lest the habit be lost.'
40 Lay asleepe. Amoliatur, 'remove.'

1625.

æt. 65.

them. The second is, to referue to a Mans Selfe, a faire Retreat: 41 For if a man engage himselfe, by a manifest Declaration,42 he must goe through, or take a Fall.43 The third is, the better to 44 discouer the Minde of another. For to him that opens himselfe, Men will hardly shew themselues aduerse; but will (faire) let him goe on, and turne their Freedome of Speech, to Freedome of thought. And therefore, it is a good shrewd Prouerbe of the Spaniard; Tell a lye, and finde a Troth. As if there were no way of Discouery, but 45 by Simula-There be also three Difaduantages, to set it even The first, That Simulation and Dissimulation, commonly carry with them, a Shew of Fearfulnesse, which in any Businesse, doth spoile the Feathers, of round flying vp to the Mark.46 The second, that it pusseth and perplexeth the Conceits of many; 47 that perhaps would otherwise co-operate with him; 48 and makes a Man walke, almost alone,49 to his owne Ends. The third. and greatest is, that it depriueth a Man, of one, of the most principall Instruments for Action; which is Trust and Bcleefe. 50 The best Composition, and Temperature is, to have Opennesse in Fame and Opinion; 51 Secres in Habit; Dissimulation in seasonable vse: And Power to faigne, if there be no Remedy.

0333333340

42 After Manisest Declaration. Is cuneis quasi impactis includitur, 'he

is shut in, as if by wedges driven home.'

43 Take a Fall. Turpiter desistendum, 'leave off with disgrace.'

44 The better to. Quod viam aperiat, 'because it opens the way to.'

45 No way of Discouery, but. Clavis ad Secreta reseranda, 'a key: unlock secrets.

48 Round. Perniciter, 'swiftly.'

47 Pusleth and perplexeth . . . many. In ancipites Cogitationes Annmos conjiciant, 'casts minds into doubtful thought.'

48 After Co-operate with him. Et studio suo rem promoturi, 'and promotithe matter by their zeal.'
49 Alone. Sine socia et amica opera . . . solus, 'without the help of

companions and friends—alone.'
50 Trust and Beleefe Fide, 'faith.'

Dpinion. Omitted in the Latin.

⁴¹ Faire Retreat. Ut pedem referat, et se absque Existimationis su jactura de Negotio subducat, 'to retreat and retire from the business without loss of reputation.'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

9. Of Enuy.

Here be none of the Affections, which have beene noted to fascinate, or bewitch,1 but Loue, and Enuy. They both haue 2 vehement wishes; They frame themselues readily into Imaginations, and Suggestions; And they come easily into the Eye; especially upon the presence of the Obiects; which are the Points, that conduce to Fascination, if any such Thing there be. We see likewise, the Scripture calleth Enuy, An Euill Eye: And the Astrologers, call the euill Influences of the Starrs, Euill Aspects; So that still, there seemeth to be acknowledged, in the Act of *Enuy*, an Eiaculation, or Irradiation of the Eye. Nay some haue beene so curious, as to note, that the Times, when the Stroke, or Percufsion of an Enuious Eye doth most hurt, are, when the Party enuied is beheld in Glory, or Triumph; For that fets an Edge vpon Enuy; And besides, at such times, the Spirits of the person Enuied, doe come forth, most into the outward Parts, and so meet the Blow.

But leaving these Curiosities, (though not vnworthy, to be thought on, in fit place), wee will handle,3 what Persons are apt to Enuy others; What persons are most Subiect to be Envied themselves; And, What is the Difference between Publique, and private Enuy.

A man, that hath no vertue in himselfe, ever enuieth Vertue in others. For Mens Mindes, will either feed vpon4 their owne Good, or vpon others Euill; And who

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

Bewitch. Omitted in the Latin.
Haue. Progignit, 'produce.'
Wee will handle. Tractabimus hac tria, 'we shall handle these three

⁴ Feed vpon. Se pascuni, et delectantur, 'feed upon and delight in.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

wanteth the one,⁵ wil prey vpon the other; And who so is out of Hope to attaine to anothers Vertue, will seeke to come at euen hand, by Depressing an others Fortune.

A man that is Bufy, and Inquisitiue, is commonly *Enuious*: For to know much of other Mens Matters, cannot be, because all that Adoe may concerne his owne Estate: Therfore it must needs be, that he taketh a kinde of plaie-pleasure, in looking vpon the Fortunes of others; Neither can he, that mindeth but his own Businesse, finde much matter for *Enuy*. For *Enuy* is a Gadding Passion, and walketh the Streets, and doth not keepe home; *Non est curiosus*, quin idem sit maleuolus.

Men of Noble birth, are noted, to be *enuious* towards New Men, when they rife. For the distance is altered; And it is like a deceipt of the Eye, that when others come on, they thinke themselues goe backe.

Deformed Persons, and Eunuches, and Old Men, and Bastards, are *Enuious*: For he that cannot possibly mend his owne case, will doe what he can to impaire anothers; Except these Desects light, vpon a very braue, and Heroicall Nature; which thinketh to make his Naturall Wants, part of his Honour: In that it should be said, that an Eunuch, or a Lame Man, did such great Matters; Assecting the Honour of a Miracle; as it was in *Narses* the Eunuch, and *Agesslaus*, and *Tamberlanes*, that were Lame men.

The same, is the Case of Men, that rise after Calamities, and Missortunes; For they are, as Men sallen out with the times; And thinke other Mens Harmes, a Redemption, of their owne Sufferings.

They, that defire to excell in too many Matters, out

⁵ The one. Primo Alimento, 'the former nourishment.'
6 Matter for Enuy. Segetem Invidiæ, 'crop of envy.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

of Leuity, and Vaine glory, are euer *Enuious*; For they cannot want worke; ⁷ It being impossible, but many, in some one of those Things, should surpasse them. Which was the Character of Adrian the Emperour, that mortally Enuied Poets, and Painters, and Artificers, in Works, wherein he had a veine to excell.

Lastly neare Kinsfolks, and Fellowes in Office, and those that have beene bred together, are more apt to Enuy their Equals, when they are raised. For it doth vpbraid vnto them, their owne Fortunes; And pointeth at them, and commeth oftner into their remembrance, and incurreth likewise more into the note of others: And Enuy euer redoubleth 8 from Speech and Fame. Cains Enuy, was the more vile, and Malignant, towards his brother Abel; Because, when his Sacrifice was better accepted, there was no Body to looke on. Thus much for those that are apt to Enuy.

Concerning those that are more or leffe subject to Enuy: First, Persons of eminent Vertue, when they are aduanced, are lesse enuied. For their Fortune seemeth but due vnto them; and no man Enuieth the Payment of a Debt, but Rewards, and Liberality 9 rather. Againe, Enuy is ever ioyned, with the Comparing of a Mans Selfe; 10 And where there is no Comparison, no Enuy; And therfore Kings, are not enuied, but by Kings. Neuerthelesse, it is to be noted, that vnworthy Persons, are most enuied, at their first comming in, and afterwards ouercome it better; 11 wheras contrariwife, Perfons of Worth, and Merit, are most enuied, when their Fortune continueth long. For by that time, though their Vertue be the same, yet it hath not the

⁷ For they cannot want worke. Ubique enim occurrunt Objecta Invidia,

^{&#}x27;for objects of envy everywhere meet them.'

8 Redoubleth .Reflectitur, et conduplicatur, 'is reflected and redoubled.'

9 Rewards, and Liberality. Largitioni supra Meritum, 'liberality above

¹⁰ Of a Mans Selfe. Omitted in the Latin.

¹¹ Ouercome it better. Postea vero minus, 'but afterwards less.'

V. 1625.

æt 65.

the same Lustre; For fresh Men grow vp, that darken it.

Persons of Noble Bloud, are lesse enuied, in their Rising: 12 For it seemeth, but Right, done to their Besides, there seemeth not much added to their Fortune; And Enuy is as the Sunne Beames, that beat hotter, vpon a Bank or steepe rising Ground;14 then vpon a Flat. And for the same reason, those that are aduanced by degrees, are lesse enuied, then those that are advanced fuddainly, 15 and per faltum.

Those that have ioyned with their Honour, great Trauels, Cares, or Perills, are leffe subject to Enuy. For Men thinke, that they earne their Honours hardly, and pitty them fometimes; And Pitty, euer healeth Enuy: Wherefore, you shall observe that the more deepe, and sober fort of Politique persons, in their Greatnesse, are euer bemoaning themselues, what a Life they lead; Chanting a Quanta patimur. that they feele it so, but onely to abate the Edge of But this is to be vnderstood, of Businesse, that is laid vpon Men, and not fuch as they call vnto them-For Nothing increaseth Enuy more, then an vnnecessary, and Ambitious Ingrossing of Businesse. And nothing doth extinguish Enuy more, then for a great Person, to preserve all other inferiour Officers, in their full Rights, and Preheminences, of their Places. 16 For by that meanes, there be so many 17 Skreenes betweene him, and Enuy.

^a This passage is transferred from the Essay Of Nobility in the 1612 edition.—See pp. 190, 191, 194.

b At a bound. ⁶ How great things do we suffer.

¹² Rising. Cum Honoribus cumulantur, 'when they are laden with honours.

¹³ Birth. Majoribus suis, 'to their forefathers.'
14 Steepe rising Ground. Omitted in the Latin.
15 Suddainly. Omitted in the Latin.
16 Preserue . . . in their full Rights, and Preheminences, of their Places. Nihil detrahat, 'detract nothing from.'
17 So many. Quot illi Ministri sunt, tot, 'as many as there are officers,

so many.'

1625. V. æt. 65.

Aboue all, those are most subject to 18 Enuy, which carry the Greatnesse of their Fortunes, in an insolent and proud Manner: Being neuer well, 19 but while they are shewing, how great they are, Either by outward Pompe, or by Triumphing ouer all Opposition, or Competition; whereas Wise men will rather doe sacrifice to Enuy; in suffering themselues, sometimes of purpose to be crost, and ouerborne²⁰ in things, that doe not much concerne them. Notwithstanding, so much is true; That the Carriage of Greatnesse, in a plaine and open manner (so it be without Arrogancy, and Vaine glory) doth draw lesse Enuy, then if it be 21 in a more crasty, and cunning fashion. For in that course, a Man doth but disauow Fortune; And seemeth to be conscious. of his owne want in worth; And doth but teach 22 others to Enuy him.

Lastly, to conclude this Part; As we said in the beginning, that the Act of Enuy, had somewhat in it, of Witchcraft; so there is no other Cure of Enuy, but the cure of Witchcraft: 23 And that is, to remove the Lot (as they call it) and to lay it vpon another. For which purpose, the wifer Sort of great Persons, bring in euer vpon the Stage, some Body, vpon whom to deriue²⁴ the *Enuie*, that would come vpon themselues; Sometimes 25 vpon Ministers and Seruants; Sometimes vpon Colleagues and Associates; and the like; And for that turne, there are neuer wanting, some Persons of violent and vndertaking Natures, who so they may haue Power, and Businesse, will take it at any Cost.26

¹⁸ Subject to. In se concitant, 'excite against themselves.'

¹⁹ Well. Sibi placentes, 'pleasing to themselves.' 20 Crost, and ouerborne. Vinci, 'overcome.'

²¹ Then if it be. Quam si se notæ subtrahat, 'than if it withdraws itself

from notice.'

22 Teach. Stimulat, 'provoke.'

23 Cure of Witchcraft. Veneficharming.' Veneficii, et Incantationis, 'witchcrast and

²⁴ Deriue. Derivent, 'turn off.' 25 Sometimes. Quandoque . . . eam rejicientes, 'sometimes casting it off.'
26 Take it at any cost. Quovis periculo mercari, 'buy it for any danger.'

V. æt. 65. 1625.

Now to speake of Publique Enuy. There is yet fome good in Publique Enuy; whereas in Private, there is none. For *Publique Enuy* is as an *Ostracifme*,²⁷ that eclipseth Men, when they grow too great. And therefore it is a Bridle also to Great Ones, to keepe them within Bounds.

This Enuy, being in the Latine word Inuidia, goeth in the Moderne languages, by the name of Discontentment: Of which we shall speake in handling Sedition. It is a disease, in a State,28 like to Infection. For as Infection, spreadeth vpon that, which is found, and tainteth it; So when Enuy, is gotten once into a State, it traduceth euen the best Actions 29 thereof, and turneth them into an ill Odour. And therefore, there is little won by intermingling of plaufible 30 Actions. For that doth argue, but a Weaknesse, and Feare of Enuy, which hurteth fo much the more, as it is likewife vsuall in Infections; which if you feare them, you call them vpon you.31

This publique *Enuy*, feemeth to beat 32 chiefly, vpon principall Officers, or Ministers, rather then vpon Kings, and Estates 33 themselues. But this is a sure Rule, that if the Enuy vpon the Minister, be great, when the cause of it, in him, is smal; or if the Enuy be generall, in a manner, vpon all the Ministers of an Estate; then the Enuy (though hidden) is truly vpon the State it selfe.34 And so much of publike enuy or discontentment, and the difference therof from Private Envy, which was handled

in the first place.

<sup>Ostracisme. Salubris Otracismi, 'a salutary ostracism.'
State. Regnis et Rebuspublicis, 'kingdoms and states.'
Actions. Mandata et Instituta, 'laws and ordinances.'
Plausible. Actiones gratas et populares, odiosis, 'pleasing and popular</sup>

actions with disagreeable ones.'

⁸¹ Call them vpon you. Facilius irruunt, 'they attack you more easily.'

Seemeth to beat. Involat, 'flies at.'

Sa And Estates. Omitted in the Latin.

State it selfe. Regem, aut Statum ipsum, 'the king or state itself.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

We will adde this, in generall, touching the Affection of Enuy; that of all other Affections, it is the most importune, and continuall. For of other Affections, state there is occasion given, but now and then: And therefore, it was well said, Inuidia festos dies non agit. For it is ever working vpon some, or other. And it is also noted, that Love and Enuy, doe make a man pine, which other Affections doe not; because they are not so continuall. It is also the vilest Affection, and the most depraved; For which cause, it is the proper Attribute, of the Devill, who is called; The Envious Man, that soweth tares amongst the wheat by night. As it alwayes commeth to passe, that Enuy worketh subtilly, and in the darke; And to the prejudice of good things, such as is the Wheat.



a Jealousy keeps not holidays.

b Matt. xiii. 25.

²⁵ For of other Affections. Aliis Affectibus excitandis, of exciting other affections.

³⁶ For it is euer working vpon some or other. Quia semper Materiam se exercendi reperit, 'for it always finds material on which to work.'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

Of Boldnesse.

T is a triuiall Grammar Schoole Text, but yet worthy a wife Mans Confideration. Question was asked of Demosthenes; What was the Chiefe Part of an Oratour? He anfwered, Action; what next? Action; what next again? Action.a He said it, that knew it best; And had by nature, himselfe, no Aduantage, in that he commended. A strange thing, that that Part of an Oratour, which is but superficiall, and rather the vertue of a Player; should be placed so high, aboue those other Noble Parts, of Invention, Elocution, and the rest: Nay almost alone, as if it were All in All. But the Reason is plaine. There is in Humane Nature, generally, more of the Foole, then of the Wife; And therfore those faculties, by which the Foolish part of Mens Mindes is taken, are most potent. Wonderfull like is the Case¹ of Boldneffe, in Civill Businesse; What first? Boldnesse; What Second, and Third? Boldneffe. And yet Boldnesse is a Childe of Ignorance, and Basenesse, farre inferiour to other Parts.² But neuerthelesse, it doth fascinate, and binde hand and foot, those, that are either shallow³ in Iudgment; or weake⁴ in Courage, which are the greatest Part; Yea and preuaileth with wise men, at weake times.⁵ Therfore, we see it hath done wonders,6 in Popular States; but with Senates

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

^a Cicero, Brutus, xxxviii.

¹ Wonderfull like is the Case. Mire convenit, et quasi parallela est, 'agrees wonderfully, and is as it were parallel.'

Other parts. Civilis Scientiæ Partibus, 'parts of political science.'

Shallow. Infirmi, 'weak.'

Weake. Timidiores, 'more timid.'

⁵ At weake times. Cum Animis vacilleni, 'when they waver in their

⁶ Done wonders. Plurimum valuisse, 'has been most strong."

V. 1625. æt. 65.

and Princes lesse; And more euer vpon the first entrance of Bold Perfons into Action, then foone after; For Boldnesse is an ill keeper of promise. Surely, as there are Mountebanques for the Naturall Body: 50 are there Mountebanques for the Politique Body: Men that vndertake great Cures; And perhaps have been Lucky, in two or three Experiments, but want the Grounds of Science; And therfore cannot hold out.8 Nay you shall see a Bold Fellow, many times, doe Mahomets Miracle. Mahomet made the People beleeue, that he would call an Hill to him; And from the Top of it, offer vp his Praiers, for the Observers of his Law. The People affembled; Mahomet cald the Hill to come to him, againe, and againe; And when the Hill stood still, he was neuer a whit abashed, but said; If the Hill will not come to Mahomet, Mahomet wil go to the hil. So these Men, when they have promised great Matters, and failed most shamefully, (yet if they have the perfection of Boldnesse) they will but slight it ouer, and make a turne, and no more adoe. Certainly, to Men of great Iudgment, Bold Persons, are a Sport to behold; Nay and to the Vulgar also, Boldnesse hath somewhat of the Ridiculous. For if Absurdity be the Subiect of Laughter, doubt you not, but great Boldnesse is seldome without some Absurdity. Especially, it is a Sport to fee, when a Bold Fellow is out of Countenance; For that puts his Face, into a most Shruncken, and woodden Posture;9 As needes it must; For in Bashfulnesse, the Spirits doe a little goe and come; but with Bold Men, vpon like occasion, they stand at a stay; 10 Like a Stale at Chesse, where

<sup>For the Naturall Body. Qui Corpori Naturali mederi profitentur,
who profess to heal the natural body.'
Cannot hold out. Sapius excidunt, 'often fail.'
Shruncken and woodden Posture. In se reductum, sed deformiter,
'drawn back into itself, but ill-favouredly.'
Stand at a stay. Attoniti hærent, 'they stick, astounded.'</sup>

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

it is no Mate, but yet the Game cannot stirre. But this last, were fitter for a Satyre, then for a serious Observation. This is well to be weighed; That Boldnesse is ever blinde: For it seeth not dangers, and Inconveniences. Therfore, it is ill in Counsell, good in Execution: So that the right Vse of Bold persons is, that they never Command in Chiefe, but be Seconds, and vnder the Direction of others. For in Counsell, it is good to see dangers; And in Execution, not to see them, except they be very great.



1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

Mf Aranaile. 18.

Rauaile, in the younger Sort, is a Part of

Education; In the Elder, a Part of Experience. He that trauaileth into a Country,2 before he hath fome Entrance into the Language, goeth to Schoole, and not to Trauaile. That Young Men trauaile vnder some Tutor, or graue 3 Seruant, I allow well; So that he be fuch a one, that hath the Language, and hath been in the Country before; whereby he may be able to tell them, what Things are worthy to be feene4 in the Country where they goe; what Acquaintances⁵ they are to feeke; What Exercises or discipline the Place yeeldeth. For else young Men shall goe hooded, and looke abroad little. It is a strange Thing, that in Sea voyages, where there is nothing to be seene, but Sky and Sea, Men should make Diaries; but in Land-Trauaile, wherin so much is to be observed, for the most part, they omit it; As if Chance, were fitter to be registred, then Observation. Let Diaries, therefore, be brought in vse. The Things to be feene and observed are: The Courts of Princes, fpecially when they give Audience⁶ to Ambassadours.⁷ The Courts of Iustice, while they sit⁸ and heare Causes; And so of Consistories Ecclesiasticke: The Churches, and Monasteries, with the Monuments which are there-

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

1 TITLE. De Peregrinatione in Partes Exteras, 'of travel into foreign parts.

Country. Partes Externs, 'foreign parts.'

Graue. Experto, 'experienced.'

Seene. Spectatu et cognitu, 'seen and noticed.'

Acquaintances. Amicitia et Familiaritates, 'friendships and acquaintances.

6 Giue Audience. Admittunt, 'admit.'
7 Ambassadours. Legatos Exteros, 'foreign ambassadors.'
8 While they sit. Omitted in the Latin.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

in extant: The Wals and Fortifications of Cities and Townes; And so the Hauens and Harbours: Antiquities. and Ruines: Libraries; Colledges, Disputations, and Lectures, where any are: Shipping and Nauies: Houses, and Gardens of State, and Pleasure, neare great Cities: Armories: Arfenals: Magazens:9 Exchanges: Burses: Ware-houses: Exercises of Horseman-ship; Fencing; Trayning 10 of Souldiers; and the like: Comedies; Such wherunto the better. Sort of persons doe resort; Treasuries of Iewels, and Robes; Cabinets, 11 and Rarities: And to conclude, what foeuer is memorable 12 in the Places; where they goe. After all which, the Tutors or Seruants, ought to make diligent Enquirie. As for Triumphs; Masques; Feasts, Weddings; Funeralls; Capitall Execu[ti]ons; and fuch Shewes; Men need not to be put in minde of them; Yet are they not to be neglected. If you will have a Young Man, to put his Trauaile, 13 into a little Roome, and in short time, to gather much, this you must doe. First, as was said, he must have some Entrance into the Language, before he goeth. Then he must have fuch a Seruant, or Tutor, as knoweth the Country, as was likewise said. Let him carry with him also some Card or Booke describing the Country, where he trauelleth; which will be a good Key to his Enquiry. Let him keepe also a Diary. Let him not stay long in one Citty, or Towne; More or lesse as the place deferueth, but not long: Nay, when he stayeth in one City or Towne, let him change 14 his Lodging, from one End 15 and Part of the Towne, to another; which

⁹ Magazens. Cellæ et Horrea publica, 'public stores and granaries.'
10 Trayning. Delectus et Instructio, 'levying and training.'
11 Cabinets. Curiositates, 'curiosities.'
12 Memorable. Celabre aut memorabile, 'remarkable or memorable.'
13 Trauaile. Fructum Peregrinationis, 'the fruit of his travel.'
14 Change. Mutet sæpius, 'change often.'
15 End. Omitted in the Latin.

1625. æt. 65. V.

is a great Adamant 16 of Acquaintance. Let him fequester himselfe from the Company of his Country men, and diet in fuch Places, where there is good Company of the Nation, where he trauaileth. Let him vpon his Remoues, from one place to another, procure Recommendation, to some person of Quality, residing in the Place, whither he remoueth; that he may vie his Fauour,17 in those things, he desireth to see or know. Thus he may abridge 18 his Trauaile, with much profit. As for the acquaintance, 19 which is to be fought in Trauaile; That which is most of all profitable, is Acquaintance with the Secretaries, and Employd Men of Ambassadours; For so in Trauailing in one Country he shall sucke 20 the Experience 21 of many. Let him also see and visit, Eminent Persons, in all Kindes, which are of great Name abroad; That he may be able to tell, how the Life²² agreeth with the Fame. For Quarels,23 they are with Care and Difcretion to be auoided: They are, commonly, for Mistresses; 24 Healths; 25 Place; and Words. 26 And let a Man beware, how he keepeth Company, with Cholerick and Quarelfome²⁷ Persons; for they will engage him into their owne Quarels. When a Trauailer returneth home, let him not leaue the Countries, where he hath Trauailed, altogether behinde him;

¹⁶ After Adamant. Attrahendi Familiaritates, et Consuetudines Hominum

complurium, 'for attracting acquaintances and friendships with many men.'

17 Fauour. Favore et opera, 'favour and help.'

18 Abridge. Vtilitatem accelerare, 'hasten the profit.'

19 Acquaintance. Familiaritates et Amicitias, 'acquaintances and friendships.

ships.'

20 Sucke. Ad se attrahet, et suget, 'draw to himself and suck.'

21 Experience. Notitiam et Experientiam, 'knowledge and experience.'

22 Life. Os, vultus, et Corporis Lineamenta et Motus, 'face, countenance, and lineaments and movements of the body.'

23 Quarels. Rixas et Simultates, 'quarrels and disputes.'

24 Mistresses. Amores, 'loves.'

25 Healths. Compotationes, 'drinking bouts.'

26 Words. Verba contumeliosa, 'insulting words.'

27 Quarelsome. Qui facile Inimicitias suscipiunt, 'who easily take up enmities.'

enmities.'

1625.

æt 65.

But maintaine²⁸ a Correspondence, by letters, with those of his Acquaintance, which are of most Worth. And let his Trauaile appeare rather in his Discourse, then in his Apparrell, or Gesture: And in his Discourse, let him be rather aduised in his Answers, then forwards 29 to tell Stories; And let it appeare, that he doth not change his Country Manners, for those of Forraigne Parts; But onely, prick in some Flowers, of that he hath Learned abroad, into the Customes of his owne Country.



28 Maintaine. Conservet, et colat, 'maintain and cultivate.'
29 Forwards. Facilis et pronus, 'easy and disposed,'

1625.

æt 65.

British Museum Copy.

Of Belayes.1

Ortune is like the Market; Where many times, if you can stay a little, the Price will fall. And againe, it is sometimes like Sybilla's Offer; which at first offereth the Commodity at full, then confumeth part and part, and still

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638. ¹ TITLE. De Mora, 'of delay.'

1625. æt. 65.

holdeth vp the Price. For Occasion (as it is in the Common verse) turneth a Bald Noddle, after she hath presented her locks in Front, and no hold taken: Or at least turneth the Handle of the Bottle, first to be received, and after the Belly, which is hard to claspe. There is furely no greater Wisedome, then well to time the Beginnings, and Onsets of Things. Dangers are no more light, if they once feeme light: And more dangers have deceived Men, then forced them. it were better, to meet some Dangers halfe way, though they come nothing neare,2 then to keepe too long a watch,⁸ vpon their Approaches;⁴ For if a Man watch too long, it is odds he will fall asleepe. On the other fide, to be deceived, with too long Shadowes, (As fome haue beene, when the Moone was low, and shone on their Enemies backe) And so to shoot off before the time; Or to teach dangers to come on, by ouer early Buckling towards them, is another Extreme. The Ripenesse, or Vnripenesse, of the Occasion (as we said) must euer be well weighed; And generally, it is good, to commit the Beginnings of all great Actions, to Argos with his hundred Eyes; And the Ends to Briareus with his hundred Hands: First to Watch, and then to Speed. For the Helmet of Pluto, which maketh the Politicke Man goe Inuisible, is, Secrecy in the Counsell, and Celerity in the Execution. For when Things are once come to the Execution, there is no Secrecy comparable to Celerity; Like the Motion of a Bullet in the Ayre, which flyeth so swift, as it out-runs the Eye.



² Though they come nothing neare. Omitted in the Latin.

8 Watch. Perpetuo inquirere, et observare, continually to seek out and

⁴ Approaches. Motus, et Appropinquationem, 'movements and approach.'

1625.

æt 65.

British Museum Copy.

Of Innonations.

S the Births of Liuing Creatures, at first, are ill shapen: So are all Innouations, which are the Births of Time. Yet notwithstanding, as Those that first bring Honour into their Family, are commonly more worthy, then most that succeed: So the first President 2 (if it be good) is feldome attained 3 by Imitation.4 For Ill, to Mans Nature, as it stands peruerted, hath a Naturall Motion, strongest in Continuance: But Good, as 6 a Forced Motion, strongest at first. Surely euery Medicine is an Innovation; And he that will not apply New Remedies, must expect New Euils: For Time is the greatest Innovatour: And if Time, of course, alter Things to the worse, and Wisedome, and Counsell shall not alter them to the better, what shall be the End? 7 It is true,8 that what is fetled by Custome, though it be not good, yet at least it is fit. And those Things, which haue long gone together, 10 are as it were confederate within themselues: Whereas New Things peece 11 not fo well; But though they helpe by their vtility, yet

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Boition of 1638.

Births of Liuing Creatures. Partus recens editi, 'recent births.'
First President. Exemplaria, et Primordia, 'precedents and beginnings.'
Seldome attained. Plurimum, superant, 'mostly surpass.'
Imitation. Imitationem Ætatis sequentis, 'imitation of the succeeding age.

5 As it stands peruerted. Omitted in the Latin.

**As it stands percerted. Omitted in the Laun.

6 As. Ut fieri amat, 'as is usually done.'

7 End. Finis Mali, 'end of the evil.'

8 True. Concedi prorsus debet, 'must be granted.'

9 Fit. Aptum . . . Temporibus. 'fit for the times.'

10 Gone together. Uno quasi Alveo fluxerunt, 'have flowed as it were in one bed.'

11 Peece. Veteribus . . . cohæreant, 'cohere with the old.'
12 Inconformity. Novitate tamen et Inconformitate, 'by their newness and inconformity.'

V. æt. 65. 1625.

they trouble, by their Inconformity.¹² Besides, they ¹³ are like Strangers; 14 more Admired, and lesse Fauoured. All this is true, if Time stood still; which contrariwise moueth so round, that a Froward 15 Retention of Custome, is as turbulent a Thing, as an Innovation: And they that Reverence too much Old Times, are but a Scorne to the New. It were good therefore, that Men in their Innovations, would follow the Example of Time it felfe; which indeed Innovateth greatly, but quietly, and by degrees, scarce to be perceived: 16 For otherwife, whatfoeuer is New, is vnlooked for; 17 And euer it mends Some, and paires 18 Other: And he that is holpen, takes it for a Fortune, and thanks the Time; And he that is hurt, for a wrong, and imputeth it to the Author. It is good also, not to try Experiments 19 in States;²⁰ Except the Necessity be Vrgent, or the vtility Euident: And well to beware, that it be the Reformation,²¹ that draweth on the Change; And not the defire of Change, that pretendeth the Reformation. And lastly, that the Nouelty, 22 though it be not rejected, yet be held for a Suspect; And, as the Scripture saith; That we make a stand upon the Ancient Way, and then looke about us, and discover, what is the straight, and right way, and fo to walke in it.a



a Jer. vi. 16.

¹⁸ They. Novitates, 'novelties.'

Strangers. Advenæ aut peregrini, 'newcomers or foreigners.'
Froward. Importuna et Morosa, 'unsuitable and froward.'

¹⁶ After Perceiued. Illud enim pro certo habeas, 'be assured of this.'
17 Vnlooked for. Præter Spem et Expectationem accedere, 'comes, con-

trary to hope and expectation.'

18 Paires. Eripere, 'takes away from.'

19 Experiments. Experimentis Novis, 'new experiments.'

20 States. In Corporibus Politicis medendis, 'in reforming political

²¹ Reformation. Reformationis studium, 'desire of reformation.'
22 The Nouelty. Omnis Novitas, 'every novelty.'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

Of Suspicion.

Vspicions amongst Thoughts, are like Bats amongst Birds, they euer fly by Twilight. Certainly, they are to be repressed, or, at the least, well guarded: For they cloud the Minde; they leefe Frends; and they checke with Businesse, whereby Businesse cannot goe on, currantly, and constantly. They dispose Kings to Tyranny, Husbands to Iealousie, Wise Men to Irresolution and Melancholy. They are Defects, not in the Heart, but in the Braine; For they take Place in the Stoutest Natures: As in the Example of Henry the Seuenth of England: There was not a more Sufpicious Man, nor a more Stout. And in such a Composition, they doe fmall Hurt. For commonly they are not admitted, but with Examination, whether they be likely or no? But in fearefull Natures, they gaine Ground too fast. There is Nothing makes a Man Suspect much, more then to Know little: And therefore Men should remedy Sufpicion, by procuring to know more, and not to keep their Suspicions in Smother.2 What would Men have? Doe they thinke, those they employ and deale with, are Saints? 8 Doe they not thinke, they will have their owne Ends, and be truer to Themselues, then to them? Therefore, there is no better Way to moderate Suspicions, then to account vpon4 such Suspicions as true, and yet to bridle them, as false. For so farre, a

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ Procuring to know more. Ut quis Inquisitionem urgeat, 'to press

And not to keep their Suspicions in smother. Fumo enim et Tenebris aluntur Suspiciones, 'for suspicions are nourished by smoke and darkness.'

Saints. Angelos esse, aut Sanctos?' are angels or saints?'

Account vpon. Remedia parare, 'prepare remedies.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Man ought to make vse of Sufpicions, as to prouide, as if that should be true, that he Suspects, yet it may doe Suspicions, that the Minde, of it selfe, him no Hurt. gathers, are but Buzzes; But Sufpicions, that are artificially nourished, and put into Mens Heads, by the Tales, and Whisprings of others,7 haue Stings. tainly, the best Meane, to cleare the Way, in this same Wood⁸ of Sufpicions, is franckly to communicate them,⁹ with the Partie, that he Suspects: For thereby, he shall be fure, to know more of the Truth of them, then he did before; And withall, shall make that Party, more circumspect, 10 not to give further Cause of Suspicion. But this would not be done to Men of base¹¹ Natures: For they, if they finde themselues once suspected, will neuer be true. The Italian saies: Sospetto licentia fede.a As if Sufpicion did giue a Pasport to Faith: But it ought rather to kindle it, to discharge it selse.



10 Circumspect. Cautum magis et circumspectum, 'more careful and circumspect.

11 Base. Pravæ, et Degeneris, 'bad and base.'

a Suspicion gives a passport to trust.

Buzzes. Inanes Bombi, 'empty buzzes.'

6 Heads. Animis, 'minds.'

7 Others. Famigeratorum, 'talebearers.'

8 Same Wood. Impedita Sylva, 'tangled wood.'

9 Franckly to communicate them. Libera quadam et aperta illarum

Declaratio, 'a free and open declaration of them.'

10 Circumspect. Cautum maris et circumspecture.'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

Of Plantations.1

Lantations 2 are 3 amongst Ancient, Primi-

tiue,4 and Heroicall Workes. When the World was young, it begate more Children; But now it is old, it begets fewer: For I may iustly account new Plantations, to be the Children of former Kingdomes. I like a Plantation in a Pure Soile; that is, where People are not Difplanted,5 to the end, to Plant in Others. For elfe, it is rather an Extirpation, then a Plantation. Planting of Countries, is like Planting of Woods; For you must make account, to leese almost 6 Twenty yeeres Profit, and expect your Recompence,7 in the end. For the Principall Thing, that hath beene the Destruction of most *Plantations*,⁸ hath beene the Base, and Hastie drawing of Profit, in the first Yeeres. It is true, Speedie Profit 9 is not to be neglected, as farre as may stand. with the Good of the Plantation, but no further. It is a Shamefull and Vnbleffed Thing, to take the Scumme of People, and Wicked Condemned 10 Men, to be the People with whom you Plant: And not only fo, but it spoileth 11 the *Plantation*; For they will euer like Rogues, and not fall to worke, but be Lazie, and doe

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ TITLE. De Plantationibus Populorum, et Coloniis, 'of plantations of peoples and colonies.'

peoples and colonies.'

2 Plantations. Coloniæ, 'colonies.'

3 Are. Eminent, 'are prominent.'

4 Primitiue. Omitted in the Latin.

5 Displanted. Destruitur, 'destroyed.'

6 Make account to leese almost Profit. De Utilitate capienda nihil cogitandum ante. 'there must be no thought of getting profit before.'

7 Recompence. Fructus uber et locuples, 'abundant and rich fruit.'

8 Plantations. Colonias, alias bene successuras, 'plantations, which otherwise would have succeeded well.'

9 Profit. Lucri Segetem 'crop of profit'

<sup>Profit. Lucri Segetem, 'crop of profit.'
Wicked Condemned. Exules, et Damnati, 'exiles and condemned men.'
Spoileth. Corrumpit et perdit, 'spoils and destroys.'</sup>

1625. V. æt. 65.

Mischiefe, and spend Victuals, and be quickly weary,12 and then Certifie 13 ouer to their Country, to the Difcredit¹⁴ of the *Plantation*. The People wherewith you Plant, ought to be Gardners, 15 Ploughmen, Labourers, Smiths, Carpenters, Ioyners, Fisher-men, Fowlers, with fome few 18 Apothecaries, Surgeons, Cookes, and Bakers. 17 In a Country of *Plantation*, first looke about, what kinde of Victuall, 18 the Countrie yeelds of it selfe, to Hand: 19 As Chestnuts, Wall-nuts, Pine-Apples, Oliues, Dates, Plummes, Cherries, Wilde-Hony, and the like: and make vie of them. Then consider, what Victuall or Esculent Things there are, which grow speedily, and within the yeere; As Parsnips, Carrets, Turnips, Onions, Radish,²⁰ Artichokes of Hierusalem, Maiz, and the like. For Wheat,²¹ Barly, and Oats, they aske too much Labour: But with Peafe, and Beanes, you may begin; Both because they aske lesse Labour, and because they ferue for Meat, as well as for Bread. And of Rice likewise commeth a great Encrease, and it is a kinde of Meat. Aboue all, there ought to be brought Store of Bisket, Oat-meale, Flower, Meale, and the like, in the beginning, till Bread may be had. For Beasts, or Birds, take chiefly such, as are least Subject to Diseases, and Multiply fastest: As Swine, Goats, Cockes, Hennes, Turkies, Geese, House doues, 22 and the like. The Victuall in Plantations, ought to be expended, almost as in a Besieged Towne; That is, with certaine Allowance. And let the Maine Part of the Ground employed

¹² Weary. Coloniæ Fastidio, 'weary of the colony.'
13 Certifie. Nuncios et Literas mittent, 'will send messengers and letters.'
14 Discredit. Præjudicium et dedecus, 'prejudice and discredit.'
15 Before Gardners. Præcipue Artifices generum sequentium, 'chiefly artisans of the following kinds.'
16 With some few. Omitted in the Latin.
17 After Bakers. Cerevisiarii, et hujusmodi, 'brewers and the like.'
18 Victuall. Esculentorum et Poculentorum, 'eatables and drinkables.'
19 To Hand. Sine cultura, 'without tilling.'
20 After Radish. Melones, Pepones, Cucumeres, 'melons, pumpkins, cucumbers.'

²¹ After Wheat. Siliquam, 'pulse.' ²² After House-doues. Cuniculi, 'rabbits.'

1625.

 \mathbf{V}_{\cdot}

æt. 65.

to Gardens or Corne, bee to a Common Stocke; 23 And to be Laid in, and Stored vp,24 and then Deliuered out in Proportion; Besides some Spots of Ground, that any Particular Person, will Manure, for his owne Private.²⁵ Consider likewise, what Commodities the Soile, where the *Plantation* is,²⁶ doth naturally yeeld. that they may fome way helpe to defray the Charge of the Plantation: 27 So it be not, as was faid, to the vntimely Preiudice, of the maine Businesse: 28 As it hath fared with Tobacco in Virginia. Wood 29 commonly aboundeth but too much; And therefore, Timber 30 is fit to be one.³¹ If there be Iron Vre, and Streames whereupon to fet the Milles; Iron is a braue 32 Commoditie, where Wood aboundeth. Making 33 of Bay Salt, if the Climate be proper for it, would be put in Experience. Growing Silke 34 likewise, if any be, is a likely 85 Commoditie. Pitch and Tarre, 86 where store of Firres and Pines are, will not faile. So Drugs, and Sweet Woods, where they are, cannot but yeeld great Profit. Soape Ashes 37 likewise, and other Things, that

31 To be one. Inter pracipuas Merces muneranda, 'to be counted among

a In the Latin this clause precedes the one before it in the text, and reads thus:—'Charge of the Plantation, As it hath fared with Tobacco in Virginia, So it be not, as was said, to the vntimely Preiudice of the maine Businesse. Wood, commonly,' &c.

²³ Common Stocke. *Horreis publicis*, 'public granaries.'

24 Stored vp. Omitted in the Latin.

Stored vp. Omitted in the Latin.

25 That any Particular Person . . . owne private. In quibus Industria singulorum se exerceat, 'on which the industry of individuals may be

26 Soile, where the Plantation is. Regio illa, 'that district.' [exercised.'

27 That they may . . . Plantation. Vt Exportatio earum, in leca ubi maxime in pretio sunt, sumptus levet, 'that their exportation to places where they are of most value, may lessen the expense.'

28 Maine Businesse. Coloniæ ipsius, 'the plantation itself.'

29 After Wood. In Regionibus desertis, 'in uninhabited countries.'

30 Timber. Ligna, ad Ædificia, Naves, aut ejusmodi usus apta, 'timber, fit for building houses and ships or similar purposes.'

fit for building houses and ships or similar purposes.

the chief articles of traffic.'

32 Braue. Quæstuosis, 'profitable.'

33 Making. Confectio per Calorem Solis, 'making by the heat of the sun.'

34 Silke. Sericum vegetabile, 'vegetable silk.'

35 Likely. Lucrosa, 'profitable.'

36 Pitch and Tarre. Pix cujuscunque generis, 'pitch of all kinds.'

37 Soape Ashes. Cineres, quibus ad Sapam utuntur, non medicum Utilitatis afferent, 'ashes, which are used for soap, will bring no little education.' afferent, 'ashes, which are used for soap, will bring no little advantage.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

But moile not too much vnder may be thought of. Ground: 38 For the Hope 39 of Mines is very Vncertaine, 40 and vseth to make the Planters 41 Lazie, in other Things. For Gouernment, let it be in the Hands of one, affisted with some Counsell: And let them have Commission, to exercise Martiall Lawes, with some limitation. And aboue all, let Men make that Profit of being in the Wildernesse, as they have God alwaies, and his Seruice before their Eyes. Let not the Gouernment of the Plantation, depend vpon too many Counsellours, and Vndertakers, in the Countrie that Planteth, but vpon a temperate Number; 42 And let those be, rather Noblemen, and Gentlemen, then Merchants: For they looke euer to the present Gaine. Let there be Freedomes from Custome, 43 till the Plantation be of Strength: And not only Freedome from Custome,44 but Freedome to carrie their Commodities, where they may make their Best of them, except there be some speciall Cause of Caution. Cramme 45 not in People, by sending too fast, Company, after Company; But rather hearken how they waste, 46 and fend Supplies proportionably; But so, as the Number may live well, in the

⁸⁸ Moile not . . . ground. Verum fodinis ne confidas nimium præsertim a principio, 'but trust not too much to mines, especially in the beginning.'

tim a principio, 'but trust not too much to mines, especially in the beginning.'

89 Hope. Omitted in the Latin.

40 Vncertaine. Fallaces et sumptuosæ, 'deceiving and expensive.'

41 Vseth to make the Planters. Spe pulchra lactantes, Colonos reddunt,
'and alluring the planters with fair hopes, make them.'

42 Let not the Gouernment . . . Number. Rursus, Colonia, a numerosiore Concilio (Intelligo in Regione, Matre Coloniæ, residente) non pendeat; Nec ob Contributiones exiguas Multitudini nimiæ subjiciatur; Sed sit
Numerus corum qui Negotia Coloniæ procurant et ordinant moderatus: Numerus eorum, qui Negotia Coloniæ procurant et ordinant, moderatus: 'again let not the colony depend on a too numerous council, residing in the mother country, nor let it be subject to too great a multitude on account of small contributions, but let the number of those who manage and order the

business of the colony be moderate.'

2 Custome. Vectigalibus et Portoriis, 'taxes and customes.'

4 Custome. Solutionibus Pecuniarum, 'payment of money.'

4 Cramme. Farcias aut superoneres, 'cram or overload.'

4 Waste. Quot Capita de tempore in tempus minuantur, 'how the number is diminished from time to time.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Plantation, and not by Surcharge 47 be in Penury. It hath beene a great Endangering, to the Health of some Plantations, that they have built along the Sea, and Riuers, in Marish and vnwholesome 48 Grounds Therefore, though you begin there, to avoid Carriage, and other like Discommodities, yet build still, rather upwards, from the Streames, then along.49 It concerneth likewife, the Health of the Plantation, that they have good Store of Salt with them, that they may vie it, in their Victualls, when it shall be necessary.⁵⁰ If you *Plant*, where Sauages are, doe not onely entertaine them with Trifles, and Gingles; But vse them iustly, and gratiously, with sufficient Guard neuerthelesse: And doe not winne their fauour, by helping them to inuade their Enemies, but for their Defence⁵¹ it is not amisse. And fend oft of them, ouer to the Country, that Plants, that they may see a better Condition 52 then their owne, and commend 53 it when they returne. When the Plantation grows to Strength, then it is time, to Plant with Women,54 as well as with Men; That the *Plantation* may spread into Generations, and not be euer peeced⁵⁵ from without. It is the finfullest Thing in the world, to forsake or destitute a Plantation, once in Forwardnesse: For besides the Dishonour, it is the Guiltinesse of Bloud,⁵⁶ of many Commiferable Perfons.



⁴⁷ Surcharge. Omitted in the Latin.

⁴⁸ Vnwholesome. Aquosis, 'watery.'
49 Then along. Omitted in the Latin.
50 Necessary. Quos verisimile est putridos aliter sæpe futuros, 'which (the victuals) will probably otherwise be often putrid.'
51 Defence. Sed Auxiliis Defensivis non incommodum erit subvenire, 'but to help them by sid for their defense will not be amiss'

but to help them by aid for their defence will not be amiss.'
Condition. Conditiones hominum, 'condition of men.'
Commend. Divulgent, 'publish.'

⁸⁴ Plant with Women Men. Mulieres summittere, 'send women also.

⁸⁵ Be . . . peeced. Pendeat, 'depend.'
86 Guiltinesse of Bloud. Proditio mera Profusioque Sanguinis, 'simple betrayal and shedding of blood.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

35. Of Prophecies.



Meane not to speake of Divine Prophecies; Nor of Heathen Oracles; Nor of Naturall Predictions; But only of Prophecies, that haue beene of certaine Memory, and from

Hidden Causes. Saith the Pythonissa to Saul; To Morrow thou and thy fonne shall be with me. a Homer hath these Verses.

At Domus Æneæ cunclis dominabitur Oris, Et Nati Natorum, et qui nafcentur ab illis:b

A Prophecie, as it seemes, of the Roman Empire. Seneca the Tragedian hath these Verses.

> — Venient Annis Secula feris, quibus Oceanus Vincula Rerum laxet, et ingens Pateat Tellus, Typhisque nouos Detegat Orbes; nec sit Terris Vltima Thule:

A Prophecie of the Discouery of America. Daughter of Polycrates dreamed, that Iupiter bathed her Father, and Apollo annointed him: And it came to passe, that he was crucified in an Open Place, where the Sunne made his Bodie runne with Sweat, and the Raine washed it.d Philip of Macedon dreamed, He fealed vp his Wiues Belly: Whereby he did expound it, that his Wife should be barren: But Aris-

b But the family of Æneas shall rule over all lands. And his children's children and those that shall be born of them. Virgil. Æneid. iii. 97. which

are adapted from Homer. Iliad. xx. 307, 8.

^c There shall come a time in the series of years, in which the Ocean shall unloose the bounds of things and a vast earth shall appear; also another Typhys shall disclose new worlds, neither shall Thule be the farthest land. Seneca. Medea. ii. 375-380.

d Herodotus. iii.

1625. V.

æt. 65.

tander the Soothsayer, told him, his Wife was with Childe, because Men doe not vse to Seale Vessells that are emptie. A Phantasme, that appeared to M. Brutus in his Tent, said to him; Philippis iterum me Tiberius said to Galba. Tu quoque Galba degustabis Imperium.c In Vespasians Time, there went a Prophecie in the East; That those that should come forth of Iudea, should reigne ouer the World: which though it may be was meant of our Sauiour, yet Tacitus expounds it of Vefpasian.d Domitian dreamed, the Night before he was flaine, that a Golden Head was growing out of the Nape of his Necke: And indeed, the Succession that followed him, for many yeares, made Golden Times. Henry the Sixt of England, faid of Henry the Seuenth, when he was a Lad. and gaue him Water; This is the Lad, that shall enion the Crowne, for which we strives When I was in France, I heard from one Dr. Pena, that the Q. Mother, who was given to Curious Arts, caused the King her Husbands Natiuitie, to be Calculated, under a false Name; And the Astrologer gaue a Judgement, that he should be killed in a Duell; At which the Queene laughed, thinkingher Husband, to be aboue Challenges and Duels: but he was slaine, vpon a Course at Tilt, the Splinters of the Staffe of Mongomery, going in at his Beuer. The triuiall Prophecie, which I heard, when I was a Childe, and Queene Elizabeth was in the Flower of her Yeares, was;

> When Hempe is sponne; England's done.

^a Plutarch. Alexander. ii.

b Thou shalt see me again at Philippi. Appian. De Bellis Civilibus.

iv. 134.

^o Thou also wilt taste of Empire. Suetonius. Galba. iv. tells it of Augustus.

Tacitus. History. v. 13.

Suetonius. Domitian. xxiii.
Holinshed. iii. 678. b. Ed. 1587.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Whereby, it was generally conceived, that after the Princes had Reigned, which had the Principiall Letters, of that Word Hempe, (which were Henry, Edward, Mary, Philip, Elizabeth) England should come to vtter Consusion: Which, thankes be to God, is verified only, in the Change of the Name: For that the Kings Stile, is now no more of England, but of Britaine. There was also another Prophecie, before the year of 88. which I doe not well vnderstand.

There shall be feene vpon a day,
Betweene the Baugh, and the May,
The Blacke Fleet of Norway.
When that that is come and gone,
England build Houses of Lime and Stone
For after Warres shall you have None.

It was generally conceived, to be meant of the Spanish Fleet, that came in 88. For that the King of Spaines Surname, as they say, is Norway. The Prediction of Regiomontanus;

Octogefsimus octavus mirabilis Annus;a

Was thought likewise accomplished, in the Sending of that great Fleet, being the greatest in Strength, though not in Number, of all that euer swamme vpon the Sea. As for Cleons Dreame, I thinke it was a Iest. It was, that he was deuoured of a long Dragon; And it was expounded of a Maker of Sausages, that troubled him exceedingly. There are Numbers of the like kinde; Especially if you include Dreames, and Predictions of Astrologie. But I have set downe these sew onely of certaine Credit, for Example. My Iudgement is, that they ought all to be Despised; And ought to serve, but for Winter Talke, by the Fire side. Though when I say Despised, I meane it as for Beleese: For other-

<sup>Eighty Eight, a year of wonders.
Anstophanes. Knights. 195.</sup>

V. 1625. æt. 65.

wife, the Spreading or Publishing of them, is in no fort to be Despised. For they have done much Mischiese: And I see many seuere Lawes made to suppresse them. That, that hath giuen them Grace, and some Credit, consisteth in three Things. First, that Men marke, when they hit, and neuer marke, when they misse: As they doe, generally, also of Dreames. The fecond is, that Probable Coniectures, or obscure Traditions, many times, turne themselues into Prophecies: While the Nature of Man, which coueteth Divination, thinkes it no Perill to foretell that, which indeed they doe but collect. As that of Seneca's Verse. For so much was then subject to Demonstration, that the Globe of the Earth, had great Parts beyond the Atlanticke; which mought be Probably conceived, not to be all Sea: And adding thereto, the Tradition in Plato's Timeus, and his Atlanticus, it mought encourage One, to turne it to a Prediction. The third, and Last (which is the Great one) is, that almost all of them, being infinite in Number, have beene Impostures, and by Idle and crastie Braines, meerely contriued and faigned, after the Euent Past.



1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

37. Of Masques and Triumphs.

Hese Things are but Toyes, to come amongst fuch Serious Observations. But yet, since Princes will haue such Things, it is better, they should be Graced with Elegancy, then Daubed with Cost. Dancing to Song, is a Thing of great State, and Pleasure. I vnderstand it, that the Song be in Quire, placed aloft, and accompanied with some broken Musicke: And the Ditty sitted to the Deuice. Acting in Song, especially in Dialogues, hath an extreme Good Grace: I say Acting, not Dancing, (For that is a Meane and Vulgar Thing;) And the Voices of the Dialogue, would be Strong and Manly, (A Base, and a Tenour; No Treble;) And the Ditty High and Tragicall; Not nice or Dainty. Quires, placed one ouer against another, and taking the Voice by Catches, Antheme wife, giue great Plea-Turning Dances into Figure, is a childish Curiofity. And generally, let it be noted, that those Things, which I here fet downe, are fuch, as doe naturally take the Sense, and not respect Petty Wonderments. It is true, the Alterations of Scenes, so it be quietly, and without Noise, are Things of great Beauty, and Pleasure: For they seed and relieue the Eye, before it be full of the same Obiect. Let the Scenes abound with Light, specially Coloured and Varied: And let the Masquers, or any other, that are to come down from the Scene, haue some Motions, vpon the Scene it selse, before their Comming down: For it drawes the Eye strangely, and makes it with great pleasure, to desire to see that, it cannot persectly discerne. Let the Songs be Loud, and Cheerefull, and

This Essay is not included in the posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

V. 1625.

æt. 65.

not Chirpings, or Pulings. Let the Musicke likewise, be Sharpe, and Loud, and Well Placed. The Colours, that shew best by Candlelight, are; White, Carnation, and a Kinde of Sea-Water-Greene; And Oes, or Spangs, as they are of no great Cost, so they are of most Glory. As for Rich Embroidery, it is lost, and not Discerned. Let the Sutes of the Masquers, be Gracefull, and fuch as become the Person, when the Vizars are off: Not after Examples of Knowne Attires; Turks, Soldiers, Mariners, and the like. Let Antimasques not be long: They have been commonly of Fooles, Satyres, Baboones, Wilde-Men, Antiques, Beasts, Sprites, Witches, Ethiopes, Pigmies, Turquets, Nimphs, Rusticks, Cupids, Statua's Mouing, and the As for Angels, it is not Comicall enough, to put them in Anti-Masques; And any Thing that is hideous, as Deuils, Giants, is on the other fide as vnfit. chiefly, let the Musicke of them, be Recreative, and with some strange Changes. Some Sweet Odours, fuddenly comming forth, without any drops falling, are, in such a Company, as there is Steame and Heate, Things of great Pleasure; and Refreshment. Double Masques, one of Men, another of Ladies, addeth State, and Variety. But All is Nothing, except the Roome be kept Cleare, and Neat.

For *Iusts*, and *Tourneys*, and *Barriers*; The Glories of them, are chiefly in the Chariots, wherein the Challengers make their Entry; Especially if they be drawne with Strange Beasts; As Lions, Beares, Cammels, and the like: Or in the Deuices of their Entrance; Or in the Brauery of their Liueries; Or in the Goodly Furniture of their Horses, and Armour. But enough of these Toyes.



1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

41. Af Psurie.1



Any haue made Wittie Inuectiues against Vfurie.² They say, that it is Pitie, the Deuill should have Gods part, which is the Tithe. That the V furer is the greatest Sabbath Breaker, because his Plough goeth energy

Sunday.3 That the Vfurer is the Droane, that Virgil fpeaketh of:

Ignauum Fucos Pecus à præsepibus arcent.a That the Vfurer breaketh the First Law, that was made for Mankinde, after the Fall; which was, In fudore Vultûs tui comedes Panem tuum; Not, In sudore Vultûs alieni.b That V furers should have Orangetawney Bonnets, because they doe Iudaize. That it is against Nature, for Money to beget Money; And the like. I fay this onely, that Vfury is a Conceffum propter Duritiem Cordis: For since there must be Borrowing and Lending,4 and Men are so hard of Heart, as they will not lend freely, Vfury must be permitted. Some Others have made Suspicious, and Cunning Propositions, of Bankes,⁵ Discouery of Mens Estates, and other Inventions. But few have spoken of Vfury vsefully.6 It is good to set before vs, the Incommodities, and Commodities of Vfury; That the Good may be,

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

¹ TITLE. De Vsura sive Fænore, 'of usury or interest.'
² Vsurie. Fæneratores, 'usurers.'

men should give and receive money on loan.'

5 Bankes. Argentariis, et Excambiis publicis, 'banks and public Bankes. exchanges.

6 Vsefully. Solide et utiliter, 'solidly and usefully.'

They drive away the drones, a slothful race, from the hives. Virgil. Georgics. iv. 168.

b In the sweat of thy face, shalt thou eat thy bread [Gen. iii. 18], not in the sweat of another's face.

^c A concession on account of the hardness of the heart.

<sup>Euery Sunday. Sabbathis, 'on Sabbaths.'
Borrowing and Lending. Ut Pecunias mutuo dent, et accipiant, 'that</sup>

1625. V. æt. 65.

either Weighed out, or Culled out; And warily to prouide, that while we make forth, to that which is better, we meet not, with that which is worse.

The Discommodities of Vsury are: First, that it makes fewer Merchants. For were it not, for this Lazie Trade of Vfury,8 Money would not lie still,9 but would, in great Part, be Imployed vpon Merchandizing; Which is the *Vena Porta* of Wealth 10 in a State. Second, that it makes Poore Merchants. For as a Farmer cannot husband his Ground so well, 11 if he sit at 12 a great Rent; So the Merchant cannot drive his Trade so well, 13 if he sit at 14 great 'Vfury. The Third is incident to the other two; And that is, the Decay of Customes of Kings or States,15 which Ebbe or flow with Merchandizing. The Fourth, that it bringeth the Treasure 16 of a Realme or State, into a few Hands. For the Vfurer 17 being at Certainties, and others at Vncertainties, at the end of the Game; 18 Most of the Money will be in the Boxe; 19 And euer a State flourisheth, when Wealth is more equally 20 spread.21 The Fifth, that it beats downe the Price of Land:22 For the Employment of Money, is chiefly, either

⁷ Meet not with. Intercipiamur et incidamus, 'are intercepted by and

⁸ Trade of Vsury. Pecunia in Fanus Erogatio, 'giving out of money at

⁹ Lie still. Delitescerent præ Socordia, 'be hidden away from idleness.'
10 Of Wealth. Ad Opes introducendas, 'for bringing in wealth.'
11 So well. Ita fructuose, 'so fruitfully.'
12 Sit at. Solvat, 'pay.'
13 So well. Tam commode et lucrose, 'so conveniently and profitably.'
14 If he sit at. Si Pecuniis Fænore sumptis, negotietur, 'if he do business ith money taken up at interest.'

with money taken up at interest.'

¹⁵ Customes of Kings or States. Portoriorum et Vectigalium publicorum, public customs and taxes.'

¹⁶ Treasure. Thesaurum, et Pecunias, 'treasure and money.'

¹⁷ Vsurer. Fæneratoris Lucrum, 'the usurer's gain.'

18 After Game. Prout fit sæpe in Alea, 'as often happens at dice.'

19 The Boxe. Promo, 'the keeper.'

20 Equally. Omitted in the Latin.

21 Spread. Dispergantur, non coacerventur, 'spread not heaped up.'

22 Land. Terræ et Prædiorum, 'laud and farms.'

٧. 1625. æt. 65.

Merchandizing, or Purchasing; 23 And Vfury Way-layes The Sixth, that it doth Dull and Dampe all Industries, Improvements, and new Inventions, wherin Money would be Stirring, if it were not for this Slugge. The Last, that it is the Canker and Ruine of many Mens Estates; Which in processe of Time breeds a Publike Pouertie.

On the other fide, the Commodities of Vfury are. First, that howsoeuer Vfury in some respect hindereth Merchandizing, yet in some other it aduanceth it: For it is certain, that the Greatest Part of Trade, is driven by Young Merchants, vpon Borrowing at Interest: So as if the Vfurer, either call in, or keepe backe his Money, there will ensue presently a great Stand²⁴ of Trade. The Second is, That were it not, for this easie borrowing vpon Interest, Mens necessities would draw vpon them, a most sudden vndoing; In that they would be forced to fell their Meanes (be it Lands or Goods) farre vnder Foot; 25 and fo, whereas Vfury doth but Gnaw vpon them, Bad Markets²⁶ would Swallow them quite vp. As for Mortgaging,²⁷ or Pawning, it will little mend the matter; For either Men will not take Pawnes without Vse; Or if they doe, they will looke precifely for the Forfeiture.²⁸ I remember a Cruell Moneyed Man, in the Country, that would fay; The Deuill take this Vfury, it keepes vs from Forseitures, of Mortgages, and Bonds. The third and Last is; That it is a Vanitie to conceiue, that there would be Ordinary Borrowing without Profit;

²³ Purchasing. Pradiorum Coemptiones, 'purchasing farms.'
24 Stand. Clades, 'destruction.'
25 Farre vnder Foot. Nimis vili pretio, 'at too low a price.'
26 Bad Markets. Distractiones, 'selling piecemeal.'
27 Mortgaging. Ea quæ a Jureconsultis appelluntur Mortua vadia, 'what are called by lawyers mortgages.'
28 Forfeiture. Solutione ad diem minime præstita, summo jure agent, 'if payment is not made at the day, they will act according to the extremity of the law.' of the law.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

And it is impossible to conceive, the Number of Inconueniences, that will ensue, if Borrowing be Cramped. Therefore, to speake of the Abolishing of Vfury is Idle. All States have ever had 29 it, in one Kinde or Rate, or other. So as that Opinion must be sent to Vtopia.

To speake now, of the Reformation and Reiglement of Vfury; How the Difcommodities of it may be best auoided, and the Commodities retained. It appeares by the Ballance, of Commodities, and Difcommodities of Vfury, Two Things are to be Reconciled. The one. that the *Tooth* of *Vfurie* be grinded, that it bite not too much: The other, that there bee left open a Meanes, to inuite Moneyed Men, to lend to the Merchants, for the Continuing and Quickning 30 of Trade. This cannot be done, except you introduce, two feuerall Sorts of Vfury; A Leffe, and a Greater. For if you reduce Vjury, to one Low Rate, it will ease the common⁸¹ Borrower, but the Merchant wil be to feeke for Money. And it is to be noted, that the Trade of Merchandize, being the most Lucratiue, may beare Vsury at a good Rate; Other Contracts not fo.

To ferue both Intentions, the way would be briefly thus. That there be Two Rates of Vfury, The one Free, and Generall³² for All; The other vnder *Licence* only, to Certaine Perfons, and in Certaine Places of Merchandizing.83 First therefore, let Vfury, in generall, be reduced to Fine in the Hundred; 84 And let that Rate be proclaimed to be Free and Current; 35 And let the

Had. Tolerarunt, have tolerated.'
Continuing and Quickning. Ne Commercium intercidat aut languescat,

^{&#}x27;that trade may not be interrupted or grow slack.'

31 Common. Omitted in the Latin.

32 Free, and Generall. Permittatur, 'be permitted.'

33 Certaine Places of Merchandizing. Reipublicae locis, ubi Mercatura fervet, 'places of the State, where commerce is brisk.'

34 Fine in the Hundred. Partem vicesimam . . . in Annum, 'the

twentieth part for a year.'

⁸⁵ Free and Current. Libera omnibus, 'free to all.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

State³⁶ shut it selfe out, to take any Penalty for the same.³⁷ This will preserve Borrowing from any generall Stop or Drinesse.³⁸ This will ease infinite Borrowers in the Countrie. This will, in good Part, raise the Price of Land, because Land purchased at Sixteene yeares Purchase, wil yeeld Six in the Hundred, and somewhat more, whereas this Rate of Interest, Yeelds but Fiue.⁸⁹ This, by like reason, will Encourage and edge, Industrious and Profitable Improvements;40 Because Many will rather venture in that kinde, then take Fiue in the Hundred,41 especially having beene vsed to greater Profit. Secondly, let there be Certaine Perfons licensed to Lend, to knowne Merchants,42 vpon Vfury at a Higher Rate; and let it be with the Cautions following. Let the Rate be, euen with the Merchant himselse,43 somewhat more easie, then that he vsed formerly to pay: For, by that Meanes, all Borrowers 44 shall have some ease, by this Reformation, be he Merchant, or whosoeuer. Let it be no Banke or Common Stocke, but euery Man be Master of his owne Money: Not that I altogether Mislike Banks, but they will hardly be brooked, in regard of certain suspicions. 45

³⁶ State. Princeps sive Respublica, 'prince or state.'
37 Shut it selfe . . . same. Mulctæ omni renunciet, 'renounce all fines.'
38 Drinesse. Difficultate majore, 'greater difficulty.'
39 Because Land . . . but Fine. Quandoquidem annuus Valor prædiorum, hic apud Nos in Anglia, excedet illam Fænoris, ad hanc Proportionem redacti; Quantum annuus Valor sex Librarum, excedit illum quinque tantum, 'since the yearly value of land, with us here in England, will exceed that of interest, reduced to this rate: as the yearly value of £6 exceeds that of £5.'
40 Industrious and Profitable Improvements. Industrias Hominum. ad

⁴⁰ Industrious and Profitable Improvements. Industrias Hominum, ad utilia et lucrosa Inventa, 'the industries of men to useful and profitable inventions.'

⁴¹ Fine in the Hundred. Lucro tam exili, quale diximus, ex Vsuris,

such a small profit, as we have said, from usury.'

42 After Knowne Merchants. Et non aliis quibuscunque Hominibus, and to no other men.'

⁴⁸ Euen with the Merchant himselfe. Omitted in the Latin.

Borrowers. Omitted in the Latin.
Let it be no Banke . . . certain suspicions. Omitted in the Latin.

1625.

æt. 65.

Let the State 46 be answered, some small Matter, for the Licence, and the rest⁴⁷ lest to the Lender: For if the Abatement be but fmall,48 it will no whit discourage the Lender. For he, for Example, that tooke 49 before Ten or Nine in the Hundred, wil fooner descend to Eight in the Hundred, then giue ouer his Trade of Vfury; And goe from Certaine Gaines, to Gaines of Hazard.⁵⁰ Let these Licensed Lenders be in Number Indefinite, but restrained to Certaine Principall Cities and Townes of Merchandizing: For then they will be hardly able, to Colour other Mens Moneyes,⁵¹ in the Country: So as the Licence of Nine,52 will not fucke away the current Rate of Fine: For no Man will fend his Moneyes farre off, nor put them into Vnknown Hands.

If it be Obiected, that this doth, in a Sort, Authorize Vfury, which before was, in some places, but Permissiue: The Answer is; That it is better, to Mitigate Vfury by Declaration, then to suffer it to Rage by Conniuence 58



46 State. Princeps sive Respublica, 'prince or state. ⁴⁷ The rest. Reliquum Lucri, 'the rest of the profit.'

48 Abatement be but small. Lucrum Fæneratoris leviter tantum minuatur, 'the gain of the lender be only slightly lessened.'

Tooke. Quotannis accipere solebat, 'was wont to take yearly.'

Goe from Certaine Gaines, to Gaines of Hazard. Certa cum Incertis

commutabit, 'change certainties for uncertainties.'

51 Colour other Mens Moneyes. Prætextu Licentiarum, Opportunitatem non habebunt pecunias aliorum pro suis commodandi, 'will not have opportunity, under the pretext of their licence, of lending other men's money as their own.'

52 Nine. Novem aut octo Librarum Proportio, Licentia munita, 'the

rate of £9 or £8 fortified by a licence.'

58 If it be Objected . . . Conniuance. Omitted in the Latin.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

45. Of Building.1



Ouses are built to Liue in, and not to Looke on: Therefore let Vse bee preferred before Vniformitie;² Except where both may be

had. Leaue the Goodly Fabrickes of Houses, for Beautie only,3 to the Enchanted Pallaces of the Poets: Who build them with small Cost. Hee that builds a faire House, vpon an ill Seat, committeh Himselse to Prison. Neither doe I reckon it an ill Seat, only, where the Aire is Vnwholfome; But likewise where the Aire is vnequall; As you shall see many fine Seats,4 fet vpon a knap of Ground, Enuironed with Higher Hilles round about it: whereby the Heat of the Sunne is pent in, and the Wind gathereth⁶ as in Troughes; So as you shall have as great Diversitie of Heat and Cold, as if you Dwelt in seuerall Places. Neither is it ill Aire onely, that maketh an ill Seat, but Ill wayes,7 Ill Markets; And, if you will confult with Momus, Ill Neighbours. I speake not of many More: Want of Water; Want of Wood, Shade, and Shelter;8 Want of Fruitfulnesse, and mixture of Grounds of seuerall Natures; Want of Prospect; Want of Leuell9 Grounds; Want of Places, at some neare Distance, for Sports of Hunting, Hauking, and Races; Too neare the Sea, too remote; Hauing the Commo-

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of **1638**.

¹ TITLE. De Ædificiis, 'of buildings.' ² Vniformitie. Pulchritudini, 'beauty.'

⁸ For Beautie only. Quæ Admirationem incutiunt, 'which strike us with admiration.

Fine Seats. Ædes, 'house.'
5 Enuironed. Cincto undique, more Theatri, 'girt on all sides like a

⁶ Gathereth. Variis æstibus reciprocantur, 'are moved backwards and

forwards in various tides.'
7 Wayes. Viarum et Adituum Incorimoditas, 'inconvenience of roads and approaches.'

8 Shelter. Focum, 'fuel.'

9 Leuell. Planæ et æquabilis, 'level and even.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

ditie¹⁰ of Nauigable Riuers, or the discommoditie of their Ouerflowing; Too farre off from great Cities, which may hinder Businesse; Or too neare them, which Lurcheth all Prouisions, and maketh euery Thing deare; Where a Man hath a great Liuing laid together, 11 and where he is scanted: 12 All which, as it is impossible, perhaps, to finde together, so it is good to know them, and thinke of them, that a Man may take as many as he can:18 And if he haue seuerall Dwellings, 14 that he fort them so, that what he wanteth in the One, hee may finde in the Other. Lucullus answered Pompey well; Who when hee saw his Stately Galleries, and Roomes, fo Large and Lightsome, in one of his Houses, said; Surely, an excellent Place for Summer, but how doe you in Winter? Lucullus answered: Why, doe you not think me as Wife, as fome Fowle are, that ever change their Aboad towards the Winter?

To passe from the Seat, to the House it selse; We will doe as Cicero doth, in the Oratours Art; Who writes Bookes De Oratore, and a Booke entitled Orator: Whereof the Former deliuers the Precepts of the Art; And the Latter the Perfection. We will therefore describe a Princely Pallace, making a briefe Modell thereof. For it is strange to see, now in Europe, such Huge Buildings, as the Vatican, and Escuriall, and some Others be, and yet scarce a very Faire Roome in them.

First therefore, I say, you cannot have a Persect

but that we should avoid as many of them as possible.'

14 Haue seuerall Dwellings. Domos plures adificet, 'build several

houses.

¹⁰ Hauing the Commoditie. Nulla commoditas, 'no commodity.'
11 Great Liuing laid together. Latifundia ampla possident, aut acquirere possit, 'possesses or can acquire large estates.'

¹² Scanted. Pennas extendere nequeat, 'cannot extend his wings.'
13 All which, as it is impossible . . . many as he can. Quæ singula minime eo animo enumeramus, acsi Domus aliqua his Incommodis omnibus vacare possit verum ut tot ex illis evitemus, quot evitari concedatur, 'which we have not enumerated, as if any house could be without all these disadvantages,

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Pallace, except you have two feuerall Sides; A Side for the Banquet, as is spoken of in the Booke of Hester; And a Side; for the Houshold:15 The One for Feasts¹⁶ and Triumphs, and the Other for Dwelling. I vnderstand both these Sides, to be not onely Returnes, 17 but Parts of the Front; And to be vniforme without, though feuerally Partitioned¹⁸ within; And to be on both Sides, of a Great and Stately Tower, in the Middest of the Front; That as it were, ioyneth them together, on either Hand. I would have on the Side of the Banquet, in Front, one only Goodly Roome, aboue Staires, of some Fortie¹⁹ Foot high; And vnder it, a Roome,²⁰ for a *Drefsing* or *Preparing Place*, at Times of Triumphs.²¹ On the other Side, which is the Houshold Side, I wish it divided at the first, into a Hall, and a Chappell, (with a Partition betweene;)22 Both of good State, and Bignesse: And those not to goe all the length, but to haue, at the further end, a Winter, and a Summer Parler, both Faire.23 And vnder these Roomes,24 A Faire and Large Cellar,25 funcke vnder Ground: And likewise,26 some Privie Kitchins, with Butteries, and Pantries, and the like. As for the Tower, I would have it two Stories, of Eighteene²⁷ Foot High a peece, aboue the two Wings;

Houshold. Mansionis sivæ familiæ, 'dwelling or household.'

Feasts. Magnificentias et Celebritates, 'splendours and celebrations.'

Returnes. Latera Domus, 'sides of the house,'

¹⁸ Severally Partitioned. Longe diversas, 'far different.'

19 Fortie. Quinquaginta pedes ad minus, 'fifty feet at least.'

20 A Roome. Cameram item alteram, similis longitudinis et latitudinis, 'another room of the same length and width.'

21 Times of Triumphs. Festa, Ludos, et ejusmodi Magnificentias; Actores etiam dum se ornent et porent, commode recipiat, 'feasts, plays, and such magnificences, and to receive conveniently the actors while dressing and preparing.'

22 (With a Partition betweene;) Omitted in the Latin.

28 Both Faire. Omitted in the Latin.

Excepto sacello, 'exce

²⁴ After Vnder these Roomes. Excepto sacello, 'except the chapel.'
25 Faire and Large Cellar. Amplas Cellas, 'large cellars.'
26 And likewise. Quæ inserviant, 'which may serve for.'
27 Eighteene. Quindecim, 'fifteen.'

And a Goodly²⁸ Leads vpon the Top, railed with²⁹ Statua's interposed; And the same Tower to bee divided into Roomes, as shall be thought fit.30 Staires likewise, to the vpper Roomes, let them bee vpon a Faire open Newell, 31 and finely raild in, with Images of Wood, cast into a Brasse³² Colour: And a very faire³³ Landing Place at the Top. But this is to be, if you doe not point, any of the lower Roomes, for a Dining Place of Seruants. For otherwise,34 you shall have the Servants Dinner, after your owne: For the Steame of it will come vp as in a Tunnell. And fo much for the Front. Only, I vnderstand the Height of the first Staires, to be Sixteene35 Foot, which is the Height of the Lower Roome.

Beyond this *Front*, is there to be a Faire³⁶ Court, but three Sides of it, of a Farre Lower building, then the Front. And in all the foure Corners of that Court, Faire Staire Cases, 87 cast into Turrets, on the Outside, and not within the Row of Buildings themselues. those Towers, are not to be of the Height of the Front; But rather Proportionable to the Lower Building. Let the Court not be paued, 88 for that striketh vp a great Heat in Summer, and much Cold in Winter.

²⁸ Goodly. Æquabili, 'even.'
²⁹ Railed with. Per fulcra Laterum, 'by the rails of the sides.'
⁸⁰ As shall be thought fit. Omitted in the Latin.
⁸¹ A Faire open Newell. Apertos esse, et in se revertentes, et per Senas

subinde divisos, 'open, turning back, and divided into sixes.'

32 Brasse. Inauratis, vel saltem ænei coloris, 'gilded, or at least of 2

brass colour.'

33 Very faire. Spatiosa et lata, 'roomy and wide.'

34 For otherwise . . . your owne. Omitted in the Latin.

35 Sixteene. Viginti, 'twenty.'

36 Faire. Spatiosam, 'roomy.'

37 Faire Staire . . . Buildings. Turres extruantur, And Cradus, onibus. Staire Staire. Buildings. Turres extruantur, Altitudinem Laterum Prædictorum nonnihil superantes, ad Gradus, quibus in superiora ascendatur, capiendos: Quæ Turres non recipiantur in Planam ædificii: Sed extra promineant, 'towers should be built, not exceeding the height of the said sides, to hold staircases to ascend to the upper rooms; which towers must not be received into the level of the building but stand beyond it.'

88 Paued. Lapidibus latis quadrangulis substernatur, 'be paved with broad square stones.'

broad square stones.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

But onely fome Side Alleys, 99 with a Crosse, and the Quarters to Graze, being kept Shorne, but not too neare Shorne. The Row of Returne, 40 on the Banquet Side, Let it be all Stately 41 Galleries; In which Galleries, Let there be42 three, or fine Cupola's, in the Length of it, placed at equall distance: And fine Coloured Windowes of feuerall workes.48 On the Houshold Side,44 Chambers of Presence, and Ordinary Entertainments, with some Bed-chambers; And let all three Sides, be a double House, without Thorow Lights, on the Sides,45 that you may have Roomes from the Sunne,46 both for Fore-noone, and Afternoone. Cast it also, that you may have Roomes,47 both for Summer, and Winter: Shadie for Summer, and Warme⁴⁸ for Winter. You shall have sometimes Faire Houses, so full of Glasse, 49 that one cannot tell, where to become, to be out of the Sunne, or Cold: For Inbowed⁵⁰ Windowes, I hold them of good Vie; (In Cities indeed, Vpright⁵¹ doe better, in respect of the Vniformitie towards the Street;) For they bee Prettie Retiring Places for Conference; And besides, they keepe both the Wind, and Sunne off: For that

44 After Household Side. Simul cum Latere tertio e regione Frontis,

46 From the Sunne. In quas sol non intret, 'in which the sun may not enter.'

³⁹ Alleys. Ambulacra, ex ejusmodi Lapidibus, 'walks of this kind of stone.' 40 The Row of Returne. Latus universum Area, 'the whole side of the

⁴¹ Stately. Spatiosæ et speciosæ, 'roomy and fair.'
42 Let there be. Sint in Laquearibus, 'let there be in the ceilings.'
43 Of seuerall workes. Ubi pingantur Columnæ, Imagines omnigenæ,'
Flores, et similia, 'where columns, images of all kinds, flowers and the like are painted.'

together with the third side towards the front.'

45 Without Thorow Lights, on the Sides. Non translucida, sed ex altera tantum parte fenestrata, 'without through lights, but windowed only on one side.'

⁴⁷ Roomes. Cubicula et Cameræ, 'bedrooms and chambers.'
48 Warme. Ad frigus arcendum, 'to keep out the cold.'
49 Glasse. Vitro et Fenestris, 'glass and windows.'
50 Inbowed. Prominentes sive arcuatas, 'projecting or embowed.'
51 Vpright. Ad Planum Ædifici, et minime protuberantes, 'in the plane of the buildings and not projecting.'

which would strike almost thorow the Roome, doth scarce passe the Window. But let them be but few,

1625.

Foure in the Court, On the Sides onely.⁵²

Beyond this Court, let there be an Inward Court of the same Square, and Height; Which is to be enuironed, with the Garden, on all Sides: And in the Inside, Cloistered on all Sides, vpon Decent and Beautifull Arches, as High as the first Story. On the Vnder Story, 53 towards the Garden, Let it be turned 54 to a Grotta,55 or Place of Shade, or Estimation. And onely haue opening and Windowes towards the Garden; And be Leuell vpon the Floare, no whit funke vnder Ground, to auoid all Dampishnesse. 56 And let there be a Fountaine,⁵⁷ or some faire Worke of Statua's, in the Middest of this Court; And to be Paued as the other Court was. These Buildings to be for Privie Lodgings, 58 on both Sides; And the End, 59 for Privie Whereof, you must fore-see, that one of Galleries. them,60 be for an *Infirmary*, if the Prince, or any Speciall Person should be Sicke, with Chambers, 61 Bed-chamber, Anticamera, and Recamera, ioyning to it. This vpon the Second Story. Vpon the Ground

⁵⁸ Vnder Story. Pars autem exterior Solarii inferioris, 'the external

part of the lower story.'

54 Turned. Quatenus ad duo Latera, convertatur, 'turned, as to two sides.

55 Grotta. Specum sive Cavernam, (grottam Moderni vocant), 'cave or cavern (grotto, the moderns call it).'

⁵² On the Sides onely. Dua scilicet, ex utroque Latere Area, 'two, that is, on each side of the court.'

be To avoid all Dampishnesse. Et eleganti Pavimento strata, ad Terrae Vapores excludendos, and paved with a fair pavement to keep off the vapours of the earth.'

Fountaine. Fons splendidus, 'splendid fountain.'

Lodgings. Cameris, et Conclavibus, 'chambers and closets.'

End. Latus transversum, 'cross side.'

60 One of them. Aliqua, tam ex Cameris et Conclavibus, quam ex Porticibus, 'some, as well of the chambers and closets, as of the galleries.'

61 With Chambers. Habeant autem Portiones singula agris destinate (ut moderni loquuntur), 'let also each portion, intended for the sick, have what the moderns call.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Story,62 a Faire Gallery, Open, vpon Pillars: And vpon the Third Storey68 likewise, an Open Gallery vpon Pillars, to take the Prospect, and Freshnesse of the Garden. At both Corners of the further Side, by way of Returne,64 Let there be65 two Delicate or Rich Cabinets,66 Daintily Paued, Richly Hanged, Glased with Crystalline Glasse, and a Rich Cupola in the Middest; And all other Elegancie that may be thought vpon.67 In the Vpper Gallery too, I wish that there may be, if the Place will yeeld it, some Fountaines 68 Running, in diuers Places, from the Wall, with fome fine Auoidances. 69 70 And thus much, for the Modell of the Pallace:71 Saue that, you must have, before you come to the Front, three Courts. A Greene⁷² Court Plain, with a Wall about it: A Second Court 73 of the fame, 74 but more Garnished, with Little Turrets, or rather Embellishments, vpon the Wall: And a Third

ground story towards the garden be converted into a gallery.'

68 Third Storey. Supra Solarium tertium, ex omnibus tribus Lateribus,

on the third story on all three sides.'

64 By way of Returne. In Solario secundo, 'on the second story.'

65 Let there be. Accommodentur et ornentur, 'let there be fitted and furnished.'

66 Cabinets. Conclavia (Cabinettos Moderni vocant); 'closets (the moderns call them cabinets).'

67 And all other Elegancie that may be thought vpon. Sint autem Conclavia illa, rebus curiosis omnigenis, et spectatu dignis, referta, 'let those closets' be filled with curious things of all kinds worth looking at.'

68 Fountaines. Fonticulos quosdam aquam emittentes, 'some fountains discharging water.'

69 With some fine Auoidances. Qui per secretos Tubos iterum transeant,

which may cross again by secret tubes.'

70 After Auoidances. Interior autem pars, in Solario superiore, versus Aream, formetur in Porticus et Ambulacra, bene munita et obducta, ad usum Convalescentium, 'let the inner part, in the upper story, towards the area, be formed into galleries and walls, well walled and covered, for the use of convalescents.'

71 After Of the Pallace. Nam de Balneis, et Piscinis non, loquor, 'for I

say nothing of the baths and ponds.'

72 Greene. Viridis, gramine vestita. 'green, clothed with grass.'

73 Second Court. Et juxta Parietem Arboribus, ordine positis, sata area altera, 'and another area with trees planted in order near the wall.'

74 Of the same. Ejusdem amplitudinis, 'of the same size."

⁶² Vpon the Ground Story. At Latus transversum Solarii inferioris, versus Hortum convertatur in Porticum, 'but let the transverse side of the

1625.

æt. 65.

Court, to make a Square with the Front, but not to be built,75 nor yet enclosed with a Naked Wall, but enclosed with Tarrasses, Leaded 76 alost, and fairely garnished,77 on the three Sides; And Cloistered on the Infide, with Pillars, and not with Arches Below. As for Offices,78 let them stand at Distance,79 with some Low 80 Galleries, to passe from them to the Pallace it Selfe.



75 Built. Ædificio aliquo circumdatam, 'surrounded with a building.'
76 Leaded. Plumbo, vel Lapide Quadrato, coopertis, 'covered with lead or square stones.

77 Garnished. Elegantibus Statuis parvis, ænei coloris, munitis, 'garnished with fair small statues of a brazen colour.'

78 Offices. Ad Ædificia omnia, quæ usibus familiaribus inserviunt, 'all the buildings which serve for household purposes.'

79 Distance. Distantiam, a Palatio ipso, 'distance from the palace itself.'

80 Low. Humiliores et obtectæ, 'low and concealed.'

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

48. Of Gardens.

OD Almightie¹ first Planted a Garden. And indeed, it is the Purest of Humane pleasure. It is the Greatest Refreshment² to the Spirits of Man; Without which, Buildings and Pallaces are but Groffe³ Handy-works: And a Man shall euer see, that when Ages grow to Ciuility and Elegancie, Men come to Build Stately, sooner then to Garden Finely: 4 As if Gardening 5 were the Greater Perfection. I doe hold it, in the Royall Ordering of 6 Gardens, there ought to be Gardens, for all the Moneths in the Yeare: In which, feuerally, Things of Beautie, may be then in Season.7 For December, and Ianuary, and the Latter Part of November, you must take such Things, as are Greene all Winter: Holly; Iuy; Bayes; Iuniper; Cipresse Trees; Eugh; Pine-Apple-Trees; Firre-Trees; Rose-Mary; Lauander; Periwinckle, the White, the Purple, and the Blene; Germander; Flagges; Orenge-Trees; Limon-Trees; And Mirtles, if they be stirred; 11 And Sweet Marioram warme fet. 12 There followeth, for the latter Part of *Ianuary*, and *February*, the Mezerion¹³

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

1 God Almightie. Deus ipse, 'God himself.'
2 Is the greatest Refreshment. Reficit et oblectat, 'restores and delights.'
3 Grosse. Nec sapiunt Naturam, 'and have no savour of nature.'
4 Garden Finely. Ad Hortorum Elegantiam et Amanitatem, 'to elegance and pleasantness of gardens.'
6 Gardening. Elegantia illa Hortorum, 'that elegance of gardens.'
6 Ordering of. Omitted in the Latin.
7 Things of Beautie, may be then in Season. Planta and illa Moreo.

7 Things of Beautie, may be then in Season. Planta, qua illo Mense florent et vigent, producantur, 'plants, which flourish and bloom in that

morent et vigent, producantur, 'plants, which flourish and bloom in that month, may be grown.'

8 After Eugh. Buxus, 'box.'

9 Blene. [A misprint for blue.] Caruleo, 'blue.'

10 Flagges. Irides quoad Folia, 'flags for the leaves.'

11 If they be stirred. Si Calidariis conserventur, 'if they be stoved.'

12 Warme set. Juxta Parietem et versus Solem satus, 'set near the wall and towards the sun.'

18 Mezerion. Arbustum Chamæleæ Germanicæ, sive Mezereontis. [John Gerard, M.D., in his Herball, p. 1216. Ed. 1507, fol. calls this "The Spurge Flaxe, or the Dwarffe Bay. . . . Which the Dutch men call Mezereon, is a small shrub about two cubits high."]

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Tree, which then blossomes; Crocus Vernus, both the Yellow, and the Gray; Prime-Roses; Anemones; The Early Tulippa; Hiacynthus Orientalis; Camaïris; Frettellaria. For March, There come Violets, specially the Single Blew, which are the Earliest; The Yellow Daffadill; The Dazie; The Almond-Tree in Blossome; The Peach-Tree in Blossome; The Cornelian-Tree in Blossome; Sweet-Briar. In Aprill follow, The Double white Violet; The Wall-flower; 14 The Stock-Gilly-Flower; 15 The Couslip; Flower-De-lices, and Lillies of Natures; Rose-mary Flowers; The Tulippa; The Double Piony; The Pale16 Daffadill; The French17 Honny-Suckle; The Cherry-Tree in Blossome; The Dammasin, and Plum 18-Trees in Blossome; The White-Thorne¹⁹ in Leafe; The Lelacke Tree. In May, and Iune, come Pincks of all forts, Specially the Blush Pincke; Roses of all kinds, except the Muske, which comes later; Hony-Suckles; Strawberries; Buglosse; Columbine; The French Mary-gold; 20 Flos Africanus; 21 Cherry-Tree in Fruit; Ribes; Figges in Fruit; Raspes; Vine Flowers; Lauender in Flowers; The Sweet Satyrian, with the White Flower; Herba Muscaria; Lilium Conuallium; The Apple-tree in Blossome.22 In Iuly, come Gilly-Flowers of all Varieties; Muske Roses; The Lime-Tree in blossome; Early Peares, and Plummes in Fruit;²³ Ginnitings; Quadlins.²⁴ In August, come Plummes of all forts in Fruit,25 Peares; Apricockes; Berberies; Filberds; Muske-Melons;

<sup>Wall-flower. Parietaria lutea, 'yellow wallflower.'
Stock-Gilly-Flower. Leucoium, 'white violet.'
Pale. Verus, 'true.'</sup>

¹⁶ Pale. Verus, 'true.'
17 French. Sabaudicum, 'of Savoy.'
18 Plum. Prunus diversi generis, 'plums of various kinds.'
19 White-Thorne. Acanthus.
20 French Mary-Gold. Omitted in the Latin.
21 After Flos Africanus. Simplex, et multiplex, 'single and double.'
22 After Apple-tree in Blossome. Flos Cyaneus, 'corn-flower.'
23 In Fruit. Omitted in the Latin.
24 Ginnittings: Quadlins. Poma, 'apples.'
25 In Fruit. Omitted in the Latin,

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Monks Hoods,²⁶ of all colours. In September, come Grapes; Apples; Poppies of all colours; Peaches; Melo-Cotones; Nectarines; Cornelians; Wardens; In October, and the beginning of November, Ouinces. come Seruices; Medlars; Bullises; Roses Cut or Removed to come late;²⁷ Hollyokes;²⁸ and fuch like. These Particulars are for the Climate of London; But my meaning is Perceiued, that you may have Wer Perpetuum, a as the Place affords.

And because, the Breath of Flowers, is farre Sweeter in the Aire, (where it comes and Goes, like the Warbling of Musick) then in the hand,29 therfore nothing is more fit for that delight,30 then to know, what be the Flowers, and Plants, 31 that doe best perfume the Aire.³² Roses Damask and Red,³³ are fast Flowers of their Smels;³⁴ So that; you may walke by a whole Row of them, and finde Nothing of their Sweetnesse; Yea though it be, in a Mornings Dew. Bayes likewife yeeld no Smell,³⁵ as they grow. Rosemary little; Nor Sweet-Marioram That, which aboue all Others, yeelds the Sweetest Smell in the Aire, is the Violet; Specially the White-double-Violet, which comes³⁶ twice a Yeare; About the middle of Aprill, and about Bartholomewtide.37 Next to that is, the Muske-Rose. Then the

a A perpetual spring.

Monks Hoods. Delphinum, sive Consolida Regalis, 'wolf's bane.'

Cut or Remoued to come late. Seræ, 'late.'

Hollyokes. Malvæ arborescentes flore Roseo, 'hollyoaks with rose-coloured flowers.'

In the hand. Eos decerpas manu, 'you pluck them with your hand.'

80 Delight. Delectationeni illam, quæ ex Odore Florum percipitur, 'that delight which is received from the scent of flowers.'

delight which is received from the scent of flowers.'

81 Plants. Plantas, quæ adhuc crescentes, nec avulsæ, 'plants which are still growing and not plucked.'

82 Perfume. Maxime emittunt Auras suaves, et Aerem Odore perfundunt, 'mostly emit sweet breath and perfume the air.'

83 After Red. Dum crescunt, 'while they grow.'

84 After Smell. Nec Aerem tingunt, 'and do not affect the air.'

85 No Smell. Odoris parum, 'little smell.'

86 Comes. Floret, 'flowers.'

87 Bartholomew-tide. Finem Augusti, 'end of August.'

1625. æt. 65. V.

Strawberry Leaues dying, which [yeeld] a most Excellent Cordiall Smell Then the Flower of the Vines; It is a little dust, like the dust of a Bent,38 which growes vpon the Cluster, in the First comming forth. Then Sweet Briar. Then Wall-Flowers, which are very Delightfull, to be set vnder a Parler, or Lower Chamber Window. Then Pincks, specially the Matted Pinck, and Cloue Gilly-flower.39 Then the Flowers of the Lime tree. Then the Hony-Suckles, so they be somewhat a farre off.40 Of Beane Flowers I speake not, because they are Field Flowers. But those which Perfume the Aire most delightfully, not passed by as the rest,41 but being Troden vpon and Crushed, are Three: That is Burnet, Wilde-Time, and Water-Mints. Therefore, you are to fet whole Allies of them, to have the Pleasure, when you walke or tread.42

For Gardens, (Speaking of those, which are indeed Prince-like, as we have done of Buildings) the Contents, ought not well to be, vnder Thirty Acres of Ground; And to be divided into three Parts: A Greene in the Entrance; A Heath 43 or Defart in the Going forth; And the Garden in the middest; Besides Alleys, on both Sides. And I like well, that Foure Acres of Ground, be assigned to the Greene; Six to the Heath; Foure and Foure to either Side; 44 And Twelue to the Maine Garden. The Greene hath two pleasures; The one, because nothing is more Pleasant to the Eye, then Greene Grasse kept finely shorne; The other, because it will give you a faire Alley in the midst, by which you may go in front vpon a Stately Hedge, which is to

<sup>Bent. In caule Plantaginis, 'on the stalk of a plantain.'
Specially the Matted Pinck, and Cloue Gilly-flower. Tam minores,</sup>

quam majores, 'both small and large.'

40 After A farre off. Tum flores lavendulæ, 'the lavender flowers.'

41 Not passed by as the rest. Omitted in the Latin.

42 Tread. Vt Odorem eorum calcando exprimas, 'that you may press out their smell by treading on them.

⁴⁸ Heath. Fruticetum, 'thicket.'
44 After to either Side. Ad Ambulacra, 'for walks planted with trees.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

inclose the Garden. But, because the Alley will be long, and in great Heat of the Yeare, or Day, you ought not to buy the shade in the Garden, by Going in the Sunne thorow the Greene, therefore you are, of either Side the Greene, to Plant a Couert Alley, vpon Carpenters Worke, about Twelue Foot in Height, by which you may goe in Shade, into the Garden, As for the Making of Knots, or Figures, with Divers Coloured Earths, that they may lie vnder the Windowes of the House, on that Side, which the Garden stands, they be but Toyes: You may see as good Sights, 45 many times, in Tarts. The Garden is best to be Square; Incompassed, on all the Foure Sides, with a Stately Arched Hedge. The Arches to be vpon Pillars, of Carpenters Worke, of some Ten Foot high, and Six Foot broad: And the Spaces between, of the fame Dimension, with the Breadth of the Arch. Ouer the Arches, let there bee an Entire Hedge, of some Foure Foot High, framed 46 also vpon Carpenters Worke: And vpon the Vpper Hedge, ouer euery Arch, a little Turret, with a Belly, enough to receive a Cage of Birds: And ouer euery Space, betweene the Arches, some other little Figure,47 with Broad Plates of Round Coloured Glasse, gilt,48 for the Sunne, to Play vpon. But this Hedge I entend to be, raised vpon a Bancke, not Steepe, but gently Slope, of some Six Foot, set all with Flowers. Also I vnderstand, that this Square of the Garden, should not be the whole Breadth of the Ground, but to leaue, on either Side, Ground enough, for diversity of Side Alleys: Vnto which, the Two Couert Alleys of the Greene, may deliuer you. But there must be, no Alleys with Hedges, at either End,

⁴⁶ Framed. Omitted in the Latin.

⁴⁷ Little Figure. Figuræ inauratæ, 'gilt figures.'
48 Gilt. Omitted in the Latin.

1625.

æt. 65.

of this great Inclosure: 49 Not at the Hither End,50 for letting your Prospect vpon this Faire Hedge from the Greene; Nor at the Further End,51 for letting your Prospect from the Hedge,⁵² through the Arches, vpon the *Heath*.

For the Ordering of the Ground, within the Great Hedge,58 I leave it to Variety of Deuice; Aduling neuerthelesse, that whatsoeuer forme you cast it into, first it be not too Busie, or full of Worke. Wherein I, for my part, doe not like Images Cut out in Iuniper, or other Garden stusse: They be for Children. Little low Hedges, Round, like VVelts,54 with some Pretty Pyramides, I like well: And in some Places, Faire Columnes 55 vpon Frames of Carpenters VVorke.⁵⁶ I would also, haue the Alleys, Spacious and Faire. You may haue Closer⁵⁷ Alleys vpon the Side Grounds, but none in the Maine Garden.⁵⁸ I wish also, in the very Middle, a Faire Mount, with three Afcents, and Alleys, enough for foure to walke a breast; Which I would have to be Perfect Circles, without any Bulwarkes,59 or Imbofments; 60 And the Whole Mount, to be Thirty Foot high; And some fine Banquetting House, with some Chimneys neatly cast, and without too much Glasse.

For Fountaines, they are a great Beauty, and Refreshment; But Pooles marre all, and make the Garden

⁴⁹ Either end, of this great Inclosure. Ad Introitum et Exitum Porti, 'at the entrance and outlet of the garden.'

⁵⁰ Hither End. Introitu, 'entrance.'
51 Further End. Exitu, 'outlet.'
52 From the Hedge. Omitted in the Latin.
53 Great Hedge. Claustrum sepis, 'boundary of the hedge.'
54 Welts. Fimbriarum, 'a fringe [or border].'

⁵⁵ Faire Columnes. Columnas etiam, et Pyramides altas, 'high columns also and pyramids.

⁵⁶ After Carpenters Worke. In aliquibus locis sparsas, Sepibus vestilas,

^{&#}x27;set apart in places covered with hedges.'

57 Closer. Angustiora et obtectiora, 'narrow and more concealed.'

58 Maine Garden. In Pomærio Horti præcipui, 'in the outside of the main garden.'

Bulwarkes. Figuris Propugnaculorum, 'figures of bulwarks.'
 Imbosments. Omitted in the Latin.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

vnwholesome, and full of Flies, and Frogs. Fountaines intend to be of two Natures: The One, that Sprinckleth or Spouteth Water; 61 The Other a Faire Receipt of Water,62 of some Thirty or Forty Foot Square, but without Fish, or Slime, or Mud. For the first, the Ornaments of Images Gilt, or of Marble, which are in vie, doe well: But the maine Matter is fo to Conuey the Water, as it neuer Stay,63 either in the Bowles, or in the Cesterne; That the Water be neuer by Rest Discoloured, Greene, or Red, or the like; Or gather any Mossinesse or Putrefaction. Besides that, it is to be cleanfed euery day 64 by the Hand. Also some Steps vp to it, and some Fine Pauement about it, doth well. As for the other Kinde of Fountaine, which we may call a Bathing Poole, it may admit much Curiofity, and Beauty; wherewith we will not trouble our felues: As, that the Bottome be finely Paued, 65 And with Images: The fides likewife; And withall Embellished with Coloured Glasse, and such Things of Lustre; Encompassed also, with fine Railes 66 of Low Statua's. But the Maine Point, is the same, which we mentioned, in the former Kinde of Fountaine; which is, that the Water be in Perpetuall Motion, Fed by a Water higher then the Poole, and Deliuered into it by faire Spouts, and then discharged away vnder Ground, by some Equalitie of Bores, that it stay little. And for fine Deuices, of Arching Water without Spilling, and Making it rife in seuerall Formes, (of Feathers, Drinking Glasses, Canopies, and the like, 67)

⁶¹ After Spouteth Water. Cum Crateribus suis, 'with its basins.'
62 Water. Aquæ puræ, 'pure water.'
63 Neuer Stay. Perpetuo fluat, Nec consistat, 'flows continuously and does not stay.

⁶⁴ Euery day. Quotidie, ut maneat limpida, 'every day, that it may remain clear.'

⁶⁵ Finely Paued. Decoratum, 'adorned with.'
66 Fine Railes. Clausura, 'enclosure.'
67 And the like. Campanarum et similium; Etiam rupes artificiosas, et kujusmodi, 'bells and the like; also, artificial rock and the like.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

they be pretty things to looke on, but Nothing to Health and Sweetnesse.

For the Heath, which was the Third Part of our Plot, I wish it to be framed, as much as may be, to a Naturall wildnesse. Trees I would have none in it;68 But some Thickets, made onely of Sweet-Briar, and Honny-fuckle, and some Wilde Vine amongst; And the Ground set with Violets, Strawberries, and Prime-Roses. For these are Sweet, 69 and prosper in the Shade. And these to be in the *Heath*, here and there, not in any Order. 70 I like also little *Heaps*, in the Nature of Mole-hils, (such as are in Wilde Heaths) to be set, some with Wilde Thyme; Some with Pincks; Some with Germander, that gives a good Flower to the Eye; Some with Periwinckle; Some with Violets; Some with Strawberries; Some with Couslips; Some with Daisies; Some with Red-Roses; Some with Lilium Conuallium; Some with Sweet-Williams Red; Some with Beares-Foot; And the like Low Flowers, being withal Sweet, and Sightly. Part of which Heapes, to be with Standards, of little Bushes, 71 prickt vpon their Top, and Part without. The Standards to be Roses; Iuniper; Holly; Beare-berries (but here and there, because of the Smell of their Blossome;)72 Red

⁶⁸ After None in it. Nisi quod in aliquibus locis, erigi præcipio Arborum series, quæ in Vertice Ambulacra contineant, Ramis Arborum cooperta, cum Fenestris. Subjaceat autem Pars Soli Floribus Odoris suavis abunde consita, qui Auras in superius exhalent; Alias Fruticetum apertum esse sine Arboribus velim, 'except that in some places I should direct rows of trees to be planted, which may cover the paths with their top branches, leaving openings: a part, moreover, should be exposed to the sun, and plentifully planted with flowers of sweet edours, to exhale their breath above. Other-

openings: a part, moreover, should be exposed to the sun, and plentifully planted with flowers of sweet odours, to exhale their breath above. Otherwise, I should have the heath open without trees.'

69 Sweet. Jucundum spirant Odorem, 'breathe a pleasant smell.'

70 And these are to be in the Heath, here and there, not in any Order. Dumeta autem, et Ambulacra super Arbores, spargi volumus ad placitum, non ordine aliquo collocari, 'thickets and the walks without the trees, I would have scattered according to pleasure, not placed in any order.'

71 Standards, of little Bushes. Frutices, 'shrubs.'

72 Smell of their Blossome. Odoris gravitatem, 'strength of their smell.'

V. 1625. æt. 65.

Currans; Goose-berries; Rose-Mary; Bayes; Sweet-Briar; and fuch like. But these Standards, to be kept with Cutting, that they grow not out of Courfe.

For the Side Grounds, you are to fill them with Varietie of Alleys, Private, to give a full Shade; Some of them, wherefoeuer the Sun be. You are to frame fome of them likewise for Shelter, that when the Wind blows Sharpe, you may walke, as in a Gallery. And those Alleys must be likewise hedged, at both Ends, to keepe out the Wind; And these Closer Alleys, must bee very finely Grauelled, and no Grasse, because of Going wet. In many of these Alleys likewise, you are to fet Fruit-Trees of all Sorts; As well vpon the Walles, as in Ranges. And this would be generally observed, that the Borders,73 wherin you plant your Fruit-Trees, be Faire 74 and Large, and Low, and not Steepe; And Set with Fine Flowers, but thin and sparingly,75 lest they Deceiue 76 the Trees. At the End of both the Side Grounds, I would have a Mount of fome Pretty Height, leauing the Wall of the Enclosure, Brest high, to looke abroad into the Fields.

For the Maine Garden, I doe not Deny, but there should be some Faire⁷⁷ Alleys, ranged on both Sides, with Fruit Trees; And some Pretty Tufts of Fruit Trees, And Arbours with Seats, set in some Decent Order; But these to be, by no Meanes, set too thicke; But to leave the Maine Garden, so as it be not close, but the Aire Open and Free. For as for Shade, I would have you rest, vpon the Alleys of the Side Grounds, there to walke, if you be Disposed, in the Heat of the Yeare, 78 or day; But to make Account,

⁷⁸ Borders. Terra elevata, 'raised ground.'
74 Faire. Omitted in the Latin.

⁵⁵ Sparingly. Omitted in the Latin.
56 Deceiue. Succo defraudent, 'rob of moisture.'
57 Faire. Minime angusta, 'not narrow.'

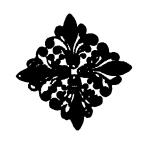
⁷⁸ After Of the Yeare. Vernas et autumnales, 'spring and autumn.'

1625. V.

æt. 65.

that the Maine Garden, is for the more Temperate Parts of the yeare; And in the Heat of Summer, for the Morning, and the Euening, or Ouer-cast Dayes.

For Auiaries, I like them not, except they be of that Largenesse, as they may be Turffed, and have Living Plants, and Bushes, set in them; That the Birds may haue more Scope, 79 and Natural Nestling,80 and that no Fouleneffe appeare, in the Floare of the Auiary.81 So I haue made a Platform of a Princely Garden, Partly by Precept, Partly by Drawing, not a Modell, but some generall Lines of it;82 And in this I have spared for no Cost. But it is Nothing, for Great Princes, that for the most Part, taking Aduice with Workmen,83 with no Lesse Cost,84 fet their Things together; And fometimes adde Statua's, and fuch Things, for State, and Magnificence, but nothing to the true Pleasure 85 of a Garden.



⁷⁾ Scope. Liberius volitent, et se per diversa oblectare, 'fly about freely and enjoy themselves in divers wavs.

⁸⁰ Naturall Nestling. Componere, 'settle.'
81 This paragraph follows after Auiary. Quantum vero ad Ambulacra in Clivis, et variis Ascensibus amanis conficienda, illa natura Dona sunt. nec ubique extrui possunt: Nos autem ea posuimus, quæ omni loco conveniunt, 'as to walks to be made on a slope, and with various pleasing ascents, these are the gifts of nature, and cannot be made everywhere. We,

however, have mentioned what suits every place.'

82 By Drawing, not a Modell, but some generall Lines of it. Partime modulo generali, sed minime accurato, 'partly by a general model but not a detailed one.

⁸⁸ Workmen. Hortulanos, 'gardeners.'
84 Cost. Sumptu, parum cum Judicio, 'cost, with little judgment.'
85 Pleasure. Voluptatem et Amanitatem, 'pleasure and delight.'

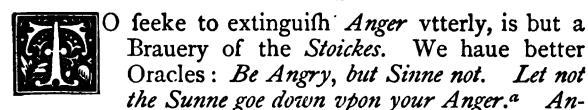
V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

57. Of Anger.



ger must be limited, and confined, both in Race, and in Time. We will first speake, How the Naturall Inclination, and Habit, To be Angry, may be attempred, and calmed. Secondly, How the Particular Motions of Anger, may be repressed, or at least refrained from doing Mischiese. Thirdly, How to raise Anger, or appease Anger in Another.

For the first; There is no other Way, but to Meditate and Ruminate² well, vpon the Effects³ of Anger, how it troubles 4 Mans life. And the best Time, to doe this, is, to looke backe vpon Anger, when the Fitt is throughly ouer. Seneca faith well; That Anger is like Ruine, which breakes it Selfe, vpon that it fall's.b

The Scripture exhorteth vs; To possesse our Soules in Patience. Whosoeuer is out of Patience, is out of Pos-Men must not turne Bees; fession of his Soule.

—Animasque in vulnere ponunt.d

Anger is certainly a kinde of Basenesse: As it appeares well, in the Weaknesse of those Subjects, in

a Ephes. iv. 26.

Luke. xxi. 19

VI. Variations in posthumous Latin Edition of 1638.

1 Limited, and confined. Limites Ira apponendi sunt, 'limits must be set to anger.'

² Meditate and Ruminate. Serio in animo revolvas, 'turn over seriously

in your mind.

Effects. Mala et Calamitates, 'evils and disasters.

Troubles. Vehementer perturbat et infestat, 'violently troubles and

Breakes. Comminuit et frangit, 'splits and breaks.'
Turne. Imitari, 'imitate.'
Basenesse. Res humilis est, et infra Dignitatem Hominis, 'is a base thing and beneath the dignity of man.

b Seneca. De Ira. i. 1.

d And lay down their lives in the wound. Virgil. Georgics. iv. 238.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

whom it reignes:8 Children, Women, Old Folkes, Sicke Folkes. Onely Men must beware,9 that they carry their Anger, rather with Scorne, then with Feare: 10 So that they may feeme rather, to be aboue the Iniury, then below it: which is a Thing easily done, if a Man will give Law to himselfe in it. 11

For the Second Point; The Causes and Motives of Anger, are chiefly three. First, to be too Sensible of Hurt: For no Man is Angry, that Feeles not himselfe Hurt: And therefore Tender and Delicate Persons, must needs be oft Angry: They have so many Things to trouble them; Which more Robust Natures have little Sense of. The next is, the Apprehension and Construction, of the Iniury offred, 12 to be, in the Circumstances thereof, full of 13 Contempt. For Contempt 14 is that which putteth an Edge vpon 15 Anger, as much, 16 or more, then the Hurt it selfe. fore, when Men are Ingenious, in picking out Circumstances of Contempt,¹⁷ they doe kindle their Anger much. Lastly, Opinion of the Touch of a Mans Reputation, 18 doth multiply and sharpen Anger. Wherein the Remedy¹⁹ is, that a Man should haue, as

are angry.'

11 Giue Law to himselfe in it. Iram suam, paululum regat, et inflectat,
'will gradually rule and bend his anger.'

12 Apprehension and Construction, of the Iniury offred. Si quis Curiosus
et perspicax sit, in Interpretatione Injuriæ illatæ, 'if one is particular and
sharpsighted in the interpretation of an injury offered to him.'

13 Full of. Spiraret, 'breathe.'

14 Contempt. Opinio contemptus, 'opinion of contempt.'

15 Putteth an Edge vpon. Excitat et acuit, 'rouses and sharpens.'

16 As much. Omitted in the Latin.

17 In picking out Circumstances of Contempt. Ad ista, 'in that.'

18 Opinion . . . Reputation. Opinio Contumeliæ, sive quod Existimatio Hominis per consequentiam lædatur et perstringatur, 'opinion of insult,
or that the reputation of the man will be in consequence hurt and dulled.' or that the reputation of the man will be in consequence hurt and dulled.'

ken.edy. Remedium frasentancem, 'present remecy.'

⁸ As it appeares . . . reignes. Hoc liquebit, si illos intueamur, in quibus Ira regnat: Qui plerumque ex Infirmioribus sunt, 'this will be plain, if we look at those in whom anger reigns, who are generally of the weaker sort.'

Beware. Cum irasci contigerit, caveant Homines (si modo Dignitatis suæ velint esse memores,), 'men must beware, when they happen to be angry, if at least they wish to remember their dignity.'

10 Feare. Metu eorum quibus irascuntur, 'fear of those with whom they

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

Confaluo was wont to fay, Telam Honoris crassiorem.a But in all Refrainings of Anger, it is the best Remedy to win Time; And to make a Mans Selfe beleeue, that the Opportunity of his Reuenge is not yet come: But that he foresees a Time²⁰ for it; And so to still Himfelfe²¹ in the meane Time, and referue it.²²

To containe Anger from Mischiefe,23 though it take hold of a Man, there be two Things, whereof you must have speciall Caution. The one, of extreme Bitternesse of Words; Especially, if they be Aculeate, and Proper:24 For Communia Maledictab are nothing fo much:25 And againe, that in Anger, a Man reueale no Secrets: For that makes him not fit for Society. The other, that you doe not peremptorily breake off, in any Businesse, in a Fit of Anger: But howsoeuer you shew Bitternes,26 do not Act any thing, that is not Reuocable.

For Raifing and Appeafing Anger in Another; It is done chiefly, by Choofing 27 of Times. When Men are frowardest and worst disposed, to incense them.²⁸ Againe, by gathering²⁹ (as was touched before) all that you can finde out, to aggrauate 30 the Contempt. And the two Remedies 31 are by the Con-

time.

23 Containe Anger from Mischiefe. Ut citra noxam erumpat, 'that it may break out without doing mischief.'

24 Aculeate and Proper. Aculeatorum et ei, quem ferimus, propriorum, 'stinging and appropriate to him whom we attack.'

25 Are nothing so much. Mordent minus, 'bite less.'

26 Shew Bitternes. Ira franum laxet, 'loose the bridle of anger.'

27 Choosing. Electionem prudentem, 'wise choosing.'

28 To incense them. Tempus est iram incendendi, 'is the time to kindle anger.'

anger.'
29 Gathering. Ut antea diximus, decerpendo et inculcando, 'as we have said before by gathering and insisting on.'

30 Aggrauate. Arguere aut aggravare, 'prove or aggravate.'
31 The two Remedies. Ira sedatur, 'anger is calmed.'

A thicker web of honour.

[•] Common revilings.

²⁰ Foresees a Time. Sed instare, quasi ad manum, Opportunitatem aliquam majorem, 'but that a greater opportunity is just at hand.'

21 Himselfe. Motum animi, 'the working of his mind.'

22 Reserve it. Se in Tempus aliud servare, 'reserve himself for another

V. 1625. æt. 65.

traries. The Former, to take good ³² Times, when first to relate to a Man, an Angry ³³ Businesse: For the first Impression is much; And the other is, to seuer, as much as may be, the Construction of ³⁴ the Iniury, from the Point of ³⁵ Contempt: Imputing it, to Misunderstanding, Feare, Passion, ³⁶ or what you will.



32 Good, Serena, et ad Hilaritatem prona, 'calm and disposed to cheerfulness.'

84 The Construction of. Omitted in the Latin.

85 The Point of. Omitted in the Lati 1.

⁸⁸ Angry. Ingratum, et ad Iracundiam provocans, 'unpleasant and provocative of anger.'

⁸⁶ Passion. Animi Concussioni repentinæ, 'sudden excitement of the mind.'

V.

1625.

æt. 65.

British Museum Copy.

58. Of Vicissitude of Things.

ALOMON faith; There is no New Thing upon

the Earth.a So that as Plato had an Imagination; That all Knowledge was but Remembrance: So Salomon giueth his Sentence; That all Noueltie is but Oblivion. Whereby you may fee, that the Riuer of Lethe, runneth as well aboue Ground, as below. There is an abstruse¹ Astrologer that saith; If it were not, for two things, that are Constant; (The one is, that the Fixed Starres ever stand at like distance, one from another, and neuer come nearer together, nor goe further afunder; The other, that the Diurnall Motion perpetually keepeth Time :2) No Indiuiduall would last one Moment. Certain it is, that the Matter, is in a Perpetuall Flux, and neuer at a Stay. The great Winding-sheets, that burie all Things in Obliuion, are two; Deluges, and Earth-quakes. As for Conflagrations, and great Droughts, they doe not meerely dispeople, and destroy.3 Phaetons Carre went but a day. And the Three yeares Drought, in the time of Elias, was but Particular, and left People⁵ Aliue. As for the great Burnings by Lightnings, which are often in the West Indies, they are but narrow.6 But in the other two Destructions, by Deluge, and Earth-quake, it is further to be noted, that the Remnant of People, which hap to be referued, are commonly Ignorant and Mountanous People, that can

a Eccles. i. 9.

b Phædrus. 72 e. Menæ. 81 d.

Abstruse. Abstrusus, et parum notus, 'abstruse and little known.'
Perpetually keepeth Time. Non variet. 'does not vary.'
And destroy. Aut destruunt, 'or destroy.'
Phaetons Carre went but a day. Fabula Phaetontis, Brevitatem Conflagrationis, ad unius tantum Diei spatium, repræsentavit, 'the fable of Phaeton represented the shortness of a conflagration, lasting only for one day.'
People. Multos, 'many.'
After Narrow. Nec magna spatia occupant. Pestilentias etiam præteree, quia nec illæ totaliter absorbent, 'nor occupy a great space. Pestilences also I pass over. as they do not totally destroy.'

Pestilences also I pass over, as they do not totally destroy.

1625. V. æt. 65.

giue no Account,7 of the Time past: So that the Obliuion is all one, as if none had beene left. If you conficler well, of the People of the West Indies,8 it is very probable, that they are a Newer, or a Younger People, then the People of the Old World. And it is much more likely, that the Destruction, that hath heretofore been there, was not by Earth-quakes, (As the Ægyptian Priest told Solon, concerning the Island of Atlantis; That it was fwallowed by an Earth-quake;) But rather, that it was desolated,9 by a Particular Deluge. For Earth-quakes are seldome in those Parts. But on the other side, they have such Powring10 Rivers, as the Rivers of Asia, and Affrick, and Europe, are but Brookes to them. Their Andes likewife, or Mountaines, are farre higher, then those with us; Whereby it seemes, that the Remnants of Generation of Men, were, in fuch a Particular Deluge, faued. As for the Observation, that Macciavel hath, that the Iealousie¹¹ of Seels, doth much extinguish the Memory of Things; a Traducing Gregory the Great, that he did, what in him lay, to extinguish all Heathen Antiquities; I doe not finde, that those Zeales, doe any great Effects, nor last long: As it appeared in the Succesfion of Sabinian, who did reviue the former Antiquities. 12

The Vicifsitude or Mutations, in the Superiour Globe, are no fit Matter, for this present Argument It may be, Plato's great Yeare, if the World should last so long, 18 would have some Effect; Not in renew-

the world is destined to dissolution before that.

^a Macchiavelli. Discorsi sopra la prima Deca di Tito Livio. ii. 5.

Memoriam Posteris tradere, 'hand down the re-7 Giue no Account. collection to their deseendants.

⁸ Of the People of the West Indies. Indorum Occidentalium Conc.tionem, 'condition of the West Indians.'
9 Desolated. Omitted in the Latin.

Powring. Immania et vasta, 'strong and great.'

11 Iealousie. Zelotypiam et Æmulationem, 'jealousy and rivalry.'

12 After Former Antiquities. Tum vero prohibita, licet Tenebris cooperta, obrepunt tamen, et suas nanciscuntur Periodos, 'then, indeed, what is forbidden, even if covered in darkness, creeps out and has its time.'

18 Last so long. Nisi Mundus ante Dissolutioni esset destinatus, 'unless the world is destined to dissolution before that'

V. æt. 65. 1625.

ing the State of like Individuals (for that is the Fume 14 of those, that conceive the Celestiall Bodies, have more accurate Influences, vpon these Things below, then indeed they have) but in groffe.15 Comets, out of question, haue likewise Power and Effect,16 ouer the Grosse and Masse of Things:17 But they are rather gazed vpon, and waited vpon in their Iourney, then wisely observed in their Effects;18 Specially in their Respective Effects; That is, what Kinde of Comet, for Magnitude, Colour, 19 Version of the Beames, Placing in the Region of Heauen,²⁰ or Lasting, produceth what Kinde of Effects.

There is a Toy, which I have heard, and I would not haue it giuen ouer, but waited vpon a little. They fay, it is observed, in the Low Countries (I know not in what Part 21) that Euery Fiue and Thirtie years, The same Kinde and Sute of Years and Weathers, comes about againe: As Great Frosts, Great Wet, Great Droughts, Warme Winters, Summers with little Heat, and the like: And they call it the Prime.22 It is a Thing, I doe the rather mention, because computing backwards, I have found fome Concurrence.23

But to leave these Points of Nature, and to come to Men. The greatest Vicifsitude of Things amongst

¹⁴ Fume. Fumus et Vanitas, 'fume and vanity.'
15 Grosse. Summis et massis rerum, 'the sum and mass of things.'
16 Haue... Power and Effect. Aliquid operantur, 'work something.'
17 After Masse of Things. Verum Homines, ut nunc est, indiligentes, aut curiosi, circa eos sunt, 'but men at present are not careful or curious about

¹⁸ But they are rather . . . in their Effects. Eosque potius mira-bundi spectant; Atque Itineraria eorundem conficiunt, quam Effectus corum prudenter et sobrie notant, 'and they rather gaze at them with wonder and make records of their path, than wisely and soberly observe their effects.'

19 Colour. Coloris et Lucis, 'colour and light.'

20 After Heauen. Tempestatis Anni; Semita aut Cursus, 'the season of the year; the path or course.'

21 I know not in what Part. Omitted in the Latin.

22 It the Prime. Hujusmodi Circulum Annorum, Primam, 'this kind of circle of the years—the prime.'

28 Concurrence. Congruentiam; hand exactam sane, sed non multum discretantem, 'concurrence: not really exact, but not very different'

discrepantem, 'concurrence; not really exact, but not very different.'

V.

æt. 65.

Men, is the Vicifsitude of Sects, and Religions. those Orbs rule in Mens Minds most. The True Religion is built upon a Rocke; The Rest are tost upon the Waues of Time. To speake therefore, of the Causes of New Sects; And to give some Counsell concerning them; As farre, as the Weaknesse of Humane Iudgement, can give stay²⁴ to so great Revolutions.

When the *Religion* formerly²⁵ received, is rent by Discords; And when the Holinesse of the Professours of Religion is decayed, and full of Scandall; And withall the Times be Stupid, Ignorant, and Barbarous; you may doubt 26 the Springing vp of a New Sect; If then also there should arise, any Extrauagant and Strange²⁷ Spirit, to make himfelfe Author thereof.²⁸ All which Points held, when Mahomet published his Law. If a New Sect²⁹ haue not two Properties, seare it not: For it will not spread. The one is, the Supplanting,³⁰ or the opposing, of Authority established: For Nothing is more Popular then that.³¹ The other is, the Giuing Licence³² to Pleafures, and a Voluptuous Life. For as for Speculative Herefies (such as were in Ancient Times the Arrians, and now the Arminians) though they worke mightily vpon Mens Wits, yet they doe not produce any great Alterations in States: except it be by the Helpe of Ciuill Occasions. be three Manner of Plantations of New Sects. Power of Signes³³ and Miracles: By the Eloquence and Wisedome of Speech and Perswasson:34 And by

²⁴ Giue stay. Moras injicere, aut Remedia exhibere, 'give stay or apply remedies.'

²⁵ Formerly. Omitted in the Latin.
26 Doubt. Metuendum, 'fear.'
27 Strange. Paradoxa spirans, 'breathing paradoxes.'
28 To make himselfe Author thereof. Omitted in the Latin.
29 New Sect. Secta nova, licet pullulet, 'a new sect though it is pro-

Supplanting, Omitted in the Latin.

Then that. Quam Principatus, et Politias, convellere, 'than to attack sovereignties and governments.'

⁸² Giuing Licence. Porta aperta, 'an open gate.'
83 Signes. Omitted in the Latin.
84 And Wisedome of Speech and Perswasion. Omitted in the Latin.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

For Martyrdomes, I reckon them amongst the Sword. Miracles; Because they seeme to exceed, the Strength of Human Nature: And I may doe the like of Superlatiue and Admirable Holinesse of Life. Surely, there is no better Way, to stop the Rising of New Sects, and Schismes; then To reforme Abuses; To compound the smaller Differences; To proceed so mildly, and not with Sanguinary Persecutions; And rather to take off36 the Principall Authours, by Winning and Aduancing them, then to enrage them by Violence and Bitternesse.

The Changes and Viscifsitude in Warres are many: But chiefly in three Things; In the Seats or Stages³⁷ of the Warre; In the Weapons; And in the Manner of the Conduct.38 Warres in ancient Time, feemed more to move from East to West: For the Persians, Afsyrians, Arabians, Tartars, (which were the Inuaders) were all Easterne People. It is true, the Gaules were Westerne: But we reade but of two Incursions of theirs; The one to Gallo-Grecia, the other to Rome. But East and West have no certaine Points of Heaven: And no more have the Warres, either from the East, or West, any Certainty of Observation. But North and South are fixed:39 And it hath feldome or neuer been seene, that the farre Southern People haue inuaded the Northern, but contrariwise. Whereby it is manifest, that the Northern Tract of the World, is in Nature the more Martiall Region: Be it, in respect of the Stars of that Hemisphere; Or of the great Continents that are vpon the North, whereas the South Part, for ought that is knowne, is almost all Sea; Or (which is most apparent) of the Cold of the Northern Parts, which is that, which without Aid of Discipline,40

Proceed. A principio procedere, 'proceed from the beginning.'
Take off. Mollire atque allicere, 'soothe and entice.'

Manner of the Conduct. Disciplina militari, 'military training.'
Fixed. Natura fixi, 'fixed by nature.'
Without Aid of Discipline. Absque alia Caussa quacunque, 'without any other cause.'

1625. V.

æt. 65.

doth make the Bodies hardest, and the Courages warmest.41

Vpon the Breaking and Shivering of a great State⁴² and Empire, you may be fure to have Warres. great Empires, while they stand, doe eneruate and destroy the Forces of the Natiues, which they have fubdued, resting vpon their owne Protecting Forces: And then when they faile also, all goes to ruine, and they become a Prey.48 So was it, in the Decay of the Roman Empire; And likewise, in the Empire of Almaigne, after Charles the Great, every Bird taking a Fether; And were not unlike to befall to Spaine, if it should break. 44 The great Accessions 45 and Vnions of Kingdomes, doe likewise stirre vp Warres. For when a State growes to an Ouer-power, it is like a great Floud,46 that will be fure to overflow. As it hath been feene, in the States of Rome, Turky, Spaine, and others. Looke when the World hath fewest Barbarous Peoples, 47 but fuch as commonly will not marry or generate, except they know meanes to liue,48 (As it is almost every where at this day, except Tartary) there is no Danger of Inundations 49 of People: But when there be great Shoales of People, which goe on to populate, without foreseeing⁵⁰ Meanes of Life⁵¹ and Sustentation, it is of Necessity, that once in an Age or

42 State. Omitted in the Latin.

49 Inundations. Inundationibus aut Migrationibus, 'inundations or migrations.'

51 Meanes of Life. Fortunis, 'fortunes.'

⁴¹ After Warmest. Ut liquet in populo Araucensi; qui ad ulteriora Austri positi, omnibus Peruviensibus Fortitudine longe præcellunt, 'as is seen in the people of Arauco, who seated at the farthest east, far surpass all the Peruvians in courage.'

⁴⁸ Prey. Aliis Gentibus in prædam, 'a prey to other nations.'
44 Break. Viribus decideret, 'fail in strength.'

⁴⁵ Accessions. Accessiones Ditionum, 'accessions of dominion.'
⁴⁶ Great Floud. Fluvio intumescenti, 'a swelling flood.'

⁴⁷ After Barbarous Peoples. Sed Civiliores fere sunt, 'but are mostly more civilized.

⁴⁸ Liua Familiam alendi, aut saltem Victum parandi, 'raise a family or at least get food.

⁵⁰ Without foreseeing. In futurum minime solliciti, not careful for the future.

V. 1625. æt. 65.

two, they discharge a Portion of their People vpon other Nations:52 Which the ancient Northern People, were wont to doe by Lot: Casting Lots, what Part should stay at home, and what should seeke their Fortunes.⁵⁸ When a Warre-like State growes Soft and Effeminate, they may be fure of a Warre.54 For commonly such States are growne rich, in the time of their Degenerating; And so the Prey inuiteth, and their Decay in Valour encourageth a Warre.

As for the Weapons,55 it56 hardly falleth vnder Rule and Observation: yet we see, even they have Returnes and Vicissitudes. For certain it is, that Ordnance57 was known⁵⁸ in the Citty of the Oxidrakes in India; And was that, which the *Macedonians* called ⁵⁹ Thunder and Lightning, and Magicke. And it is well knowne, that the vse of Ordnance 60 hath been in China, aboue 2000. yeares. The Conditions of Weapons, and their Improvement are; First, the Fetching a farre of:61 For that outruns the Danger:62 As it is seene in Ordnance and Muskets. Secondly, the Strength of the Percussion; wherin likewise Ordnance doe exceed all Arietations, 63 and ancient Inuentions. The third is, the commodious⁶⁴ vse of them: As that they may

55 Weapons. Armorum et telorum genus, 'the kind of arms and missile weapons.

⁵⁹ Called. Habita et appellata, 'considered and called.'

62 Danger. Periculum, ab Hostili parte, 'danger from the enemy.'

68 Arietations. Arietationes.

⁵² Discharge . . . nations. Exonerent, et novas Sedes quærant; et sic alias Nationes invadant, 'discharge, and seek new settlements, and so invade other nations.'

⁵⁸ Seeke their Fortunes. Alio migraret, 'migrate elsewhere.'
54 A Warre. Gentes alias, ad eosdem invadendos, 'other nations to invade them.'

⁵⁶ It. Illorum mutationes, 'their changes.'
57 Ordnance. Tormenta Ænea, 'brass ordnance.'
58 Known. Tempore Alexandri Magni cognita, 'known in the time of Alexander the Great.'

⁶⁰ Ordnance. Pulveris Pyrii, et Tormentorum igneorum, 'gunpowder and fire-arms.'

⁶¹ Fetching a farre off. Ad Distantiam majorem feriant, 'striking at a greater distance.'

⁶⁴ Commodious. Commodior et facilior sit; Id quod etiam Tormentis Igneis Majoribus competit, 'more commodious and easy; which also belongs to ordnance.

1625. V.

æt. 65.

ferue in all Wethers; That the Carriage may be Light and Manageable; and the like.

For the Conduct of the Warre: At the first, Men rested extremely vpon Number: They did put the Warres likewise vpon Maine Force, and Valour; Pointing Dayes⁶⁵ for Pitched Fields, and fo trying it out, vpon an euen Match: And they were more - ignorant in Ranging and Arraying their Battailes. After they grew to rest vpon Number, rather Competent, then Vast: They grew to Advantages of Place, Cunning Diversions, and the like: And they grew more skilful in the Ordering of their Battailes.

In the Iouth of a State, Armes doe flourish: In the Middle Age of a State, Learning; And then both of them together for a time: In the Declining Age of a State, Mechanicall Arts and Merchandize. Learning hath his Infancy, when it is but beginning,66 and almost Childish: Then his Youth, when it is Luxuriant and Iuuenile; Then his Strength of yeares, when it is Solide and Reduced: And lastly, his old Age, when it waxeth Dry and Exhaust.67 But it is not good, to looke too long, vpon these turning 68 Wheeles of Vicissitude, lest we become Giddy. As for the Philology of them,69 that is but a Circle of Tales,70 and therefore not fit for this Writing.



⁶⁵ Pointing Dayes. Dies et loca constituebant, 'appointing days and

⁶⁶ Beginning. Leviusculæ, 'trifling.'
67 After Exhaust. Manente etiam Garrulitate, 'the loquaciousness also remaining.'

⁶⁸ Turning. Omitted in the Latin.
69 Of them. Quæ in hoc Argumento, ut plurimum, versatur, 'which is much used on this subject.'

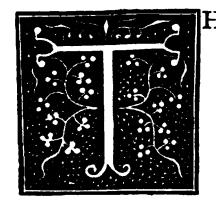
⁷⁰ Circle of Tales. Narratiuncularum et Observationum futilium Congeries quædam, 'a mass of tales and useless observations.'

First published by Dr. Rawley in Resuscitatio, 1657. p. 281.



A

FRAGMENT OF AN ESSAY, OF FAME.



He Poets make Fame a Monster. They describe her, in Part, finely, and elegantly; and, in part, grauely, and sententiously. They say, look how many Feathers she hath, so many Eyes she hath vnderneath: So many Tongues; So many Voyces; She pricks up so many Ears.

This is a flourish: There follow excellent Parables; As that, she gathereth strength in going; That she goeth upon the ground, and yet hideth her head in the That, in the day time, she sitteth in a Watch Clouds. Tower, and flyeth, most, by night: That she mingleth Things done, with things not done: And that she is a Terrour to great Citties: But that, which passeth all the rest, is: They do recount, that the Earth, Mother of the Gyants, that made War against Jupiter, and were by him destroyed, thereupon, in an anger, brought forth Fame: For certain it is, That Rebels, figured by the Gyants, and Seditious Fames, and Libels, are but Brothers, and Sisters; Masculine, and Feminine. now, if a Man can tame this Monster, and bring her to feed at the hand, and govern her, and with her fly other ravening Fowle, and kill them, it is fomewhat worth. But we are infected, with the stile of the Poets. To fpeak now, in a fad, and ferious manner: There is not, in all the Politiques, a Place, lesse handled, and

more worthy to be handled, then this of Fame. will, therefore, speak of these points. What are false Fames; And what are true Fames; And how they may be best discerned; How Fames, may be sown, and raised; How they may be spread, and multiplyed; And how they may be checked, and layed dead. And other Things, concerning the Nature of Fame. is of that force, as there is, scarcely, any great Action wherein, it hath not, a great part; Especially, in the War. Mucianus undid Vitellius by a Fame, that he scattered; That Vitellius had in purpose, to remove the Legions of Syria, into Germany; And the Legions of Germany, into Syria: whereupon the Legions of Syria were infinitely inflamed. Fulius Cafar, took Pompey unprovided, and layed affeep his industry, and preparations, by a Fame that he cunningly gaue out; How Cafars own Souldiers loved him not; And being wearied with the Wars, and Laden with the spoyles of Gaul, would forfake him, as foon as he came into Italy. Livia, fetled all things, for the Succession, of her Son Tiberius, by continuall giving out, that her husband Augustus, was upon Recovery, and amendment. And it is an usuall thing, with the Basshawes, to conceale the Death of the Great Turk from the Fannizaries, and men of War, to fave the Sacking of Constantinople, and other Towns, as their Manner is. Themistocles, made Zerxes, king of Persia poast apace out of Gracia, by giving out, that the Gracians, had a purpose, to break his Bridge, of Ships, which he had made athwart Hellespont. There be a thousand such like Examples; And the more they are, the lesse they need to be repeated; Because a Man, meeteth with them, every where: Therefore, let all Wife Governors, have as great a watch, and care, ouer Fames, as they have, of the Actions, and Designes themselves.

The rest was not Finished.

ADDITIONAL NOTES

respecting

LORD BACON AND HIS WRITINGS.

We fairly despair of giving any adequate representation of either the Author or his Works. Some vital contemporary testimony has been adduced at pp. xi.-xxi.; and the few following notes, which are all our space will admit, may be taken simply as a handful of gleanings out of a vast harvest.

1558. Nob. 17. Elizabeth succeeds to the throne.

1560. JAN. 22. Francis Bacon is born at York House.

1576. Nov. 21. Bacon becomes an 'Ancient' of Gray's Inn. Harl. MS. 1912.

He becomes a Student of his Inn. Harl. MS. 1912. He becomes an 'Utter Barrister.' Harl. MS. 1912. 1579. 1582. June 27.

He becomes a Bencher of Gray's Inn. Harleian MS. 1912. He is appointed a 'Reader' of his Inn.' Harleian MS. 1912. **1586**. 1588. **1592**.

Mr. Spedding edited, in 1870, for his Grace the Duke of Northumberland, 'A Conference of Pleasure, composed for some festive occasion about the year 1592.' The original title of the partially burnt MS. is Mr. ffr. Bacon of tribute or giving that which is due. 1. The praise of the worthiest vertue [Fortitude]. 2. The praise of the worthiest affection [Love]. 3. The praise of the worthiest power [Knowledge]. 4. The praise of the worthiest person [Queen Elizabeth]. The first two are quite new.

1596. June 2. Remedies against Discontent, &c. is registered at Sta-

tioners' Hall: see p. xi.

1596. July 31. The Earl of Lincoln and suite were away from England on an embassy to the Landgrave of Hesse. An account of the Oct. 7. journey was immediately written by one of the suite, Edward

Monings, and published in October or November, under the title of The Landgrave of Hessen, his princelie receiving of her Maiesties Embassador.

[There is a copy in the Grenville Collection, No. 2938.]

It is thus entered in the Stationers' Register C. fol. 15. Oct. 26.

26 OCTOBER. Robert Robinson Entred for his copie in th[e] and of Mr. Hartwell and the Wardens a booke intituled The langraue of Hessen his princelye Receavinge of her maion

ambassadors. This work is connected with the Essays, through the following undoubtable plagiarism from the Essay on 'Studies,' at pp, 6-10; as yet in MS.

"His education prince-like, generally knowen in all things, and excellent in many, seasoning his graue and mor[e] important studies for ability in iudgment, with studies of pastime for retiring, as in poetrie, musike, and the Mathematikes, and for ornament in discourse in the languages, French, Italian, and English, wherein he is expert reading much, conferring and writting much he is a full man, a readie man, an exact man, and so excellent a Prince that a man may say of him without flatterie as Tullie did of Ponipey vnus in quo summa sunt omnia, and for my private opinion I thinke there are but fewe such men in the world." p. 21.

It was such 'garnishment' as this, that induced Bacon to publish his Essays, as he states in his dedicatory letter to his brother Anthony, see p. 4.

Date of Bacon's dedication to his brother Anthony, see p. 4. 1597. JAN. 30. **1597.** FEB. 5. The Hall. The first Edition of the Essayes is registered at Stationers' The entry at the top of fol. 18. of Register C. [1595-1620 A.D.] is as follows.

1596. Anno Reginæ. Eliz. xxxix.

5 FEB. Henry Hooper. Entered for his copie vnder th[e] hands of Mr Fr. Bacon Mr D. Stanhope Mr Barlow, and Mr Warden Dawson, a booke intituled Essaies Religious Medita-• vja tions, Places of perswasion and disswasion by Mr Fr. Bacon.

We have here given the entry as it stands: because the regnal year corrects the date. The 5th of February in 39. Eliz. was the 5 Feb. 1597: or as

it is more technically written 1596/7.

The "Essayes" thus registered were published immediately. At the top of the title-page of the Museum copy (C. 21. a) is written Septimo die Ffebruarii 39. E. R. pretium xx4. [The seventh day of February in the 39th of Queen Elizabeth: price Twenty pence.] It is interesting thus to learn from this early purchaser, the price of the first publication of the great English Philosopher.

1600. Bacon is appointed a "Double Reader" of his Inn.

1600.

1601.

This year appeared Essayes by Sir W. Cornwallis.

There appeared this year, a small book by Robert Johnson. gent. entitled Essaies, or rather Imperfect Offers. A work reprinted in 1604, 1621, and 1630.

1603. Mar. 24. James H. succeeds to the English throne.

Bacon is knighted by King James. **1603**. JULY 23.

1604. Aug. 25. Sir F. Bacon is made King's Counsel.

1605. SEPT. 19. The Two Bookes of the Proficiencie and Aduancement are thus registered in the Stationers' Register B. [1595-1630,

fol. 129.
"Entered for his copie vnder the hande of my Lo.) Mr Ockold. Byschop of London and the Wardens a booke as-well in Latyn as in Englysh called The Second > xij4 [This work was printed for [?two] book of frauncis Bacon of the proficience and Henry Tomes.] advancement of learninge Divine and humaine."

This was simply a license to publish it in Latin: into which language it was not as yet translated.

John Chamberlain informs Dudley Carleton of 'Sir F. Bacon's new book on Learning.' Orig. in S. P. Office. **1605**. Nov. 7.

1607. June 25. Sr F. Bacon is made Solicitor General.

This year appeared Essayes Politicke and Morrall. by D 1608. T[ewell] gent.

A second part of Sir W. Cornwallis' Essays appeared. **1610**.

1612. Oct. 12. At fol. 227 of Stationers' Registers, is the following register in the year 1612. 10 James. of Text V in this Reprint. 12 OCTOBER.

Entered for their copy vnder the hande of my Lo. Bysshopp of London and the Wardens a book called The Essays of Sr. ffr. Bacon Knight the Kings Sollici-William Hall. John Beale. tor Generall.

For this edition, he wrote the dedication on p. 158 to Prince Henry but on

1612. Nov. 3. Prince Henry died.

Nov. Bacon then wrote a fresh dedication to his brother-in-law Sir John Constable, see p. 420, beginning thus—"My las: Essaies I dedicated to my deare brother Master Anthony Bacon." It is therefore clear that he himself looked on this edition, as a second and revised Text.

1612. DEC. 17. Nicolas Chamberlain writing on the Carleton says, 'Sir Francis Bacon hath set out new Essays, the world takes notice where, in a chapter of *Deformity*, the world takes notice that he paints out his little cousin [Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury] to the life.' Court and Times of James I. i. 214. Ed. 1848.

1613. Oct. 27. Sir F. Bacon is made Attorney General.

1615. Nicholas Breton published his 'Characters vpon Essaies Morrall and Divine, and dedicates them to Sir Francis Bacon.

1616. JUNE 9.

Sir F. Bacon is made a Privy Councillor.
Sir F. Bacon is promoted to be Lord Keeper. 1617. MAR. 3.

1619. Jan. 4. Sir F. Bacon is made Lord Chancellor. Sir F. Bacon is made Baron Verulam. JULY 11.

1620. Bacon publishes his great work Instauratio Magna.

The geniuses laughed at it, and men of talent and acquirement, whose studies had narrowed their minds into particular channels, incapable of understanding its reasonings, and appreciating its originality, turned wits for the purpose of ridiculing the new publication of the philosophic Lord Chancellor. Dr. Andrews, a forgotten wit of those days, perpetrated a vile pun upon the town and title of St Alban's, by saying, some doggerel verses that it was on the high road to *Dunce table*, i.e. Dunstable, and therefore appropriate to the author of such a book. Mr. Secretary Cuffe said it was 'a book which a fool could have written, and a wise man would not.' King James declared it was like the Peace of God—'it passeth all understanding.' Coke wrote, under a device on the title page, of a ship passing through the pillars of Hercules

"It deserveth not to be read in schools But to be freighted in the ship of fools."

-Quoted by A. S. Allibone. Crit. Dict. i. 91, Ed. 1859.

1621. JAN. 22. Lord Verulam is created Viscount St Alban.

His patent was drawn in the most flattering terms, and the Prince of Wales signed it as a witness. The ceremony of investiture was performed with great state at Theobalds, and Buckingham condescended to be one of the chief actors. Lord Macaulay. Ed. Rev. No. 132, p. 48. July 1837.

1621. MAY 3. He is sentenced by the House of Lords.

1623. MAR. 23. Bacon writing at this day to Conway, the Secretary of State, thus finishes his letter, which is now in the State Paper Office.

"I was looking over some short papers of mine touching usury, how to grind the teeth of it, and yet to make it grind to his Majesty's mill in good sort, without discontent or perturbation: if you think good I will perfect it, as I send it to his Maiesty as some fruits of my leisure. But yet I would not have it come from me, not from any tenderness in the thing, but because I know well in the courts of princes it is usual non res, sed displicet Auctor. Fr. St. Alban." Quoted by Mr Dixon in Personal History of Lord Bacon, p. 296. Ed. 1861.

About this time then, Bacon wrote the Essay on Usury, see pp. 541-6. 1625. [1624 Dec. 15] Bacon published The translation of Certaine Psalme into English verse. 4to. It is thus dedicated:

To his very good frend, Mr George Herbert.

The paines, that it pleased you to take, about some of my Writings, I cannot forget; which did put mee in minde, to dedicate to you, this poore Exercise of my sicknesse. Besides, it being my manner for Dedications, to choose those that I hold most fit for the Argument, I thought in respect of Diuinitie and Poesie, met, (whereof the one is the Matter, the other the Stile of this little Writing) I could not make better choice. So, with signification of my Loue and Acknowledgement I euer rest.

Your affectionate Frend, FR. St ALBAN.

1625. [1624 Dec.] There appeared this year, Lord Bacon's 'Apophthegmes New and Old' with the following preface.

Ivlius Casar, did write a Collection of Apophthegmes, as appeares in an Epistle of Cicero. I need say no more, for the worth, of a Writing, of that nature. It is pitie his Booke is lost: for I imagine, they were collected, with Iudgement, and Choice: whereas that of Plutarch, and Stobaus, and much more, the Moderne ones, draw much of the dregs. Certainly, they are of excellent vse. They are, Mucrones Verborum, Pointed Speeches. Cicero prettily cals them, Salinas, Salt pits; that you may extract salt out of, and sprinkle it, where you will. They serue, to be interlaced, in continued Speech. They serue, to be recited, vpon occasion of themselues. They serue, if you take out the kernell of them, and make them your owne. I have, for my recreation, in my sicknesse, fann'd the Old; Not omitting any, because they are vulgar; (for many vulgar ones are excellent good:) Nor for the meannesse of the Person; but because they are dull, and flat: And added many New, that otherwise would have died.

1625. MAR. 13. The final English edition of the Essays was thus registered on fol. 97 of the Stationers Register, D. [1620-1645] on 13 Mar. 1624, 22 James I. [i.e. 13 Mar. 1625].

Entered for their copie vnder the hande of the Lo. Mr. Whitacre. Hanna Barrett. B. of London and Mr. lownes warden The Essayes and Counsell morrall and Civill of Francis lo. Verulam vicount st. Alban.

Two title pages are found to this Edition. The first corresponding to the above entry. The Essayes or Counsels, civill and morall, of Francis Lo. Verulam, Viscount St. Alban. New enlarged. London, Printed by Iohn Haviland for Hanna Barret, and Richard Whitaker, and are to be sold at the signe of the Kings head in Paul's Church-yard. 1625.

On a copy with this title in Cambridge Univ. Library (XVII. 36. 14.) Mr. W. A. Wright states is the memorandum Jo: Finch 300 Martij. 1625 ex dono Authoris. From which it is clear that the final English edition was issued between 13-30 March 1625. The second title page is reprinted at \$\nu\$. 497: between 13-30 March 1625.

the first in Mr Wright's Edition.

1625. MAR. The dedication on \not . 498 was clearly written in the reign of James.

1625. Mar. 27. Charles H. became King.

1626. Apr. 9 (Easter Sunday). Lord St. Alban dies.

1644. [i.e. 1645 On this day appeared in London: Memorials of Godlinesse and Christianitie. Part I. Of making Religion one's Businesse. This was written by the Rev. Herbert Jan. 3]. Palmer, B.D. [b. 1601] at this time President of Queen's

College, Cambridge, [which office he held till his death on 13. August 1647.] 1645. [JULY 24.] There appeared a 12 paged surreptitious tract entitled, The

Character of a Believing Christian. Set forth in Paradoxes and seeming Contradictions. There is a copy in the British Museum [Press mark E. 1182.].

1645. July 25. The next day is the date of Mr Palmer's Address To the Christian Reader in Part II of the Memorials, &c. in which occurs the following passage.

"There is offered thee a second part of Memorials of Godlinesse and Christianity: smal indeed for bulk but more sutable for that to the title and the lesse burthensome to thee. Withall I must needs say, I meant thee somewhat more: but whilest (in the midst of many employments) I was somewhat more: but whilest (in the midst of many employments) I was getting it ready, a strange hand was liked to haue robbed me of the greatest part of this, by putting to the presse (unknown to me) an imperfect copy of the Paradoxes. This made me hasten to tender a true one, and to content myself for the present with the addition of the other lesser pieces, which here accompany them."

Rev. H. Palmer, B.D. died. **1647**. Aug. 13.

1648.

In this year was published Remaines, being Essaies and several Letters of Lord Bacon: of unknown and almost valueless Editorship; in which The Paradoxes of Herbert Palmer appear as a writing of Lord Bacon: and as such, have been repeated in many later editions of his Works. It is to Rev. A. B. Grosart in his privately printed 'Lord Bacon, not the author of *The Christian Paradexes*,' 1865, that we are indebted to the rectification of this 'two-century-old literary error, if not fraud.'

Please oblige, by showing this List to your friends.

Works in English Literature

PUBLISHED OR TO BE PUBLISHED BY

EDWARD ARBER,

Associate, King's College, London, P.R.G.S., &c.

TA

5 QUEEN SQUARE, BLOOMSBURY, LONDON, W.C.

Sold by all Booksellers in the United Kingdom, and by the following, abroad:— Montreal: Dawson Brothers. Berlin: N. Asher. Bombay: Thacker, Vining & Co. New York: Scribner, Welford & Co. Philadelphia: C. J. PRICE. Boston: Little, Brown & Co. San Francisco: A. L. BANCROFT & Co. Calcutta: THACKER, SPINK & Co. Melbourne: George Robertson. Toronto: Adam, Stevenson & Co.

*** Foreign booksellers selling these publications can have their names added to the above, in the next List, upon application.

CHRONOLOGICAL L	IST.	•	•	•	•	2
FOR STUDI	ENTS OF	F ENGL	ISH L	TERATU	URE,	
To STUDENTS.	• .	•	•	•	•	3
Facsimile Texts.	•	•	•	•	•	4
English Reprints, F	oolscap	size.	•	•	•	5-12
	Demy siz		•	•	•	13
	mperial		•	•	•	14
Annotated Reprints.	. (тне	PAST	ON LE	TTERS.)	15
Fo	R GEN	ERAL A	Reade	RS.		
Leisure Readings in	Englis	h Liter	a ture.	•	•	16
Choice Books.		•	•	•	•	16

These publications are all edited by Mr. Arber, unless otherwise stated.

Any single work may be obtained separately. In ordering quote the NUMBER,

TITLE, and PRICE (the author's name is unnecessary).

All orders must be accompanied by a remittance; which, if under 10s., can be made in *Postage Stamps*; if above that sum, in P.O.O., made payable at High HOLBORN Office, or Cheques crossed London and County Bank.

These publications are ALWAYS on sale; and may be obtained through your own Bookseller; or, in any number, post-free by return, on remitting to Mr. ARBER, the

prices, as stated in this List.

The usual allowance to Colleges and Schools.

All inquiries must be accompanied by a Stamp for reply.
Subscriptions, of not less than One Guinea, can be paid in advance of the appearance of the Publications ordered.

This List cancels all previous ones, as regards Works not yet published.

CHRONOLOGICAL LIST.

1590. UBALDINI.—RYTHER, Concerpings the Spanishs forter. No. 15 1590. T. WATSON, Melihera. 1590. T. WATSON, Melihera. 1590. E. WEBUE. 1590. E. WEBUE. 1590. Sir W. Rale. 1590. Sir W. Rale. 1590. The Phonix.	G. MARKHAN F. BACON. At	The Essues	1628-33. Francis Lord Verulam, Estinger of Countries. 12, 1628-33.	1633. F. Oukeling. Emining Printing.	J. Milton.	1644. J. Millton. 1644. Do. 1644. Do. 1644. L. Howell. 1645. J. Howell. Epistola Ho-Eliana. Book II.	formentarilth. 1650. J. Howell. Epistola Ho-Eliana Book III. 1650. Do. 1651. Do.	Charles EE, 1672. G. Villians, Duke of Buckingham, The Rehesered. 10. William and Affers.	1694. E PLALLIFE. L. Or of John Million. April. J Actions Control on Prevention 6 met
Elchard E. Richard E. Richard E. Richard S. The Revolution to the Monk of Evenham. No. 18 Richard VII.—Porton Dellera. Revolue Lettera. Revolue VIII. Revolue VIII. Revolue VIII.	W. Roy. Rede me and be nott veralle. [Roy i) A proper dynings between a Gentillman, etc. R. Ascham. Toxophilms. @utant DR.	1349. Bp. H. LATIMER, The Flowgram. 1349. Do. Seven Sermons before Ed. VI. 138 1350. Rev. T. LEVER. Sermon in the Shrouds of St. Panis. 25 1350. Do. Sermon before Ed. VI. 1350. Do. Sermon at Panis Crass.	1566. N. UDALL. Rollter Doisler. R. Eden. Translation from S. Munister (1530). Phillip and Mary.	1555. R. Eden. Translations from Peter Marty (1516), 1555.	557. Zai	1350. 1353.B. 1570. B. 1575. G. 1576. G.	1577. G. 1579. J. 1579. S. 1579. S. 1579. S. 1579. S. 1579.	1580. 1595.	19. Rav. P. Stubers, The Analomie of Absore. 19. at Part of the Analomie of Absore. 19. Analom of the Analom of th



URELY to us, after the Sacred Scriptures, works of devotion and of religious instruction; the Literature of England comes next. However exquisite and subtle the charms of Greek and Grecian literature; however necessary and worthy of

study the language and literature of Rome; the writings of our Forefathers come home to every Englishman. What a mighty Literature have we inherited! How little is it known, save to a few, who have devoted all their leisure to its exploration! Authors mighty in Prose and Verse! Writers full of aëry fancies and graceful similitudes! Men whose Prose marches with the tramp and strength of a Roman legion: men whose Song is sung by a Puck or an Ariel; or who sing in it of Patient Grissell, of Fair Geraldine, or of Una and her Red Cross Knight. Above all the English Bible, so clung unto by our ancestors—with its infinite early editions and their most heroic story.

What present nation has so ancient, so vast, so varied a body of writings as England? In which are contained not only the productions of our Arch-Poets, Chaucer, Spenser, Shakespeare, Milton, Dryden; but those of an almost uncountable number of authors, inferior indeed to these, but of high rank among ordinary minds.

Good books, besides affording enjoyment, provoke to like excellence. No man writeth unto himself. Each worthy writer is trained, assimilated, and influenced by those who have gone before: each returning a like benefit to posterity. To trace the continuous chain of influence, of cause and effect, link by link, forms a part of the History of English Literature. That History that we may soon hope to possess, for the first time adequately in our language, in Professor HENRY MORLEY's work English Writers: of which we have already received the earlier instalment, down to Dunbar. What is designed in the Facsimile Texts, the English Reprints, and the Annotated Reprints is to represent the later literature by giving, at as cheap a price as can be, Exact Texts sometimes of books already famous, sometimes of those quite forgotten: in some cases, of works that illustrate the Literary History; in other instances, of those that in a sense, constitute it.

The result is already, that these Reproductions are unique in English Bibliography for their accuracy and cheapness, as well as for the unlimited numbers offered constantly for sale: and so far as they are yet : published, they constitute the best of all introductions to our old Authors, from the time of Caxton to that of Addison.

P.S.—A word in furtherance of the Early English Text, the Chaucer, and the Ballad Societies. No one knows the extent of the unprinted Literature of England. These Societies are recovering for us book after book; and laying us all under great obligation to their able Editors, who labour gratuitously. For further information, apply to F. J. Furnivall, M.A., 3 St. George's Square, London, N.W.

FACSIMILE JEXTS.

In Varying Sizes, following the Originals.

F European publications there are not a few which the mere outward appearance, their countenance so to speak, possess an extreme interest. Either from the excessive rarity of the book itself, or the drollery or quaintness of its illustrations; either from the literary importance of the work or its significance in the history of our Country or in the progress of the World: there arises at the sight of it the keenest attention, one might almost say an inexpressible sympathy with the book itself. In all such cases: Sun-Portraits confer exquisite and perpetual enjoyment.

Hitherto Cost has debarred photolithographed books from general use: but I trust to offer from time to time, at ordinary book-prica, works of this supreme interest, though necessarily of an infinitely diverse character. In which effort, I trust to receive a thorough support from the large number of readers who have sustained the English Reprints. Both being like attempts to make forgotten books known; and known books, more perfectly and perpetually obtainable.

Early in November, will be published in Fcp. 4to., Half Calf, Illuminated sides, pp. xxxii.-64.

[WILLIAM TYNDALE, assisted by WILLIAM ROY.

The First printed English New Testament. Cologne—Worms. 1525. 4to.]

Photo-lithographed, by the permission of the Trustees of the British Museum, from the *unique* fragment in the Grenville Collection.

TYNDALE went from London to Hamburg; where remaining for about a year, he journeyed on to Cologne: and there assisted by William Roy, subsequently the author of the Satire on Wolsey, Rede me and be not wrothe [see p. 11], he began this first edition in 4to; with glosses of the English New Testament. A virulent enemy of the Reformation, Cochlaus, at that time an exile in Cologne, learnt, through giving wine to the printer's men, that P. Quentel the printer had in hand a secret edition of three thousand copies of the English New Testament. In great alarm, he informed Herman Rinck, Senator of the city, who moved the Senate to stop the printing; but Cochlaus could neither obtain a sight of the Translators, nor a sheet of the impression.

Tyndale and Roy, fled with the printed sheets, up the Rhine to Worms; and there completing this edition, produced also another in Octavo, without glosses. Both editions were in England in Jan.-March, 1526: and of the six thousand copies of which they together were composed, there remain but this fragment of the First commenced edition; and of the Second edition, one complete copy in the Library of the Baptist College at Bristol, and an imperfect one in that of St. Paul's Cathedral, London.

The price of this Facsimile Text, will be only SIX SHILLINGS.

HE great importance to the increasing study of English Literature, of constantly adding to, and constantly keeping on sale (a more difficult task than at first would appear) at the lowest practicable prices, these Exact Texts; has led to a full consideration

of the past three years' progress, in an experiment which has been successful beyond anticipation. The following alterations have been found advisable, in order to place this designedly very cheap Series upon a permanent basis.

The changes to take effect from 1st October 1870.

Small Paper, in Foolscap Octabo.

- I. The public choice has passed so generally from Cut to Uncut edges: that future issues will be in Uncut edges only. This will also apply to all reimpressions, as soon as the existing Cut-edged copies have been sold.
- 2. No Sixpenny Reprints will be issued in future. The trouble is out of all proportion to the price.
- 3. The maximum number of pages for Shilling works will be about One hundred and twenty-eight. Experience has proved that number to be the very utmost limit practicable for such closely packed works in the costly old spelling, &c.
- ... The result of these changes to the public will be simply, that some future Reprints will be increased in price, by an extra Sixpence. A trifling contribution to enable me to go on for years. Yet I very reluctantly decide on this augmentation: this series being my personal free offering to a more perfect knowledge of English Literature.

All existing issues will be maintained at the present prices.

Large Paper, in Foolscap Quarto.

Nos. 19 to 24 in Large Paper are now ready. A single Large Paper copy can be obtained.

Demy Quarto.

Works in this size will be issued bound in Cloth. When published, eopies will however be obtainable in Sheets, for binding, by remitting the price direct to me.

There is a great cause for thankfulness in the progress already made. Works which some of our most experienced English scholars never hoped to see reprinted; have been put into general circulation. Much more may be accomplished, by a personal advocacy of this Series by each Purchaser; with a generous permission to print, from possessors of rare or unique English books; and with unwearying effort on my own part. Maintaining herein the ancient and worthy fame of England; may we lead very many to understand how much pure and unadulterated Delight is to be found in our Old English Authors.

ORDINARY ISSUE IN OCTAVO.

Durable Cases, in Roxburghe style, to hold four or five Reprints. One Shilling each

BOUND VOLUMES IN OCTAVO.

Two or three of such works, collected into occasional Volumes.

LARGE PAPER EDITION IN QUARTO.

The same texts, beautifully printed on thick toned paper, with ample margins sub-able for purposes of study. Issued in Stiff covers, uncut edges. When bound so the purchaser's own taste; these Large Paper Copies form most handsome books.

ANY SINGLE WORK OR VOLUME MAY BE HAD SEPARATELY.

Auarto.

FOOLSCAP.

Octavo.

Large 1. JOHN MILTON.

Stiff Covers. Green Cloth, Uncut Edges. Rez Edges.

Res Edges.

(1) A decree of the Starre-Chamber, concerning Printing, made the eleuenth day of July last past. London, 1637.

(2) An Order of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament for the regulating of Printing, &c.

14 June, 1643.

(3) AREOPAGITICA: A speech of Mr. John Milton for the liberty of Vnlicenc'd Printing, to the Parliament of England. London. [24 November]. 1644. Sixpence.

Vol L

2. HUGH LATIMER, Ex-Bishop of Worcester.

SERMON ON THE PLOUGHERS. A notable Sermon of ye reuerende father Master Hughe Latimer, whiche he preached in ye Shrouds at paules churche in London, on the xviii daye of Januarye.

The yere of 1/6 our Loorde MDXLviii. Sixpence.

Milton.

Latimer,

Gosson

3. STEPHEN GOSSON, Stud. Oxon.

(I) THE SCHOOLE OF ABUSE. Conteining a pleasaunt invective against Poets, Pipers, Plaiers, Jesters, and such like Caterpillers of a Commonwealth; Setting up the Flagge of Defiance to their mischievous exercise. and ouerthrowing their Bulwarkes, by Prophane Writers, Naturall reason, and common experience. A discourse as pleasaunt for gentlemen that fauour learning, as profitable for all that wyll follow vertue. London. [August?] 1579.

(2) AN APOLOGIE OF THE SCHOOLE OF ABUSE, against Poets, Pipers, and their Excusers. 1/6 | London. [December?] 1579. Sixpence.

2/

4. SIR PHILIP SYDNEY.

AN APOLOGIE FOR POETRIE. right noble, vertuous and learned Sir Philip Sidney, 1/6 |Knight. London. 1595. Sixpence.

	ENGLISH REPRINTS—FOOLSCAI	P. 7
Auar	to. Octa	bo.
Large F'aper	TITLES, PRICES, etc., etc. Stiff Covers. Uncut Edges.	
Edit.	5. EDWARD WEBBE, Chief Master Gunner.	Neu Luges.
	The rare and most vvonderful thinges which Edward Webbe an Englishman borne, hath seene and passed in his troublesome trauailes, in the Citties of Ierusalem, Damasko, Bethelem, and Galely: and in the Landes of Iewrie, Egipt, Gtecia, Russia, and in the land of Prester	Vol. II.
	Iohn. Wherein is set foorth his extreame slauerie sus-	Sidney,
	tained many yeres togither, in the Gallies and wars of the great Turk against the Landes of Persia, Tartaria, Spaine, and Portugall, with the manner of his releasement, and	Webbe,
1/6	comming into London in May last. London. 1590. Sixpence.	Selden.
	6. JOHN SELDEN.	2/6
2/6	TABLE TALK: being the Discourses of John Seldon Esq.; or his Sence of various Matters of Weight and High Consequence relating especially to Religion and State. London. 1689. One Shilling.	
·	7. ROGER ASCHAM. TOXOPHILUS. The schole of shooting conteyned in two bookes. To all Gentlemen and yomen of Eng-	Vol. III.
2/6	lande, pleasaunte for theyr pastime to rede, and profitable for theyr use to folow, both in warre and peace. London. 1545. One Shilling.	Ascham,
•	8. JOSEPH ADDISON.	Addison.
2/6	CRITICISMS OF MILTON'S PARADISE LOST. From The Spectator: being its Saturday issues between 31 December, 1711, and 3 May, 1712. One Shilling.	2/6
	9. JOHN LYLY, M.A.	
	(1) C EUPHUES. THE ANATOMY OF WIT.	
	Verie pleasaunt for all Gentlemen to read, and most necessarie to remember. Wherein are contained the de-	
	delightes that Wit followeth in his youth by the pleasant- nesse of loue, and the happinesse he reapeth in age, by the perfectnesse of Wisedome. London. 1579.	Vol. IV.
	(2) © EUPHUES AND HIS ENGLAND. Containing his voyage and aduentures, myxed with sundrie	Lyly.
	pretie discourses of honest Loue, the Description of the Countrey, the Court, and the manners of that Isle. Delightful to be read, and nothing hurtful to be regarded: wher-in there is small offence by lightnesse given to the wise, and lesse occasion of loosenes proferred to the wan-	<i>51</i>
9/	ton. London, 1580. Collated with early subsequent editions. Four Shillings.	

0	ENGLISH REPRINTS—FUULSCA.	r.
Auar	to. Oct	abo.
Large		
Paper	Uncut Edges.	Red Edga.
Batt.	10. GEORGE VILLIERS, Duke of Buckingham.	
	THE REHEARSAL. As it was acted at the Theatre	
010	Royal London, 1672. With Illustrations from previous	
2/6	plays, &c. One Shilling.	}
_	11. GEORGE GASCOIGNE, Esquire.	ł
	·	ì
	(1) A remembravnce of the wel imployed life, and	
	godly end of George Gaskoigne, Esquire, who deceassed	Vol. V.
	at Stalmford in Lincoln shire, the 7 of October 1577.	l
	The reporte of GEOR WHETSTONS, Gent an eye witness	
	of his Godly and Charitable End in this world. Lond. 1577.	Villiers,
	(2) Certayne notes of Instruction concerning the making	
	of verse or rime in English, vvritten at the request of	
	Master Edwardi Donati. 1575.	Gascoigna
	(3) THE STEELE GLAS. A Satyre compiled by	
	George Gasscoigne Esquire [Written between Apr. 1575]	Earle.
	& Apr. 1576]. Together with	
	(4) THE COMPLAYNT OF PHYLOMENE. An	2/8
010	Elegie compyled by George Gasscoigne Esquire [between	3/6
2/6		
	One Shilling.	
	12. JOHN EARLE, M.A.: afterwards in suc-	
	cession Bishop of Worcester, and of Salisbury.	
	MICRO-COSMOGRAPHIE, or a Peece of the World	
•	discovered, in Essays and Characters. London. 1628.	
	With the additions in subsequent editions during the	
2/6	Author's life time. One Shilling.	
•	10 TITTOTT T AMENATOD En Distat of Warmen	
	13. HUGH LATIMER, Ex-Bishop of Worcester.	
	SEVEN SERMONS BEFORE EDWARD VI.	
	(1) The fyrste sermon of Mayster Hugh Latimer,	_
	whiche he preached before the Kynges Maiest. wythin	•
	his graces palayce at Westmynster. M.D.XLIX. the	
	viii of Marche. (, ',)	Vol. VI
	(2) The seconde [to seventh] Sermon of Master Hughe	
	Latimer, whych he preached before the Kynges maiestie,	
AI	withyn hys graces Palayce at Westminster ye. xv. day of	Latimer,
4/	March. M. cccc. xlix. Eighteen Pence.	
	14. SIR THOMAS MORE.	More.
	UTOPIA. A frutefull pleasaunt, and wittie worke,	THOIG
	of the best state of a publique weale, and of the new yle,	
	called Utopia: written in Latine, by the right worthie	3/
	and famous Sir Thomas More knyght, and translated into	
	Englishe by RAPHE ROBYNSON, sometime fellowe of	
i	Corpus Christi College in Oyford, and nowe by him at this	
	seconde edition newlie perused and corrected, and also	
0/0	with divers notes in the margent augmented. London.	
2/6	[1556]. One Shilling.	

	DIGDISII KEIKINIS—FOODSOM	• 9
Ruar	• • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • •	
arge	15. GEORGE PUTTENHAM. Stiff Covers. Uncut Edges.	Green Cloth, Red Edges.
Edit.	THE ARTE OF ENGLISH POESIE. Contriued	. –
	into three Bookes: The first of Poets and Poesie, the	Puttenham.
	second of Proportion, the third of Ornament. London.	
5/	Two Shillings.	2/6
	16. JAMES HOWELL, Historiographer Royal to Charles II.	
	INSTRUCTIONS FOR FORREINE TRAVELL.	
	Shewing by what cours, and in what compasse of time, one	
	may take an exact Survey of the Kingdomes and States of Christendome, and arrive to the practicall knowledge of	
	the Languages, to good purpose. London. 1642. Col-	
	lated with the edition of 1656; and in its 'new Appendix	
1/6	·	Vol. VIII.
:	Sixpence.	
	17. The earliest known English comedy.	Howell,
	NICHOLAS UDALL, Muster of Eton.	•
- 10	ROISTER DOISTER, [from the unique copy at Eton	Udall,
1/6	College]. 1566. Sixpence.	
	18. THE REVELATION TO THE MONK OF	Monk of Evesham
	EVESHAM. Here begynnyth a marvelous revelacion	TI A COLLONIA
	that was schewyd of almighty god by sent Nycholas to a monke of Euyshamme yn the days of Kynge Richard the	JamesVL
	fyrst. And the yere of our lord. M.C.Lxxxxvi. [From	
	the unique copy, printed about 1482, in the British	3/6
2 /6	Museum]. One Shilling.	5 / 5
	19. JAMES VI. of Scotland, I. of England.	
	(I) THE ESSAYES OF A PRENTISE, IN THE	
	DIVINE ART OF POESIE. Edinburgh 1585.	
0/0	(2) A COUNTER BLASTE TO TOBACCO. Lon-	
2/6	don. 1604. One Shilling.	
	20. SIR ROBERT NAUNTON, Master of the	
	Court of Wards.	
	FRACMENTA REGALIA: or, Observations on the	
1 10	late Queen Elizabeth, her Times, and Favourites. [Third	Vol IX.
1/6	Edition. London] 1653. Sixpence.	-
	21. THOMAS WATSON, Student at law.	Mountain
	(I) THE Εκατομπαθία or Passionate Centurie of Loue.	Naunton,
	Divided into two parts: whereof, the first expresseth the	Watson.
	Authors sufferance in Loue: the latter, his long farewell to	***
	Loue and all his tyrannie. Composed by Thomas Watson Gentleman; and published at the request of certaine	2/6
	Gentlemen his very frendes. London [1582.]	2/0

26. WILLIAM WEBBE, Graduate.

2/6

A DISCOURSE OF ENGLISH POETRIE. Together, with the Anthors indgment, touching the reformation of our English Verse. London. 1586.

One Shilling.

3/

... The following works are designed for publication in time to come. Their prices cannot be fixed with precision, but are opproximately given. Ferrex and Porrex has been postponed; and

Jewes from the North by F. T. [FRANCIS THYNNE], with RICHARD SARNFIELD'S Poems have not been inserted; some of the Texts not eing accessible, at the present time. J. Howell's Epistolæ Holianæ will be put to press as soon as No. 27 BACON'S Essayes, &c., s finished.

s finished. Stiff Covers. Green Cloth, arge 27. FRANCIS BACON. Red Edges. Uncut Edges. A harmony of the ESSAYES, &c. Edit. The four principle texts appearing in parallel columns.; (1) Essayes. Religious Meditations. Places of per-London 1597. (10 Essays.) swasion and disswasion. Of the Coulers of good and euill a fragment. 1597. Vol. XIII. (2) The writings of Sir Francis Bacon Knt: the Kinges Sollicitor Generall: in Moralitie, Policie, and Historie. Bacon. Harleian MS. 5106. Transcribed bet. 1607-12. Essays.) (3) THE ESSAIES of Sir Francis Bacon Knight, the 3/6 Kings Solliciter Generall. London 1612. (38 Essays.) (4) The Essayes or Counsels, Ciuill and Morall, of Francis Lo. Verulam Viscount St. Albans. Newly 7/6 Written. 1626. (58 Essays.) Three Shillings. 28. WILLIAM ROY, Franciscan Friar. (1) REDE ME AND BE NOTT WROTHE. [Strasburg. 1527. This is his famous Satire on Wolsey. 7
(2) A PROPER DYALOGE BETWEEN A [Attributed to Roy] Marburg. 1530. Eighteen Pence. Vol. XIV. 29. SIR W. RALEIGH—G. MARKHAM. Roy. THE LAST FIGHT OF THE REVENGE AT SEA. (1) A report of the Truth of the fight about the Fight in Isles of Acores, this last Sommer. Betyvixt the Reuenge, the Reone of her Maiesties Shippes, and an Armada of the King venge. of Spaine. By Sir Walter Raleigh. London. 1591. (2) The most Honorable Tragedie of Sir Richarde Grinuille, Knight (. . .) Bramo assai, poco spero, nulla Googe. chieggio. [By GERVASE MARKHAM] London. 1595. [Two copies only are known, Mr. Grenville's cost £40.] 4/ One Shilling. **30. BARNABE GOOGE.** EGLOGS, EPYTAPHES AND SONETTES newly written by Barnabe Googe. London 1563. 15 March. One Shilling. 31. REV. PHILLIP STUBBES.

(1) THE ANATOMIE OF ABUSES: conteyning a discoverie or briese Summarie of Such Notable Vices and Impersections, as now raigne in many Christian

### TITLES, PRICES, etc., etc. Stiff Converted Country of the World: but especialie in a very famous ILANDE called AILGNA [i.e. Anglia]: Together with most fearefull Examples of Gods ludgementes, executed you the wicked for the same, aswell in AILGNA of late, as in other places, elsewhere London. I Maij. 1583. (2) The Second part of THE ANATOMIE OF COUNTRY OF COUNTR			- • \
Countreyes of the World: but especialie in a very famous ILANDE called AILGNA [i.e. Anglia]: Together with most fearefull Examples of Gods Iudgementes, executed vpon the wicked for the same, aswell in AILGNA of late, as in other places, elsewhere London. I Maij. 1583. (2) The Second part of THE ANATOMIE OF ABUSES London. 1583. Half-a-crown. 32. THOMAS TUSSER. FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUSBANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in euery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with diuers other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] 2/6 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Practicall. tuti: (Divine Practicall. tuti: (Divine Contemplative. Practicall. tuti: (Divine Practicall. tuti: (Divine Practicall. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most in the published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D. xxxi, eduised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D. xxxi, eduised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D. xxxi, eduised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D. xxxi, eduised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D. xxxi.			
Countreyes of the World: but especialie in a very famous ILANDE called AILGNA [i.e. Anglia]: Together with most feareful Examples of Gods Iudgementes, executed vpon the wicked for the same, aswell in AILGNA of late, as in other places, elsewhere London. I Maij. 1583. 6/6 ABUSES London. 1583. Half-a-crown. 32. THOMAS TUSSER. FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUSBANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in enery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with diners of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew Edward PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644-] 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Divine Contemplative. Practicall. (bivine Practicall. Cone Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscollany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent innention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.			Red Earn
ILANDE called AILGNA [i.e. Anglia]: Together with most fearefull Examples of Gods Iudgementes, executed vpon the wicked for the same, aswell in AILGNA of late, as in other places, elsewhere London. I Maij. 1583. (2) The Second part of THE ANATOMIE OF ABUSES London. 1583. Half-a-crown. 32. THOMAS TUSSER. FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUSBANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in enery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with diners of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE. MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644-] 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phoenicall. Politicall. One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phoenical Morall Occommicall. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D. xxxi.	Bait.	Countreves of the World: but especialie in a very famous	1
most fearefull Examples of Gods Iudgementes, executed yoon the wicked for the same, aswell in AILGNA of late, as in other places, elsewhere London. I Maij. 1583. (2) The Second part of THE ANATOMIE OF ABUSES London. 1583. Half-a-crown. 32. THOMAS TUSSER. FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUSBANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in enery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with divers of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approved remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet 1649-59. London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phoenicall. One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phoenical Contemplative. Proticall. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D. xxxi.		II.ANI) E called AILGNA [i.e. Anglia]: Together with	!
vpon the wicked for the same, aswell in AILGNA of late, as in other places, elsewhere London. I Maij. 1583. (2) The Second part of THE ANATOMIE OF ABUSES London. 1583. Half-a-crown. 32. THOMAS TUSSER. FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUSBANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in enery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with divers other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phoenicall. Politicall. One Shilling. 36. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phoenical Misce		most fearefull Examples of Gods Judgementes, executed	VOL
as in other places, elsewhere London. 1 Maij. 1583. Studoes (2) The Second part of THE ANATOMIE OF ABUSES London. 1583. Half-a-crown. 32. THOMAS TUSSER. FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUSBANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in euery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with diuers other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. Yohn Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE. MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The PhoENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londoni M.D.xxxi.		woon the wicked for the same, aswell in AILGNA of late.	
(2) The Second part of THE ANATOMIE OF ABUSES London. 1583. Half-a-crown. 32. THOMAS TUSSER. FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUSBANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in enery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with diners other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Practicall. Ethycall. One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The PhoENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londoni M.D.xxxi.	1	as in other places, elsewhere London, I Maij, 1583.	Stubbes
32. THOMAS TUSSER. FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUSBANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in enery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with diners other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH COVERNEMENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never bifore this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.		(2) The Second part of THE ANATOMIE OF	
32. THOMAS TUSSER. FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUS- BANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in euery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with diuers other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued re- medies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE- MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Practicall. London. 1640-1. One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phoenix Nest. The Phoenix Nest. The Phoenix Nest. Salint Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi. Elyot	6/6	ARIISES. London, 1583. Half-a-crown.	3/
FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUSBANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in euery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with divers other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. 1. London. 1694. 2. THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE. MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. 1. London. 1640. 1. London. 1640. 2. THE REASON OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing 1. London. 1640-1. One Shilling. 24. Contemplative. Practicall. 26. Linsting. 27. The PHOENIX NEST. Built up with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 26. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi. 1. London. 1590. 1. London. 1640-1. 1. London. 1640-1. 1. London. 1640-1. 2. London. 1640-1. 3. London. 164	,		
BANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seurall, mixed in euery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with diuers other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE. MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Practicall. One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phonix Nest rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers, Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.		32. THOMAS TUSSER.	
BANDRIE, as well for the Champion, or open Countrie, as also for the woodland, or Seurall, mixed in euery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with diuers other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE. MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Practicall. One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phonix Nest rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers, Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.		FIVE HUNDRED POINTES OF GOOD HUS-	
as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in euery Month with HUSWIFERIE, with divers other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH COVERNEMENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phoenix NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.	1		
Month with HUSWIFERIE, with divers other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.		as also for the woodland, or Seuerall, mixed in euery	ı
other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580.	-	Month with HUSWIFERIE, with divers	
of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approued remedies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader	ł	other lessons, as a diet for the former, of the properties	
medies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing One Shilling. Wollinsti-tuti-ons Morall Oeconomicall. Politicall. One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.		of windes, plantes, hops, herbes, bees and approved re-	Aor
both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader . London. 1580. Eighteen Pence. 33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D. xxxi.		medies for sheepe and cattle, with many other matters	
33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Practicall. Ethycall. One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscollany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.		both profitable and not vnpleasant for the Reader	
33. JOHN MILTON. (1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Institution on Morall Occonomicall. Practicall. Ethycall. One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built up with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.	4/	London, 1580. Eighteen Pence.	Tusser,
(1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Institutions Morall Contemplative. Practicall. Ethycall. One Shilling. Quaries The PhoEnix NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.			
EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Institutions Morall Cethycall. (Ethycall. One Shilling. 2/6 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscollany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.		33. JOHN MILTON.	Milton.
EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Institutions Morall Cethycall. (Ethycall. One Shilling. 2/6 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscollany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.	1	(1) The Life of Mr John Milton [by his nephew	
Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59.' London. 1694. (2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Practicall. (2/6) Morall Coeconomicall. Politicall. One Shilling. Quarles The Phoenix NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.		EDWARD PHILLIPS]. From 'Letters of State written by	
(2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE- MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Insti- tuti- ons Contemplative. Practicall. Morall Ceconomicall. Politicall. One Shilling. 45. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M. D. xxxi.		Mr. John Milton, bet. 1649-59. London, 1694.	31
MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton. In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Insti- Divine Contemplative. Practicall. Ethycall. London. 1640-1. One Shilling. 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.		(2) THE REASON OF CHURCH GOVERNE-	
In two Books. [London] 1641. (3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Insti- tuti- ons Divine Contemplative. Practicall. London. 1640-1.		MENT urg'd against Prelacy. By Mr. John Milton.	
(3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5 June 1644.] One Shilling. 34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Practicall. Ethycall. One Shilling. Wol 2/6 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.		In two Books. [London] 1641.	
34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Contemplative. Institutions Morall One Shilling. Contemplative. Practicall. Ethycall. One Shilling. One Shilling. Quaries The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.		(3) Milton's Letter OF EDUCATION. To Master	
34. FRANCIS QUARLES. ENCHYRIDION, containing Institutions Morall Coeconomicall. One Shilling. One Shilling. Vol. 2/6 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi.	2/6	Samuel Hartlib. [London. 5] une 1644.]	
Insti- tuti- ons Contemplative.		One Shilling.	
Insti- tuti- ons Contemplative.		24 FRANCIS OTTARLES.	
Institutions Divine Practicall. London. 1640-1. Oeconomicall. One Shilling. Quaries 35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. The Phoenix NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight, Londini M.D.xxxi. Elyot		FNCHVRIDION, containing	
35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.		(Contemplative.	
35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.		Insti- (Divine) Practicall.	Vol
35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.		tuti. Ethycall. London, 1640-1.	
35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.		ons Morall Oeconomicall.	•
35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany. THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.	2/8	Politicall. One Shilling.	Quaries
THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.			
THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights, gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.		35. The Sixth English Poetical Miscellany.	The Phos-
gallant Gentlemen, Masters of Arts, and braue Schoolers. Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.		THE PHOENIX NEST. Built vp with the most	nix Nest
Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D. xxxi.		rare and refined workes of Noble men, woorthy Knights,	
Full of varietie, excellent invention, and singular delight. Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Governor, devised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D. xxxi.			2/8
2/6 Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D. xxxi.		Full of varietie, excellent inuention, and singular delight.	
2/6 Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling. 36. SIR THOMAS ELYOT. THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D. xxxi.		Never before this time published. Set forth by R. S. of the	
THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D. xxxi.	2/6	Inner Temple Gentleman. London 1593. One Shilling.	
THE GOVERNOR. The boke named the Gouernor, deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D. xxxi.	_	28 SID THOMAS BI VOT	Val
deuised by ye Thomas Elyot Knight. Londini M.D.xxxi.			
6/6 Collated with subsequent editions. Londing M. D. xxxi. Half-a-crown.		deviced by we Thomas Elect Vuickt Tandini M. D!	Elyot
Consider with subscipling train-a-crown.	RIA	Colleted with subsequent editions Unit a com-	O/
	3 0	Comacca with subsequent cuttons. Man-a-crown.	3

Demy Duarto.

Will be ready, about March 1871, in one Volume, 12s. 6d.

801. RICHARD EDEN.

- I. A treatyse OF THE NEWE INDIA, WITH OTHER NEW FOUNDE LANDES AND IS-LANDS, ASWELL EASTWARDE AS WEST-WARDE, as they are known and found in these oure dayes, after the descripcion of SEBASTIAN MUNSTER, in his boke of vniuersall Cosmographie, &c. [London, 1553.]
- II. The First English Collection of Voyages, Traffics, and Discoveries. -THE DECADES OF THE NEW WORLD OR WEST INDIA, &c. &c. [by Peter Martyr of Angleria.] [Translated, compiled, &c. by Richard Eden.] Londini, Anno 1555.
 - 1. The [Dedicatory] Epistle [to King Philip and Queen Mary.]

2. Richard Eden to the Reader.

3. The [1st, 2nd, and 3d only of the 8] Decades of the newe worlde or west India, Conteynyng the nauigations and conquestes of the Spanyardes, with the particular description of the moste ryche and large lands and Ilandes lately founde in the west Ocean perteynyng to the inheritance of the kinges of Spayne. In the which the diligent reader may not only consyder what commoditie may hereby chaunce to the hole christian world in tyme to come, but also learne many secreates touchynge the lande, the sea, and the starres, very necessarie to be knowen to al such as shal attempte any nauigations, or otherwise haue delite to beholde the strange and woonderful woorkes of god and nature. Wrytten in the Latine tounge by PETER MARTYR of Angleria, and translated into Englysshe by RYCHARDE EDEN.

4. The Bull of Pope Alexander VI. in 1493, granting to the Spaniards the Regions and Ilandes founde in the Weste Ocean' by them.

- 5. The Historie of the West Indies by Gongalo Fernandez Oviedo Y Valdes.
 - 6. Of other notable things gathered out of dyuers autors.

7. Of Moscouie and Cathay.

8. Other notable thynges as touchynge the Indies [chiefly out of the books of Francisco Lopez de Gomara, 'and partly also out of the caade made by SEBASTIAN CABOT.']

9. The Booke of Metals.

10. The description of the two viages made owt of England into Guinea in Affricke [1553, 1554].

11. The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of regions.

... An abridged analysis of this voluminous work was issued in the previous catalogue (I Dec. 1869); which will be found bound up with English Reprints' issued during this year, 1870.

Imperial Folid.

1001. PETRUCCIO UBALDINI—AUGUSTINE RYTHER.

A Discourse concerning the Spanishe fleete inuadinge Englande in the yeare 1588 and ouerthrowne by her Maiesties Nauie vnder the conduction of the Right-honorable the Lorde Charles Howarde highe Admirall of Englande: written in Italian by Petruccio Vbaldini citizen of Florence, and translated for A. Ryther: vnto the which discourse are annexed certain tables expressinge the generall exploites, and conflictes had with the said fleete.

These bookes with the tables belonginge to them are to be solde at the shoppe of A. RYTHER, being a little from Leaden hall next to the Signe of the Tower. [1590.]

The twelve Tables express the following subjects:-

FRONTISPIECE.

I. THE SPANISH ARMADA COMING INTO THE CHANNEL, OPPOSITE THE LIZARD; AS IT WAS FIRST DISCOVERED.

II. THE SPANISH ARMADA AGAINST FOWEY, DRAWN UP IN THE

FORM OF A HALF MOON; THE ENGLISH FLEET PURSUING.

III. THE FIRST ENGAGEMENT BETWEEN THE TWO FLEETS. AFTER WHICH THE ENGLISH GIVE CHASE TO THE SPANIARDS, WHO DRAW THEIR SHIPS INTO A BALL.

IV. DE VALDEZ'S GALLEON SPRINGS HER FOREMAST, AND IS TAKEN BY SIR FRANCIS DRAKE. THE LORD ADMIRAL WITH THE 'BEAR' AND THE 'MARY ROSE,' PURSUE THE ENEMY, WHO SAIL IN THE FORM OF A HALF MOON.

V. THE ADMIRAL'S SHIP OF THE GUIPUSCOAN SQUADRON HAVING CAUGHT FIRE, IS TAKEN BY THE ENGLISH. THE ARMADA CONTINUES ITS COURSE, IN A HALF MOON; UNTIL OFF THE ISLE OF PORTLAND, WHERE ENSUES THE SECOND ENGAGEMENT.

VI. Some English ships attack the Spaniards to the Westward. The Armada again drawing into a Ball, keeps on 173

COURSE FOLLOWED BY THE ENGLISH.

VII. THE THIRD AND THE SHARPEST FIGHT BETWEEN THE TWO FLEETS: OFF THE ISLE OF WIGHT.

VIII. THE ARMADA SAILING UP CHANNEL TOWARDS CALAIS; THE ENGLISH FLEET FOLLOWING CLOSE.

IX. THE SPANIARDS AT ANCHOR OFF CALAIS. THE FIRESHIPS APPROACHING. THE ENGLISH PREPARING TO PURSUE.

X. THE FINAL BATTLE. THE ARMADA FLYING TO THE NORTH-WARD. THE CHIEF GALLEASS STRANDED NEAR CALAIS.

LARGE MAP SHOWING THE TRACK OF THE ARMADA ROUND THE BRITISH ISLES.

These plates, which are a most valuable and early representation of the Spand Invasion, are being re-engraved in facsimile, and will be issued in the Spring of the at the lowest feasible price: probably HALF-A-GUINEA.

:. Other works may follow.

BY VARIOUS EDITORS: UNDER MR. ARBER'S GENERAL SUPERVISION.

Some Texts require the amplest elucidation and illustration by Masters in special departments of knowledge. To recover and perpetuate such Works is to render the greatest service to Learning. With the aid of Scholars in special subjects, I hope to endow our readers with some knowledge of the Past, that is now quite out of their reach. While the Editors will be responsible both for Text and Illustrations; the works will be produced under my general oversight: so that the Annotated Reprints, though of much slower growth, will more than equal in value the English Reprints.

E. A.

In the Spring of 1871: in Fcp. 8vo the First Volume (to be completed in Four) of

The Paston Letters. 1422-1509.

Edited by JAMES GAIRDNER, Esq., of the Public Record Office.

EVERY one knows what a blank is the history of England during the Wars of of the two Roses. Amid the civil commotions, literature almost died out. The principal poetry of the period is that of Lydgate, the Monk of Bury. The prose is still more scanty. The monastic Chronicles are far less numerous than at earlier periods: and by the end of the Fifteenth Century they seem to have entirely ceased. Thus it has come to pass that less is known of this age than of any other in our history. In this general dearth of information recent historians like Lingard Turner. In this general dearth of information recent historians like Lingard, Turner, Pauli, and Knight, who have treated of the reigns of Henry VI., Edward IV., &c., have found in *The Paston Letters* not only unrivalled illustration of the Social Life of England, but also most important information, at first hand, as to the Political Events of that time. So that the printed Correspondence is cited page after page in their several histories of this period.

The Paston Letters have not however been half published. No literary use was made of them while accumulating in the family muniment room. William, 2nd Earl of Yarmouth, the last member of the family, having encumbered his inheritance, parted with all his property. The family letters came about 1728 into the hands of the distinguished antiquary, Peter le Neve; afterwards, by his marriage to Le Neve's middle to his brother antiquary. widow, to his brother antiquary Martin of Palgrave; on his death again, to a Mr. Worth, from whom they were acquired by Mr. afterwards Sir John Fenn.

In 1787, Fenn published a small selection of the Letters in two volumes 4to; of which the first edition having been sold off in a week, a second appeared in the course of the year. He then prepared a further selection, of which two volumes appeared

in 1789; the fifth volume being published after his death, in 1823.

Strangely enough, the Original Letters disappeared soon after their publication:
and only those of the Fifth volume have, as yet, been recovered. There is no reasonable doubt that they still exist and will some day be found. There is no necessity, however, to postpone a new edition indefinitely, until they are again brought to light: for a comparison of the Fifth volume with its originals establishes Sir John Fann's general faithfulness as to the Text: and therefore our present possession in his Fenn's general faithfulness as to the Text; and therefore our present possession, in his Edition, of the contents of the missing Manuscripts.

Three hundred and eighty-seven letters in all were published by Fenn: about Four nundred additional letters or documents, belonging to the same collection and which have never been published at all, will be included in the present edition.

Not only will the Text be doubled in quantity; but in its elucidation, it will have the benefit of Mr. Gairdner's concentrated study of this Correspondence for years past. Half his difficulty will be in the unravelling of the chronology of the Letters, partly from internal evidence, partly from the Public Records, and other sources. Fenn's chronology—for no fault of his—is excessively misleading. This was inevitable, from the difficulties of a first attempt, the state of historic criticism in his day, and the limited means then available for consulting the public records, &c. It is hoped, however, by restoring each Letter to its certain or approximate date, vastly to increase the interest of this Correspondence. In addition textual difficulties will be removed, and valuable biographical information afforded.

The Letters of the reign of Henry VI. will form Vol. 1. (estimated at about 600 pp.): those of Edward IV., Vols. 11. and 111. (together about 800 pp.); and those of Richard III. and Henry VII., Vol. 1v. (about 300 pp.). The price will be about one shilling for every 100 pp.; and the work, it is expected, will be completed in Two

years.

FOR GENERAL READERS.

THE undermentioned modernized texts are in preparation. Great care will be bestowed in their transformation into the spelling and punctuation of the present day: but the Originals will be adhered to as closely as possible.

Leisure Readings in English Literature.

The object of the volumes that will appear under this general title, will be to afford Restful Reading: and, at the same time, by exhibiting the wealth of thought and the wit in expression of our Old Authors; to predispose to a further study of our Literature: in which study these Readings will serve as First Books

They will contain many excellent Poems and Passages that are generally but very little known.

Choice Books.

THE DISASTROUS ENGLISH VOYAGE TO THE WEST INDIES IN 1568.

Recounted in the Narratives of Sir John Haw-KINS: and of DAVID INGRAM, MILES PHILLIPS, and JOB HORTOP, survivors, who escaped through the American Indian tribes; or out of the clutches of the Inquisition; or from the galleys of the King of Spain; and so at length came home to England.

.. Other works to follow.

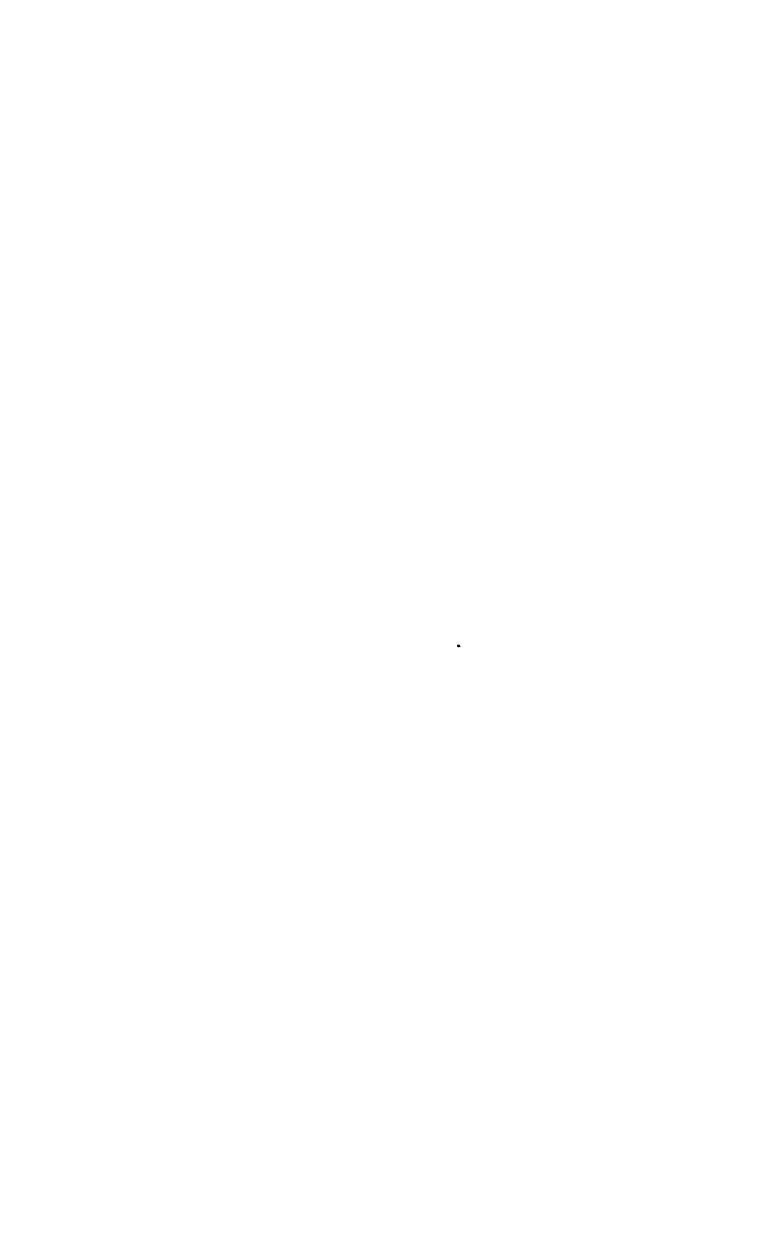
These works will be issued, beautifully printed and elegantly bound, in Crown 8vo.

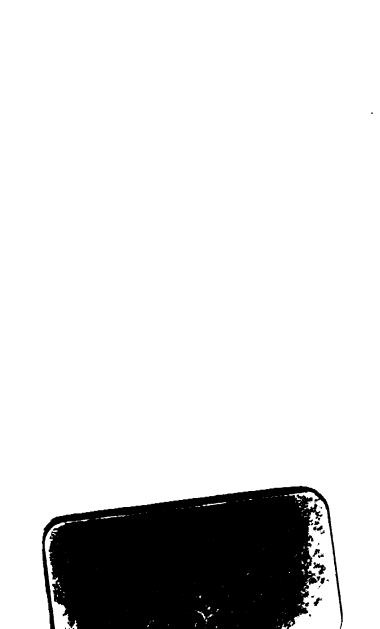
The above is a specimen of the type, but not of the size of page.

5 QUEEN SQUARE, BLOOMSBURY, LONDON, W.C.

The second secon 仍然 斯巴姆斯於 Ú

•





.

.

.